

THE
L I F E
And entertaining
ADVENTURES
OF

Mr. CLEVELAND, *K*
Natural SON of
OLIVER CROMWELL,
Written by HIMSELF.

Giving a particular Account of his Unhappiness in Love, Marriage, Friendship, &c. and his great Sufferings in *Europe* and *America*.

Intermixed with Reflections, describing the Heart of Man in all its Variety of Passions and Disguises; also some curious Particulars of *Oliver's* History and Amours, never before made publick.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

V O L. I.

D U B L I N:

Printed by S. POWELL,

For WILLIAM HEATLY, Bookseller,
at the *Bible and Dove* in *College-Green*.

M D C C X X X V I.

THE LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF
MR. CLEVELAND



Giving a particular Account of his Life,
and his great Sufferings in Prison,
and his Love, Friendship, and
and his great Sufferings in Prison,
and his Love, Friendship, and

Intermixed with a particular Account of his Life,
and his great Sufferings in Prison,
and his Love, Friendship, and
and his great Sufferings in Prison,
and his Love, Friendship, and

In Two Volumes.

Vol. I.

DUBLIN

Printed by J. Powell.

For WILLIAM HEATLY, Bookseller,
at the Bible and Dove in Old Street.

MDCCLXXV



T H E
EDITOR'S PREFACE.



THE study of history is so advantageous, and at the same time so delightful, that 'tis no wonder it has been cultivated by the finest spirits in all ages. The history of kingdoms and empires, raises our admiration, by the solemnity, if I may so call it, of the images, and furnishes one of the noblest entertainments. But at the same time that it is so well suited to delight the imagination, it yet is not so apt to touch and affect as the history of private men; the reason of which seems to be, that the personages in the former, are so far above the common level, that we consider ourselves, in some measure, as aliens to them; whereas those who act in a lower sphere, are look'd upon by us as a kind of relatives, from the similitude of

conditions ; whence we are more intimately mov'd with whatever concerns them.

But as there is a difference between the benefit which may be reap'd from the histories of kingdoms, and those of private persons ; so the advantage which may accrue from particular histories themselves is no less considerable. The subjects of some of these are so trifling, and the manner in which they are writ, so unnatural, that they only impose upon the mind, and convey nothing substantial : While those of a superior kind, as they treat of persons whose lives have been remarkable for extraordinary circumstances ; so they often serve as an excellent lesson to all who are desirous of avoiding those rocks on which others have split ; and of meriting the highest character to which human nature can attain, that of wise men.

That the following piece may justly be rank'd among the latter, will, I believe, be readily granted by all judicious readers. 'Tis the history of a man who was as remarkable for the uninterrupted calamities of his life, as his father for his continual successes. One, who tho' son to a man, that from an obscure condition, broke his way to the throne, and maintain'd himself peaceably in it ; was yet expos'd to all the rigours of fortune ; and so barbarously us'd by him who gave him birth,
that

The PREFACE.

v

that he became one of his most inveterate enemies, and went over to King Charles II.

If any man had a perfect knowledge of the world 'tis our author. Brought up, like another Lemuel, under a mother's eye, whose vast love for him, made her extremely solicitous to form his mind, and whose large experience, capacity and understanding, enabled her to do it without any foreign assistance; the depravity of his fellow-creatures was strongly inculcated to him, at an age when others amuse themselves with trifles. The solitude he was brought up in; the excellent moral authors which his fond parent put into his hands; and the judicious comment she made upon them, gave a peculiar bent to Mr. Cleveland's mind; so that when he came to enter upon the Stage of the world, which he did with the utmost reluctance, it appear'd to him in a quite different light, from what it does to the rest of men.

But as the relation which he gives of his solitude is very extraordinary, and the employments of it instructive and entertaining; so when he leaves it, and comes to associate with mankind, he gives a just and natural description of the diffidence which is almost inseparable from the best and most ingenuous minds; a circumstance, which as it too often depresses them, so it may teach others who

labour under any difficulty that way, to set a proper value on their own talents; and not suffer themselves to be over-aw'd by the vain, the ignorant, and the noisy.

The treachery he afterwards met with, points out to us, that we ought not to repose too great a confidence in any man, till we know him thoroughly; nor suffer our selves to be deluded by a specious appearance of friendship. Hypocrisy, as it is a very odious vice, so it is the most apt to impose upon us; for the mask it puts on, is often so natural, and bears so great a resemblance to virtue, that the most wary sometimes mistake the one for the other.

The passion he had for my lord Axminster's daughter, is of the chastest, and at the same time of the most beautiful kind. Struck before he was sensible of it, he has given so lively a picture of the rise and progress of it, that all who have ever been in love, must own it to be vastly tender and natural. The struggles he had with himself when he first knew his distemper, are so delicately describ'd; and the resolution he had hitherto shewn in combating his inclinations, so great, that we may justly say of him with Adam in the Paradise Lost.

*— — — — — only weak
Against the Charm of Beauty's powerful
Glance.*

His

His going over to king Charles II. and the particulars he gives of Oliver's private history are very curious, and have till now been a secret. Possibly some may doubt the veracity of them, from Oliver's specious indifference to the fair sex, and the silence of historians on that head. But however considers his deep dissimulation, and the strong reasons he had to conceal his amours, will not wonder at their being known hitherto only to the parties concern'd.

If any one should accuse him of drawing his father's character in too odious colours, he must call to mind the principles he had imbib'd in his infant years, and the inhuman treatment he met with from him. That he agrees in this particular with the most celebrated English historians is well known. My lord Clarendon, among others, says, " That he attempted those things which no " good man durst have ventur'd on ----- No " man, (says his lordship,) with more wickedness ever attempted any thing, or brought " to pass what he desir'd more wickedly.

An objection may be made to Oliver's being mention'd as speaker of the House of Commons; since we don't find any such circumstance in history. This I myself hinted to some persons of distinction, who assur'd me, that

that they knew by undoubted tradition, that Oliver had been nominated to this employment by several members upon a particular view; but that he declined it, from a sense of his incapacity (notwithstanding his other great talents,) to fill it with honour.

The reader will very possibly be desirous of knowing how these papers came into my hands. To satisfy his curiosity, I am to inform him, that they were given me by Mr. Cleveland, the author's son, a person advanced in years, who spent the greatest part of his life in foreign countries, and lives now in Kingstreet, Westminster. I first got acquainted with him about three years ago at Montpelier. His good sense, experience and affability, gave me a very advantageous idea of him; which, with some unexpected favours he afterwards indulg'd me, made me very desirous of cultivating his friendship. After some stay in this city we return'd to Paris, where we lodg'd in the same house. There he first shew'd me his father's papers, which gave me so much pleasure and satisfaction, that I was very urgent with him to have them printed, persuaded that they would be a very acceptable present to the publick. He told me, that the only objection he had to my proposal, was, the confus'd method in which they were writ; and the difficult task it would be to digest 'em in such a manner,

ner, as might make them worthy of appearing in the world; especially as he was engag'd in a tedious law suit, which took up the greatest part of his time. This I obviated by a modest offer of my service, which my good friend accepted; and an ingenious French gentleman, who understands the English tongue perfectly well, agreeing to share with me in it, we methodiz'd it in the manner in which it is now publish'd, without altering a single circumstance in the whole work. After we had finish'd it, Mr. Cleveland was pleas'd to give us the approbation of the whole, and returning to England with me, he consented readily to its publication.

Some surprizing incidents which we meet with in the following sheets, may perhaps incline some readers to doubt the truth of them. But how many famous authors have been accus'd of writing untruths, which afterwards have been found to be matters of fact? Pliny, the naturalist, suffer'd long under this aspersiou; and the Travels of Sir John Chardin were consider'd in the same light by multitudes; till several persons of undoubted credit, who have since visited the same countries, assure us of his veracity. We might extend this observation to numberless instances, if it were necessary.

The

The things about which Mr. Cleveland writes, did not happen so many years ago but that there are persons now living who remember them. That the lord Axminster suffer'd under great misfortunes, is well known: Not to mention that our author agrees in a great many particulars with the most authentick historians; a circumstance which adds no little weight to his testimony in general.

The cave of Rumney-Hole is well known to be of a prodigious extent. If it should be ask'd, how the several recesses of it came not to be discover'd before, I answer, that possibly no one was ever reduced to the same necessity of hiding himself in it, as the lord Axminster and Mr. Cleveland; a circumstance which might prompt them to pierce farther into it, than any other person had done before. Camden speaking of the famous Peak in Derbyshire, says, Sub hoc specus five subterraneus meatus ----- magno hiatus patet, multiplicesque recessus habet. Wockey-Hole, under Mendip hills near Wells in Somersetshire, is a vast cavern containing spacious apartments, stone Walls, labyrinths, &c. The cave near Ryegate in Surrey, the retreat of the Barons in the reign of king John, where we still see the hall in which they sat in council, is affirm'd by the inhabitants

inhabitants to have run four miles under ground, and to have been stopt up not long since by the falling in of the earth.

The relation which Mr. Bridge, half brother to our author, gives of the colony from Rochel, which settled near the island of St. Helena, is curious and surprizing. But are we to wonder that those people conceal'd themselves so carefully from the rest of the world? Harass'd by a dreadful siege, in which they suffer'd the extremes of misery, they well might pant after some asylum, there to live in full liberty, and enjoy a freedom of thinking agreeable to the dictates of their religion; and having found such a one, what could be more natural than for 'em to wish to live in it for ever, secluded from all commerce with the rest of their fellow creatures?

If notwithstanding what has been said, the reader should still suspect the truth of some particulars, I yet am persuaded he will not think the time spent in the perusal of this work lost; since, besides the agreeable turn of the incidents; the many solid and masterly reflections which are scatter'd up and down the work, afford a most useful instruction to all who are desirous of it. Telemachus is well known to be a fictitious piece, but what
book

book was ever more entertaining, or abounds with finer precepts for the conduct of life?

As I have been absent some years from my native country, possibly the expression may not, in some few places, be altogether so correct as it ought to have been, for which I must desire the judicious reader's indulgence.

7 JY 65

The EDITOR.

THE

Subscribers Names.

A

J OHN Averell, Esq;
Mr. Paris Anderson, A. M.
Mr. George Allen, A. B.
Mr. William Austen
Mr. William Allen
Mr. Henry Alcock, T. C. D.
Mr. John Allen
Mr. Francis Andrews, T. C. D.

B

The Right Honourable Lady Harriote Boyle
Sir William Vigers Burdet, Bart.
The Honourable Lady Mary Bligh
Rev. Mr. Thomas Breviter, A. M.
George Bishop Junior, Esq; of Bishop-hall, County
Kilkenny
John Burges, Esq;
John Blakeney, Esq;
Mr. Tyrell Baylee, A. M.
Mr. William Babington, T. C. D.
Mr. William Bullingbrooke, A. B.
Mr. Thomas Baldwin, T. C. D.
Mr. Henry Bowerman, T. C. D.
Mr. Richard Brady, Merchant
Mr. James Brunet, Merchant
Mr. Richard Bateson, Merchant
Mr. Stephen Bennet, Merchant
Mr. Stearne Brocke, Bookfeller, 6 Sets
Mr. David Bush of Philadelphia

Subscribers Names.

Mr. George Backus of Waterford
Mr. Robert Berry
Mr. George Boyde, Junior
Mr. George Brown
Mr. Michael Benfon
Mr. Andrew Brome, T. C. D.

C

The Right Honourable the Countess of Cavan
Capt. David Cugley
Thomas Cuffe, Esq;
Ambrose Congreve of Waterford, Esq;
Toby Close, Esq;
John Cramer, Esq;
Samuel Close, Esq;
Lieutenant Russel Chapman
Revd. Mr. Charles Carthy, A. M.
Mr. John Cane, T. C. D.
Mr. Ephraim Crowther
Mr. Thomas Cade, Attorney
Michael Collins, Gent.
Mrs. Coddington of Athlumny
Mr. Robert Cross, Merchant
Mr. James Cowdon, Apothecary
Mr. George Collins
Mr. Bernard Crilly of Swords
Mrs. Frances Cuffe
Mr. Nathaniel Carson of Killogh
Mr. William Crowe
Miss Mary Croker
Mrs. Elizabeth Carleton of Cork
Miss Mary Conron of Cork
Mr. Thomas Cooper
Mr. Peter Clarke
Mr. Philip Crampton, Bookseller, 6 Sets
Mr. Charles Connor
Mr. Cornelius Cox, Merchant

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

D

Mr. Achilles Daunt, A. B.
 Mr. Edward Dean, F. C. T. C. D.
 Mr. Daniel Dickinson, T. C. D.
 Mr. James Dunkin, T. C. D.
 Mr. James Adolphus Dickenson, T. C. D.
 Mr. Simon Dring, T. C. D.
 Mr. Anthony Dermot, Merchant
 Mrs. Sufanna Donelan of Cork
 Mr. Richard Drury
 Mr. Samuel Dalton, Bookseller, 6 Sets
 Miss Mary Dixie
 Mrs. Jane Dobson
 Mrs. Donnellan

E

Richard Edwards, Gent.
 John Ellis, Gent.
 Mr. Samuel Ewing, Merchant
 Mr. George Ewing, Bookseller, 12 Sets
 Mr. William Eaton

F

John Fergus, M. D.
 Revd. Mr. William Finglass, A. M.
 Thomas Francis, Esq; of Waterford
 Revd. Mr. John Fell of Waterford
 Robert Fox, Esq;
 Mr. Forest Freeman, A. B.
 Mr. James Fitzgerald, A. B.
 Mr. William Folliot, Merchant
 Mrs. Fox
 Mrs. French
 Miss Alice Fryer
 Mr. John Fulton, T. C. D.

Mr.

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. George Faulkner, Bookseller, 25 Sets
Mr. William Ferrar, Bookseller of Limrick, 6
Sets

G

Revd. Mr. Francis Glover, A. M.
Mr. Robert Grove, F. C. T. C. D.
Thomas Gonne, Esq;
Theophilus Glover, Esq;
Mr. John Gillermin, A. B.
Mr. Alexander Gunning, A. B.
Mr. Francis Gooldsbury, A. B.
Mr. Arthur Gruber, A. B.
Mr. Ralph Gregory, A. B.
Thomas Gower, Gent.
Mr. William Gibbons
Mrs. Charlotta Goodwyn
Mr. John Green, T. C. D.
Mr. James Glascock
Mr. Robert Gates
Mr. Richard Gunne, Bookseller, 31 Sets
Mr. Henry Grant
Mr. Michael Gallagher

H

The Right Honourable Lady Howth
Abraham Hill, Esq;
Roger Harrison, Esq;
Edmond Hill, Esq;
Revd. Mr. George House, A. M.
Mr. Roger Hall, F. C. T. C. D.
Mr. Philip Hughes, A. B.
Mr. Leslie Hamilton
Mr. George Houston
Mr. Jason Hassard
Mr. William Houston
Mr. Isaac Heatly

Mr.

Subscribers Names,

Mr. Thomas Handley
Mr. Edmond Huband
Mr. Henry Heatly
Mr. William Hawker
Mr. Thomas Hill
Mr. James Hoey, Bookseller, 6 Sets
Mr. William Hale, T. C. D.
Mrs. Sarah Hyde, Bookseller, 6 Sets
Miss Urith Hacket

I

Mr. Haywood Jenkins, A. B.
Mr. George Jacob, Attorney
Mrs. Jane Jacob
Mr. Barnaby Jackson of Corluddy, County Kilk,
Mr. Theophilus Jones, 6 Sets
Mr. Thomas Levers, 6 Sets

K

The Right Honourable the Lord Viscount Kingland
Daniel Kelly, Esq;
Mrs. Elizabeth Keating of Narramore
Miss Elizabeth Kirkby
Mr. Daniel Kinnin, A. B.

L

Henry Leslie, Esq;
Mr. Joseph Lindsay
Mr. Edward Lill, T. C. D.
Mr. James Lombard
Mrs. Jane Luncheon
Mr. William Lamb
Mr. Joseph Labat
Mr. Frederick Lamb
Miss Christian Latin
Mr. Joseph Leathley, Bookseller, 6 Sets

Mr.

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. John Lowis, Bookseller of Derry, 12 Sets
Mrs. Isabella Lowry

M

The Right Honourable Lord Viscount Massareen
John Mc. Hugh M. D.
Revd. Mr. John Moffop, A. M.
Mr. Jeremy Marth, A. M.
Revd. Mr. Edward Murphey
John Mc. Kim, Gent.
Mr. John Mc. Donnel, A. B.
Mr. William Marthal
Mr. Edward Maine, A. B.
Mr. Edward Mears
Miss Amelia Moore
Mrs. Jane Meade
Mrs. Arabella Martial
Mr. Daniel Mullineaux
Mr. Thomas Moore, Bookseller, 6 Sets
Mr. Edward Martin
Mr. Joseph Mc. Leland

N

Mr. Robert Newenham, 2 Sets
Mr. Joseph Nelson, A. B.
Mr. William Newton, A. B.
Mrs. Elizabeth Nevill
Mr. Michael Nowland
Mr. Lawrence Nelligan, A. B.

O

The Right Honourable the Lord Ophaly
The Honourable Colonel James O'bryen
Miss Anne O'bryen
Mr. William Ogilby, A. B.
Mr. Edward Obre, A. B.
Mr. Charles Oulton
Mr. John Orpin

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. Owen O Neil, Upholder
Mr. Heny Osborne

P

Charles Powell, Esq;
Onesiphorus Phaire, Esq;
Thomas Putland, Esq; 6 Sets
Francis Perffe, Esq;
Mrs. Elizabeth Paul of Grafton-street
Mrs. Ponsonby
Mr. Thomas Parsons, T. C. D.
Mr. Robert Powell
Mr. John Powell, T. C. D.
Mr. Arthur Pomroy of Cork
Mr. John Pomroy of Cork

R

Sir John Rawdon, Bart.
Hercules Langford Rowley, Esq;
Mrs. Arabella Rowley
Mr. Bostock Radford, Attorney
Mrs. Elizabeth Reade
Mr. Michael Ransford
Mr. James Read
Mrs. Mary Rice
Mr. George Risk, Bookfeller, 6 Sets
Mrs. Rice

S

The Revd. Doctor Thomas Squire
Revd. Mr. Edward Shand, A. M.
Revd. Mr. Robert Symons, A. M.
Mr. Anderson Saunders, F. C. T. C. D.
Philip Swettenham, Gent.
Mr. Benjamin Stratford, T. C. D.
Miss Frances Stone
Mr. John Smith

Mr.

Subscribers Names.

Mr. John Scott
Miss Martha Sandoz
Mr. John Sterne, Junior
Mr. William Smith, Bookseller, 12 Sets
Mrs. Margery Sadler
Mr. Robert Stannard, T.C.D.

T

Mr. Richard Tisdall, A.B.
Mr. John Tooker, A.B.
Mr. Edward Tottenham, T.C.D.
Mr. Henry Thomson
Mr. John Tandy, Merchant
Mr. Thomas Tweedy
Mr. Henry Templeton
Mr. Alexander Thomson

W

Crofton Warren, Esq;
William White, Esq;
Henry Waring, Esq;
Mr. John Woodroffe, A.B.
Mr. Pointz Gaich Willington, T.C.D.
Mrs. Catharine Warrar Whitshed
Mr. Francis Woodley
Mr. Roberts White
Mr. William Walsh, T.C.D.
Miss Elizabeth Woodroffe
Mr. Peter Westenra, T.C.D.
Mr. Jackson Wray, T.C.D.
Mr. John Wotton
Mr. John Wilkinson
Mr. Cornelius Wynne, 12 Sets
Mrs. Ann Ward

7 JY 65



THE
LIFE
OF
Mr. CLEVELAND,
NATURAL SON
OF
Oliver Cromwell.

BOOK I.



Y Father's Name is so well known in the World, that I need not expatiate upon my Extraction. There is no one but has heard the Character of that celebrated Man, whose Virtues as well as Crimes were, for several years, the admiration of all Europe. Historians are still divided with Regard to the Rank in which they are to place him, and whether he is to be consider'd as a Hero or a Villain; but in what light soever he may be set, they can never rob him of the immortality he deserves under one of these titles. Tho' I

am his son, I nevertheless shall relate with the utmost impartiality, such of his actions as I may have occasion to mention.

Notwithstanding his affected zeal for religion, he yet was not insensible to the pleasures of love. He had several children by his wife, and others by different mistresses. 'Tis an astonishing circumstance, that the posterity of so formidable and wealthy a man, should have been made the sport of fortune, and be most of them reduced to an obscure and miserable condition of life. Nevertheless, if we except one of them who bore his name, and inherited an inconsiderable part of his wealth, which descended to his son, who now exercises an employment of little figure in the civil government in *London*; all the rest were drove from their native country at different times, and did not enjoy any part of their father's possessions. My ill fate was such, that I was the most unfortunate of them all, as the reader will find in the following history.

Possibly it may be asked, what kind of pleasure can an unhappy wretch take in awaking the remembrance of his past misfortunes, since the relating them must revive the idea of what was once so tormenting? To this I answer, that none but a happy person can ask such a question, it being well known to the unfortunate, that nothing can be a greater consolation to a troubled mind, than the liberty of venting its sorrows. A miserable person idolizes his grief as much as a happy man does his pleasures. If silence and solitude are agreeable in affliction, 'tis because we may retrace them calm and undisturb'd, and have the satisfaction of breathing our sighs without being interrupted. But a still greater consolation is, the describing our misfortunes in writing. Paper, tho' it may appear an insensible confidant, is not so in reality; it receives as it were a kind of warmth, by imbibing the impressions of a tortur'd Heart; it treasures them up faithfully, when the powers of the memory fail; 'tis always ready to represent them; and this image not only feeds a soft and delightful anxiety, but is also of use to justify it. This premis'd, I here begin my Story.

My Mother's Name was *Elizabeth Cleveland*, she was daughter to one of the chief officers that superintended the

the palace of *Hampton court*. Her beauty was so engaging, that *Charles I.* no sooner saw her but he was smitten. Few women assume a haughty air when a monarch addresses them; my mother was proud that her charms had merited such notice, and being of a cunning and intriguing cast of mind, she was sensible that in such unequal amours, where love must employ all it's power to shorten the distance of conditions; the same beauties which captivated a lover's heart, are not always sufficient to fix his constancy and fidelity; for which reason she heightened her personal charms with those of her mind. She enjoy'd his favour a considerable time, if we consider the fickleness of temper which was natural to that king; but then it was too short to satisfy her ambition, which was the predominant passion of her soul; so that the violence of that monarch's flame beginning to abate, she perhaps was more dejected with her fall than she had been elated with her rise. My mother had not strength of mind sufficient to suppress her discontents; when her indiscreet complaints, and her publick intimacy with several persons who oppos'd the Royal Family, made her be soon consider'd as a declar'd enemy to the king. Upon this her pension was cut off, and she lost those remains of Grandeur, she till then, by her artful Management, had kept up. Mr. *Cleveland*, her father, who was a zealous royalist, having shut the door against her, necessity forc'd her to follow the first advice which hatred had suggested, that is to throw herself among the king's enemies.

My father made at that time a considerable figure among the malecontents. His good sense, his uncommon talents, his great veneration for religion, the regular life he led, and above all the extraordinary zeal he discover'd for his country's welfare, had gain'd him the esteem of multitudes in *London*, and made all the *English* consider him as the defender of their laws, and the bulwark of their liberties. I cannot say whether he had then form'd the ambitious design which afterwards made such a noise in the world; but having openly profess'd himself an enemy to the government, he had too much judgment not to know that he might draw the greatest advantage from Mrs. *Cleveland's* acquaintance. He

knew her character, and that she had been let into the most secret transactions of the court during her prosperity. 'Twas my father she address'd; and he had received her in such a manner as very much sooth'd her vanity; for he prevented the uneasiness of revealing her misfortunes to him, by offering her not only his own purse, but that of his friends; and at the same time desir'd she would leave to him the making of her fortune. He won her esteem and confidence to such a degree in this first interview, that she soon after consider'd him as her best friend. When two persons of a different sex have a great friendship for each other, it soon improves to love. Their political conversations became not long after tender ones: They were mutually struck, and Mrs. *Cleveland* did not think it beneath her to become the Mistress of a Man of my father's character, tho' she had been dear to a king.

However, her love produc'd an unexpected effect, which was of fatal consequence to her ambition. The world wink at certain foibles in a woman, when they seem ennobled by the cause from which they spring. The honour of being dear in the affections of a monarch, ballances, in some measure, the loss of virtue. But if we except the exalted rise, which soothes our pride to that degree as to change our ideas in this manner; mankind are universally agreed to consider in a disadvantageous light, all such women as suffer themselves to be drawn away by the suggestions of a blind passion. I cannot even pardon this in my mother, notwithstanding that I owe my birth to an imprudence of this nature. She met with as little indulgence in *London*. All the persons of distinction whose esteem she had till then preserved, deprived her of it, and likewise of their familiarity and friendship; my father himself no longer valued her, after she had indulged all his desires, and thinking she could be of no further service to him, he treated her no otherwise than as a common mistress. My mother was very much disgusted at this change, and it cur'd her of the passion she had entertain'd for my father. She had pride enough to leave her lover without breaking into reproaches, and went to *Hammer-smith*, being then big with me. I don't know what views she had, or how she thought to subsist; however, my father did not forget her so far, as not

to settle an honest maintenance on her. Her misfortunes were of advantage to her, as they made her distaste those things she had till then been so fond of; and she not only bid adieu both to love and ambition, but also to all the innocent recreations which most of her sex delight in. Accordingly she devoted herself to a serious course of life; made study her darling employment, and after she had brought me into the world, she took the utmost care of my infancy, and afterwards of my education.

It will be impossible for me to set the wisdom and virtue of this excellent mother, in so beautiful a light as it deserves. She was now no longer that licentious woman, who had been alternately a slave to love and ambition; for her thoughts were now as chaste and regular as her outward conduct. I was no sooner inform'd with some little glimmering of reason, but she herself undertook to shape my manners, without having recourse to masters. She had got a collection of the most approv'd authors of the last ages, and the best translations of the works of the ancients. She applied herself so close to this study for several years, that without any knowledge of the *Latin* tongue, she made a wonderful progress in history. She had form'd her taste with equal success with regard to works of wit. The moment a piece was published, she immediately perus'd it with a critical eye, and declar'd either her approbation or censure; in which circumstance only she corresponded with the world. But the chief object of her study was moral philosophy, to which she made all the rest subservient. The other sciences were but as so many handmaids to attain perfection in that; and she consider'd them either as solid or trifling, according as they either promoted or remov'd her from the knowledge of it. She had read the translations of all the philosophers ancient and modern; and had extracted from them, with uncommon penetration, their most just notions with regard to happiness and truth. Of these she, by her great assiduity, had form'd a complete system, the several parts of which were link'd together after a wonderful manner, and reduc'd to a small number of clear and solid principles. This was her favourite work, which she was for ever reading, and in this, she said, she found as in a fruitful spring, her strength; the motive of

all her actions; consolation; in a word, the foundation of her peace, and the uninterrupted tranquillity of her mind.

I was hardly seven years old, when she began to inspire me with a taste for those studies which were so dear to her. She found me endued with a happy disposition, or rather she infus'd it into me by her great care, and the frequent repetition of her maxims. Hitherto I had not been in any company but hers; for having design'd to mould and fashion my heart according to her peculiar notions, she had for that reason debarr'd me all the amusements of childhood. I was continually under her eye, and was us'd to turn over the leaves of books before I was able to lift them. I could read at an age when most children begin to speak; and the perpetual solitude in which I was brought up, gave me a habit of thinking and reflecting, at an age when we are ignorant of our own nature, and under what class of animals man is to be rank'd. I was not taught *Latin*; that tongue, would my mother say, is now useful to none but criticks or schoolmasters, all its beauties having been transplanted into the living languages by translation; and the time which a child employs in learning it, may be spent to better purpose in informing the mind with solid knowledge. In a word, she was very much prejudiced against the study of languages in general, and called them the confounders of reason, and the destroyers of the judgment. The multitude of traces which so many barbarous and foreign words leave in the brain of a child, create an irreparable confusion. 'Twould, wou'd she say, be a great misfortune, were it impossible to make a progress in the sciences, without having devoted part of one's life to the study of languages; but since we can do so well without them, 'tis very ridiculous to fatigue the brain with so useless a burthen. Five or six years of youth, which are spent in learning a little *Latin*, contribute very faintly, and after a remote manner, to conduct man to his principal end, which is the being wise and happy. We are not, says she, at that age, to cultivate the memory, but the heart and the rational faculties; and on this the whole fabric of happiness and virtue depends. She therefore contented herself with teaching me my native tongue in

its

its utmost purity, as it is necessary that a man of some birth should express his thoughts in a polite way both in speaking and writing. She also made me study the *French* tongue, as tho' she had foreseen that the planet under which I was born, had design'd me for a life of trouble and anxiety. Possibly, says she, you will one day be forc'd to leave your native country, and therefore may have occasion for a language by which you may make yourself understood to foreigners, and there is not any one more universal than the *French*.

Thus my first years were spent in a bare imitation of my mother's studies. I learnt the elements of the sciences, with the same views as she did; and applied myself particularly to history, which is the practic part of moral philosophy; but at the same time did not neglect the source of it; for which purpose I needed only to cast my eye on the compendious system my mother had drawn up; that golden book lying always open on my table, and I had transcrib'd it with my own hand. I compar'd the incidents I read in history with her principles; I judg'd of virtues and vices pursuant to her notions; and whether it were that she had merely followed those natural dictates of virtue and integrity, which are the same in all men, when they are willing to observe and act after their impulses; or that my constant living with her, and imbibing continually her instructions, had given me the same turn of thinking with herself; I felt the truth of her maxims, and found that the sentiments of my heart agreed exactly with those laid down in her moral system.

Whilst we were thus leading a studious and solitary life, our unhappy country was torn to pieces by intestine divisions. My father, (for I call him by that name tho' I did not then know him to be so) at the head of an army of furious malecontents, had lighted up the fire of discord throughout the whole island. These for several years had made dreadful havock, and the war ended with a crime of a blacker dye than the rest; a crime which has not yet been distinguished by a peculiar name, in any language; the reason of which undoubtedly is, because no term can be found strong enough to express the villainy of

it. I mean the murder of *Charles* the first, our lawful sovereign.

Altho' the great privacy in which we then lived, had secured us from the miseries of war, it yet was impossible for us not to hear of that sad catastrophe. The cry of the blood of that good king reached heaven, and the deep groans of all true *Englishmen*, pierc'd to our retirement. My mother enquired into the particulars of that fatal attempt, and immediately related the whole to me; and tho' she had arm'd her breast with philosophy, she yet could not forbear bursting into tears as she spoke the following words. Listen, my son, says she; listen to a sad story that is not to be parallel'd in history. The king has lost his head on a scaffold, and your father's guilt has brought him to it. Blessed God! says she, let not thy vengeance be proportion'd to this horrid crime; at least let it not reach us! As I had never before been sensible to the least uneasiness, and my mother had always appear'd as undisturb'd as myself; her tears; the confusion with which she began to speak; and the name of father, which I had never heard before, made so deep an impression upon me, that I fell into a swoon. Being recovered from it, I fix'd my eyes upon her as tho' I expected the sequel of so extraordinary a preamble. She then satisfied my anxious curiosity, by informing me of her adventures, my birth, the rank to which my father had raised himself, and whatever she had heard from those who had related to her the troubles of *England*, and the tragical end of our unhappy monarch.

Tho' I was but young, with regard to years, yet my mind was not so. My mother had painted her story in the most strong and lively colours, and when she had ended it, I was fired with such a transport, as for some time made me insensible to what was doing round me. I was terrified, as it were, with the multitude of images which crouded in at once upon my brain. 'Tis not but I had read of the overthrow of states, of troubles, and bloody wars; but past events, when barely told by an historian, make but a faint impression on the mind. But here, methought, I shar'd in the present revolution, in the person of my father. The impulses of nature clash'd with the maxims I had imbib'd. I found myself inclined to love him, and had

had an earnest desire to see that great man, tho' at the same instant I detested him as a monster that was guilty of the blackest of all crimes, and his usage of my mother completed my aversion. Hitherto I had no other sentiments but those of natural rectitude; virtue and wisdom were the only objects of my love and admiration, and I could not conceive it was possible for a man to deviate voluntarily from either of them. Thus did I begin to despise the man who gave me birth, the instant I was told who he was; and the dear name of father was suddenly united in my imagination with the ideas of aversion and hatred.

I must however do my mother this justice to say; that the moment she perceived my inclinations on this head, she did her utmost to eradicate them; but it is difficult to erase impressions from a young mind. 'Twas to no purpose that she employ'd the very maxims which I had approv'd so much while she instill'd them into me. We must, says she, abhor villainy; but then we live in such a world, that we are sometimes obliged to bear with it. This is particularly true with regard to persons to whom we are bound by the ties of duty and respect; on these occasions, all we are allowed to do is to grieve for their guilt, and to pray to heaven for their reformation; but be their crimes ever so great, yet these can never authorize us to refuse them what nature or other duties may oblige us to render them. She even gave me to understand, that I ought for my own sake to think as favourable as possible of my father; that I had nothing to hope for from any person but him; that our moderate subsistence depended wholly on his bounty; that as the pension she enjoy'd was settled on her only, I should be in want of every thing after her death; consequently, that it would be proper for me to address him, in order that he might own me for his son, and make my fortune. Notwithstanding I was fully sensible of the importance of these reasons, they yet cou'd not change my sentiments with regard to him. I spent several Years in retirement, and cou'd not be prevail'd with to leave it, in order to solicit for advantages which I did not value, and would not owe to a man, whom I abhor'd to consider as a father. Study and reflection had brought me to a fix'd persuasion, that felicity does not consist in affluence. Virtue, says I, is

independent on the goods of fortune; and 'tis she only forms the happiness of the upright man.

My mother had undoubtedly the same sentiments on that head; since I had suck'd in, as it were, mine with her milk; but then she heightned them with experience, and therefore consider'd them in a more just light. She was sensible that the weakness and wants of the body, interfere perpetually with the tranquillity which forms the happiness of the soul; that altho' philosophy curbs the passions, it yet does not make us insensible to the cravings of nature; that certain extremes of ill fortune disconcert the wise man, and make him forgetful of his principles; in a word, that tho' a good man ought not to wish to be so much the minion of fortune, as to make him swerve from the dictates of virtue; he yet should endeavour to raise himself above penury and want, as they are known to damp all the faculties of the mind. This she inculcated so often, and was so vastly urgent with me, that I at last consented to go to *London*, and wait upon my father. He had then attain'd the highest point of worldly glory. All his enemies were dead or crush'd; the parliament consisted wholly of his adherents, and all the military employments were filled with his creatures; so that no monarch's authority was ever establish'd on a stronger foundation. The modest title of *lord protector of the commonwealth*, seem'd to secure the duration of his power; because that the people, who are always imposed upon by outside, were firmly persuaded, that a man who discovered so much moderation, could not be prompted by any other motives than those of his country's love, or any other views than the public utility. He was affable, popular, belov'd by the greatest part of his countrymen, and respected or dreaded by foreigners. We were inform'd in *London* of these changes. My mother, who had long known his character, easily saw through this disguise; but confining her thoughts to her own bosom, she imagin'd that even his hypocrisy might be of some service to us. 'Twas not probable he would be cruel to his children, when he affected to shew so much favour and indulgence to the public. She desired to be admitted to a private audience, and her request was immediately granted; accordingly we were introduced into his palace,
when

when he came alone a moment after into the cabinet where we waited for him.

He knew my mother, tho' he had not seen her so many years; and coming up to her in a very polite manner, he ask'd what service he could do her. The sight of a Man whom she had once lov'd to such a degree as to sacrifice every thing for his sake, made so strong an impression, that she immediately burst into tears. He seem'd to be very much affected, and again offer'd her his service; she told him at once, that she had been happily delivered of the child which was the fruit of their loves; that she had till then brought him up in a recluse way of life, and had given him such an education, as might make him not altogether unworthy of such a father; and that she then took the liberty to present his son to him in order that he might reap the advantages he might naturally expect from being so nearly related to him.

Oliver seem'd lost in thought for some moments upon hearing this, when changing countenance on a sudden, he look'd upon us with a haughty and contemptuous eye. No, no, says he, this artifice is too glaring; consider how greatly you are oblig'd to my goodness, that I don't instantly punish your impudence; and take care not to reveal this piece of villainy to any person, as you wish not to be treated as you deserve. He had no sooner given us this cruel answer but he turn'd away, and left us in the utmost confusion and astonishment, as the reader may easily suppose.

You wou'd, Madam, says I to my mother, put me upon this; you now see whether I was not in the right in refusing at first to comply with your desires. She was in such deep affliction, as deprived her of the power of making me an answer, when leaning upon my shoulder we left the apartments, and came into the street, she not being able to open her lips till that time. And now chance, or her own choice, brought us before the palace of *Whitehall*, under which king *Charles* had unhappily lost his head. There we stopt a moment, when her grief became on a sudden so violent, that being no longer able to stand, she was oblig'd to sit down on a stone bench that was fix'd in the wall. Here she exclaim'd for some time against the horrid injustice of men and her unhappy fate.

I sym-

I sympathiz'd with her complaints, and was now much more exasperated against the author of our misfortunes; and how unnatural soever this might be, my reason did not seem to condemn it. Whilst we were revolving these anxious thoughts, *Fairfax*, the confident of my father's secrets, pass'd just by us, as he was going into *Whitehall*. He had seen my mother so often in *London* that he soon recollected her; and being very much surpriz'd to find her sitting there, he stop'd to pay her a civil compliment. Her grief was so visible, that he easily perceiv'd it, upon which he besought her to acquaint him with the cause of it; and as persons when seiz'd with a deep affliction, are scarce able to assume a borrow'd countenance, she open'd her heart to him without the least reserve. He listen'd to her attentively, and whether it were out of compassion, or a political view with regard to *Oliver's* interest, he promised to act so zealously in her favour, as might, he said, perhaps be of the greatest service to us both. Wait here for me, says he, I'll go back purposely to my *lord protector*, and in the mean while would have you flatter yourselves with the hopes of my succeeding. He left us, when I begg'd my mother not to stay; Why, says I, shou'd we expose ourselves a second time to the cruelty of a barbarous wretch, who is dead to all the sensations of tenderness and nature? He indulges me a favour in refusing to own me for his son; and he takes from me the shame of having so criminal and contemptible a creature for my father. My mother was deaf to my entreaties, and we waited for *Fairfax's* return, who presently appear'd with an air of satisfaction, as made us believe he had met with success. He told us, his arguments had prevail'd so far with the *protector*, as to make him think 'twas a dishonour to him not to own me. His amour with my mother was universally known, as well as the fruits of it before she withdrew to her solitude; but the life she had since led, had remov'd all suspicions of every kind; so that *Fairfax*, who was a very artful man, had taken advantage of my father's blind side, and represented to him, that his cruelty to me, would ruin the good opinion he had endeavour'd to preserve in the world, with regard to his uprightness and humanity; and thereupon desir'd us to return with him to the palace. As we were

were going, he acquainted her with a circumstance that had occasion'd her being so ill received by the *protector*, which was, that he had that morning received a visit of much the same nature with ours. Another of his mistresses, whose name was *Molly Bridge*, had waited upon him with a son about my age which she had by him. The *protector* was vex'd to see her, being afraid lest this should give the world an unfavourable idea of his morals, and his confusion was very much increas'd when he found himself address'd about an affair of the same nature.

Fairfax carried us to a more private apartment than that in which we had before been introduc'd; and we had not been long in it, when my father came to us. He now appear'd with a calm and serene countenance, and receiv'd us with great civility. After making a short excuse for receiving us so ill before, he assur'd my mother that he esteem'd her as much as he had ever done, and was willing to give her a proof of it. Then turning about to me, and calling me his dear son; depend upon it, says he, I'll be your friend, and make your fortune. While he said this I continued with my eyes fix'd on the ground, and did not once open my lips; nor was my heart susceptible of the tender emotions of nature. I recall'd to my memory the murder of king *Charles*, and fancied I saw the executioner cover'd with his innocent blood. I remembred all the torments my mother had suffer'd, and fancied I was speaking to her persecutor; I call'd to mind with what a contemptuous and insulting air he had received us the first time: In a word, his person seem'd to correspond with the idea I had entertain'd of him, and I saw something in his air that terrified me; says my mother to me; fall at your father's feet, embrace them, and endeavour to make yourself worthy of his care; but I did not once stir, upon which she told him that I was vastly modest; however, he took no manner of notice of what she said. After we had discours'd together, but in a cold and languid manner, for some minutes, he again spoke, and propos'd a thing to my mother which he said would be of great advantage to us both. You must know, says he, that I've much at heart the colonies of *Jamaica* and *New-England*; now I'll leave it to your choice to go and settle in either of them; and depend upon

on it, that you will amass riches; and the honours to which you shall be rais'd, will far exceed your expectations. I want some persons on whom I may rely, to go upon the spot, to superintend my affairs there, and by that means make his own fortune; both of you are very proper for my purpose, as you are so nearly related to me; and what I now offer will be of such certain advantage to you, that you may now look upon your business as done. *Fairfax* endeavour'd to persuade my mother, that the *Lord Protector* did her a particular favour, in making her such a proposal; and that his preferring us to so many who had solicited for that employment, was a proof that he had a great affection for us, especially as he trusted us so far. You'll be honoured and respected, says he, and will acquire great riches in a few years, at the end of which you may return to *England*, and enjoy them in peace and tranquillity.

My mother saw at once into the artifice of these offers, and though she was absolutely determin'd not to accept of them, she nevertheless thought it would be of dangerous consequence to refuse them bluntly. She indeed might easily perceive, from the reception we had met with a little before, that our presence was obnoxious to my father, and that his only view was to remove us at a great distance from him. She certainly had no manner of inclination to go to *Jamaica*; and indeed what pleasure could a Woman hope to enjoy, in thus going into a voluntary banishment with a child of my age? But then she was afraid that something worse wou'd happen in case she refus'd; she therefore thank'd him for the very handsome offer he made us.

This answer persuaded my father that she would gratify his desire, and being unable to conceal the satisfaction it gave him, he embrac'd her, possibly with sincerity because he was overjoy'd he had impos'd, as he thought, upon her in that manner. After this, the only Thing mention'd was the preparation for, and time of our departure; and he express'd himself in such a manner, as though he was now resolv'd not to spare any expence, in order to make the voyage as agreeable to us as possible. Heaven only knows in what manner he would have perform'd his promise; but those my mother made him

were

were ambiguous; and when she thanked him for his goodness, 'twas upon the supposition that he would give us such testimonies of it, as suited better with our inclinations.

We retired soon after our having left him a direction. I had not spoke one word all the while, and my mother was angry with me for it; but I told her my thoughts without the least disguise, and was very much surpriz'd to find her consent so easily to leave *England*, merely to go in pursuit of uncertain wealth in an unknown country. My mother told me the motives why she had acquiesc'd so easily in outward appearance; and as I had no other reason to disapprove this offer, but the extreme contempt I had for riches; she then related to me the several reflections she had made on my father's proposal; that is, his indifference for us both, and the design he had to get rid of us. My simplicity and unexperience had prevented my seeing so far into that matter, and I found my aversion increas'd. Such then, says I, are the views my father had in making us those offers. Let us, continued I, set out for *America*; if it is a desert and uninhabited place, we shall be far remov'd from the society of men; and in case they all resemble him who just now own'd me for his son, I detest them. Whenever my mother heard me exclaim in this manner, she would always endeavour to soften my resentment. I sometimes would reproach myself for it, as being unnatural; but it was not in my power to suppress these sensations, and indeed I afterwards had reason to hate mankind still more.

Before we return'd to *Hammer-smith*, in order to determine how we should act in that affair; my mother thought proper to visit a lady of her acquaintance in *London*, who had the same esteem for her now, as when she was in her prosperity. She had not indeed had the least correspondence with her since her retirement; but knowing her character, she relied as much upon her fidelity as ever. The name of this good friend was Mrs. *Riding*. She receiv'd us with the utmost demonstrations of joy; but when my mother had reveal'd our troubles, and my father's proposal, she turn'd pale, as tho' she had heard some sad accident. I really, says she to my mother, concluded you were dead; and the satisfaction I had

had of seeing you again was so great, that I did not think proper to ruffle it with any melancholy particulars; but what you have now told me, obliges me to change the discourse, and acquaint you with a most tragical story. Be assur'd, that both you and your son are undone, in case you put the least confidence in the *protector's* promises. I'm now going to relate such a story, as will plainly shew the danger you are in, and serve as a *memento* to you. She afterwards asked, whether she had ever known *Molly Bridge*, who had been one of my father's mistresses. I have not, says my mother, but *Fairfax* mention'd her to me; he told me, that she was to wait on the *protector* this very day, with a son she had by him. *Fairfax*, says Mrs. *Riding*, has impos'd upon you; I don't know what views he had in mentioning that unfortunate woman to you, for she has been dead these fifteen years, nor do I believe that her son is alive. Harken to the sad relation.

Molly Bridge was a charming creature, and of a most amiable temper. She had suffer'd herself to be seduc'd by *Oliver's* hypocrisy, when he was but speaker of the house of Commons. His passion for her was not more lasting than that he since had for you. She, like you, was abandon'd by him when he found she was with child, and afterwards languish'd her days away in obscurity with the fruits of her unhappy love. Chance made me strike up an acquaintance with her, three or four years after *Oliver* had turn'd her off. He had already been perfidious to you, and as you disappear'd about the same time, 'twas suppos'd you died of grief when you saw yourself despis'd; or that you had cross'd the seas, and were retir'd to some neighbouring kingdom. I soon esteem'd *Molly Bridge*, and we grew vastly intimate. I us'd to comfort her, whenever she discover'd any uneasiness at her being abandon'd; and told her, that affairs would go better with her, when her son was big enough to appear before *Oliver*, and, by his presence, awake the tender affection he once had for her. Young *Bridge*, for his mother did not dare to let him go by his father's name, had a thousand good qualities. His mother was uncommonly tender of him, and she approv'd of my motion of presenting him to his father, who could not, unless he were a Barbarian, refuse his affection to so amiable a child.

child. We consulted together how she might obtain a private interview of him; and were of opinion, that the shortest and most commodious way would be, to engage him, if possible, to come to her house; and I naturally suppos'd he would not refuse so small a favour to a person whom he once had thought worthy of his affection. She nam'd a day, and made her request by letter, and sent it at a time when she heard he had little business upon his hands. He came upon the receipt of it, and I happen'd then to be at *Molly Bridge's*. We had heighten'd the native beauty of her little son, with an innocent and becoming Dress. The moment I saw him walk in, I withdrew into the closet, where I could hear all they said. She saluted him in silence, and with a modest air; and calling her son to her, she presented him to *Oliver* with so much tenderness, as might have melted the most obdurate heart; Here, says she, is the fruit of our loves. May he be so happy as to please his father, after the many tears and sighs he has cost his unhappy mother! I judg'd by his slowness in answering, that this unexpected incident gave him some pain. He knew nothing of Mrs. *Bridge's* having a child by him; and as he had assum'd a specious air of sanctity, he was afraid of every thing that might contribute to lessen the opinion the world entertain'd of it. However, he on this occasion, acted the part of a profound politician. He assur'd Mrs. *Bridge* that he was vex'd to the soul, he had been so long ignorant of her having so dear a pledge of their loves; he embrac'd both the mother and son a hundred times; talk'd to them in the most tender and passionate terms, and protested he was overjoy'd to see them: and after above an hour's conversation, he propos'd to take the child under his care; and said, he should love him as dearly as those he had by his wife, and provide as well for him. As for you, Mrs. *Bridge*, says he, with a feign'd tenderness, I'm afraid you've been in want of many things since I had the unhappiness of losing your acquaintance. I'll use my utmost endeavours to make you forget the past, and will settle a pension of two hundred pounds a year upon you for life. Tho' *Molly Bridge* was always of such a nature, as to be easily wrought upon by persuasion, 'twas yet with great reluctance that she thought of letting her son go from under her wing.

wing. She endeavour'd to prevent it by telling him, that the child had been always us'd to live with her; that nothing in the world could be dearer to her; that he would be brought up with greater care under her eye, than in a school by strangers; that he was of a very delicate constitution, and not yet old enough to be taken from his mother. However, *Oliver* was so urgent, and deluded her with so many hopes, that she at last yielded to his insidious reasons. They agreed that he should send for the child two days after, and that her pension should begin from that time; when embracing them both he went away.

I must confess that he had play'd his part so cunningly, that I scarce knew what answer to make Mrs. *Bridge*, when she ask'd my opinion of the matter. *Oliver*, says I, may perhaps be sincere, which undoubtedly would be of the highest advantage to you; but in case he should prove otherwise, you and your son are to be pitied, for having yielded so inconsiderately to his desires. She asked my opinion how to act in this affair, and whether there was any room to think that *Oliver* could be so unnatural, as to harbour any cruel thoughts against the child. I dare not, says I, carry my suspicions so far; but I advise you to make diligent enquiry, where he proposes to send your son, and not to depend wholly on other peoples care of him. The two days were now at an end, when on the morning of the third, a gentleman of a very good aspect alighted from a coach, and gave Mrs. *Bridge* a letter from *Oliver*, and at the same time brought her part of her pension. I was then with her, and indeed I scarce left her a moment while this matter was carrying on. The letter consisted only of a few civil expressions, and a desire that she would deliver up her son to the bearer. 'Twas then poor *Molly Bridge* was oppress'd with grief, and tortur'd with doubts. Must she deliver up her son to a stranger? Could she suspect barbarity in a father? This affair indeed was of so delicate a nature, that I would willingly have wav'd giving my opinion. She begg'd me to advise her; I answer'd, follow no body's counsel but your own, that you mayn't blame any of your friends, in case things should not go right. However, if you ask my opinion; methinks 'twould be too late to break off your engagements

gagements with *Oliver*. He is a formidable man; who knows whether he would not have recourse to violence, and how would you be able to oppose it? Very possibly you and your son would be more unhappy upon that account, and your calamity greater. But then, when you do give up your son into the hands of this stranger, let your servant watch where he goes, and by that means we shall know where the child is to be, and what becomes of him. She approved the hint, and acted accordingly. She entrusted the gentleman with her son, whom we followed to the coach with tears; and the pretty creature, who was not yet of an age to suspect any danger, seem'd affected with nothing but his mother's tears.

I sent one of my own servants after the coach. He was a cunning, but trusty fellow, who at a moment's warning could artfully execute a commission of this kind. We waited with the utmost impatience, for his return, which was in about two hours; and as I had not conceal'd the least circumstance in this affair from him, in order to engage him to exert himself the more in it; he turn'd his eyes towards heaven at his coming into the room, so that we plainly saw he had no good news to tell us. Speak, says I, at once, and don't terrify us, unless you have just reasons for it. Alas! Madam, says he, if what I am going to relate does not terrify you, 'twill however excite your compassion and melt your hearts; I'm sure it did mine. He then told us, with tears in his eyes, that having follow'd the coach a long time, it stopt at last in a bye street; that the gentleman to whom little master *Bridge* was deliver'd alighted out of the coach, and sending it away, carried him into a house, and staid about half an hour in it. That afterwards a hackney coach was call'd, into which he put the innocent child, and afterwards stept into it himself; that the child did not seem to have any harm done him, but had been stript of his fine cloaths, and was drest in tatters; that the coach drove sometime towards *White-Chappel*, when the gentleman discharg'd it, at a little distance from an hospital for poor children; that he carried master *Bridge* into it, and as he came back without him, there was no room to doubt but he had left him among the orphans; that he did not dare to say any thing to the master

master of the hospital, or make the least enquiry without our orders, for fear of taking a wrong step.

Mrs. *Bridge* was half dead when this news was told her, but I was very near as much affected as herself: I told her, that she ought not to take on so much, since she knew where her son was; that indeed, I cou'd not have thought *Oliver* wou'd have been so barbarous, but that 'twas happy for her she had this opportunity of finding him out, since she would now no longer be deceiv'd by his artifices; that as he cou'd not think we had discover'd them, we might easily prevent the ill consequences which might happen therefrom, by taking the child privately out of the hospital, and that when his mother should desire it she wou'd not be refused; however, that she should make this the last expedient, in order that *Oliver* might never know he was again got into her hands; that I myself would undertake to do it, and believ'd I should certainly succeed; that I promis'd to have him brought up with so much care and secrecy, in a farm of mine in *Devonshire*, that it would be morally impossible for *Oliver* to find him out; that in case the perfidious wretch should have the assurance to visit her again, she must receive him handsomely; and not take the least notice of any thing, whether he had, or had not heard that she had found her son again, or seem'd to have been inform'd of it; but that 'twas not probable he ever would have the impudence to come to her any more, in case he heard she had found out his base artifice.

Having thus endeavour'd to comfort her, I went away in order to execute my design, and was resolved to put my self out of pain that night, and not suffer poor little *Bridge* to spend it in the hospital; but just as I was going out, I saw *Oliver's* coach coming towards Mrs. *Bridge's* house. I did not doubt but he was come to pay her a visit. He had had time to inform himself, by his agent, of the success of his designs, and probably was come to see how far it affected her, and to remove all suspicions I went to her a moment, and mentioning the disagreeable scene in which she was obliged to bear a part, I exhorted her to speak with the utmost caution. I thought it wou'd be proper not to go far from her, in order that my presence might encourage her. *Oliver* came into the room,
with

with as calm and undisturb'd an air, as if he had just done the most virtuous action; but I observed at the same time that he was surpriz'd to find me there, for he knew me. As his only aim was to conceal this part of his villainy, he would not mention any Thing of what he had done before me; and thereupon, desir'd me, after we had exchang'd a few words, to withdraw, saying, he had something to tell *Molly Bridge* in private. Hearing this, I stept into the closet, when the fear I was under lest he should get the secret out of her, and again impose upon her by his delusive arts, made me listen very attentively. He immediately spoke of her son as a charming little boy, and assur'd her that he lov'd him with a paternal tenderness, and then gave her a chimerical account of the great care he had taken of him; and when he thought he had said enough to satisfy a mother's tenderness, he assured her with a soft tone of voice, that tho' he resolv'd to do all that lay in his power to make so sweet a child's fortune, his affairs would not yet permit him to own him publickly for his son; that he was oblig'd to act very cautiously with regard to the world; that his affection would not be the less for its being a secret; that 'twas not even necessary for her to see the child often; but that she might sometimes be gratified in that particular, and in the mean time should rely wholly on the great tenderness he had for them both. Poor *Molly* constrain'd her self so far as to thank him for his goodness, and to approve every thing he said. He thought he had imposed upon her in this easy manner, and left her not, as we may suppose, without laughing at her simplicity.

How was it possible for you, says I, when I came again into the room to that excellent woman, to preserve so much strength of mind, as to listen calmly to that horrible detail of knavery and barbarity! I'm sure that I my self could never have acted such a part, tho' I advis'd you to it; but should at once have unmask'd the hypocrite, who so vilely offends both against heaven and mankind. How was it possible for you, said I, to contract a tender intimacy with a man of so different a cast of mind from yours? alas! virtuous hearts never come together; a man of honour will be deceiv'd twenty times in the choice of a wife; whilst the most amiable and perfect of

our

our sex fall a prey to hypocrites and villains. I made Mrs. *Bridge* consider, that since *Oliver* was capable of carrying his artifices so far, in an affair of this nature, there was no doubt but he had it very much at heart; and consequently would be highly exasperated against me, in case he should happen to discover, that I had assisted to ruin his measures. 'Tis not, says I, that I desire to raise the merits of the service I intend to do you, but at the same time that I do my utmost to serve you upon this occasion, you'll give me leave to set about it with the utmost caution. In case I am so happy as to get your son out of the hospital, you must deprive your self of the pleasure of seeing him, 'till such time as he is got into *Devonshire*. I'll stay in *London* some time after he is gone down, and will seem to shun you, as tho' we were fallen out. I'll afterwards set out for my country house, and you may come privately after me whenever you think proper. She left the whole to my management. I embrac'd her tenderly at my taking leave, till such time as I shou'd see her again in the country. She was so oppress'd with grief, that I took it for an ill omen, and left her with tears in my eyes, as tho' something had told me, this was the last time we shou'd ever meet together.

I went immediately to the hospital, and walk'd in as tho' I came thither merely out of curiosity. I desir'd to be admitted to see the children, and fondled the prettiest of them, purposely that I might do the same to little master *Bridge* without being taken notice of. At last I spy'd him, but in such a miserable dress as quite melted me. I was going to desire the superintendant, who seem'd to be a man of no breeding, to deliver him to me; but observing that he was withdrawn, and that only my self and my servant were left in the midst of these little orphans; I whisper'd to my man, that I believed we cou'd now carry off young *Bridge* unperceiv'd. Accordingly I bid him carry him to the door, and in case he found the way clear to go out with the child, and step into the coach that was waiting for me. I stay'd a moment behind them, to see whether they would not meet with any obstacle, and finding no body come, I went into the street, step'd into the coach, and got off very happily. Those kind of nurseries were at that time in such disorder,

der, and the children were neglected to that degree, that 'twas no wonder I got off so easily with my prize. I went directly home, and 'twas now evening, when I sent away the child with the servant who had carried him off; and at the same time wrote his mother word how I had succeeded.

I continued some days in *London*, as was agreed upon between us, when giving her notice, by letter, of the day I intended to set out for the country, I accordingly left the town. I concluded she would not be long after me, but had scarce been three days in *Devonshire*, when I received a letter from her, the contents of which were very melancholy. *Oliver* had been informed, but how she cou'd not tell, that his son had been stole away from the hospital. As he did not doubt but she had a hand in it, he went to her in the first emotions of his rage; and so far from continuing in his former hypocritical strain, he threatened to make her feel the most dreadful effects of his hatred, in case she refus'd to deliver up her son again into his hands. She at first vowed and protested that she did not know what was become of him; but not being able to bear up long against his threats, she confess'd the whole to him. This threw him into the highest rage, and tho' she obstinately refus'd to tell him who had been the agents on this occasion, he suspected I had a hand in it. He repeated his threats at his leaving her; and by an outrage seldom heard of in a free country, he left two arm'd men to watch her till such time as he should examine farther into the affair. Mrs. *Bridge* was not in a condition to oppose his violence, no one living in the house but herself and her maid; by which means she was confined in it, and had no opportunity of acquainting the neighbours with her distress. But this was nothing to the evils that were prepared for her. The two fellows whom *Oliver* had left to guard her, were wicked villains, who, as they were in so pretty a woman's chamber, did not let the night pass without offering at something unworthy both of themselves and their master. They used violence both with the mistress and the maid; and dreading undoubtedly, after their committing so vile an action, the resentment of *Oliver*, whom they very possibly might suppose not altogether so wicked as themselves;

themselves; they fled away the next morning to avoid the punishment they might justly expect. Poor *Molly*, in the deepest transports of despair to find herself thus dishonour'd, was going to kill herself; but had so much presence of mind as to acquaint me with the particulars of her fatal design, before she put it in execution; and taking the opportunity of her maid's carrying the letter to the post-house, she tied her girdle about her neck, and at once put an end to her life and misfortunes.

Notwithstanding she told me in her letter, that she was resolv'd to make away with herself, I yet imagin'd, that the great love she had for her son, would prevail with her to live, notwithstanding her deep despair. She recommended him to my care in such strong, such moving terms, that I could not possibly think she would lay violent hands on herself, without embracing him, at least once more. I was every day in expectation of her arrival, but I only saw her maid, who acquainted me with the tragical circumstances of her mistress's death, and the consequences of it.

Oliver's design in setting a watch over her, was to prevent her sending me notice that his villainy was discover'd. After leaving her, he came to my house, probably in the hopes of either bribing me by his promises, or deceiving me by his artifices. But hearing that I was gone into the country some days before; and being inform'd by different persons that I had broke off all acquaintance with her for some time, he no longer suspected me. As it was late when he had made this enquiry, and that he depended upon the two fellows he had set to watch her, he thought 'twould be time enough to visit her the next day; and going in the morning, he came to her house just as the maid was return'd from the post-house. The wench who had bore a part in this fatal adventure, and knew that *Oliver* was the first cause of it, burst into a flood of tears as soon as she saw him, which surpriz'd him a little. She told him all that had happen'd, which seem'd to affect him; when running up to her mistress's apartment, in order to give her some consolation, how was he astonish'd to find her hanging. However, he kept the maid from crying out, and forc'd her afterwards to consent to affirm, that he had no hand in this fatal Disaster;

after; that 'twould be for her good, as well as his, to keep it a secret; and to bribe her completely to his interest he made her a very considerable present. Upon this the unhappy Mrs. *Bridge* was buried privately, and her fatal end was conceal'd from the world. The maid knowing I had a great affection for her mistress, set out immediately for *Devonshire*, in order to acquaint me with what had happen'd. She did not know what was become of young *Bridge*; however, after I had try'd her and found her discreet and faithful, I thought she might be of service in bringing him up. The wench was overjoy'd at having this opportunity of discovering the love she bore to her mistress's memory; upon which, I took her in as a servant, and put the child into her hands. As I suppos'd all the danger was now over, I should have left her and the child in the country, and have return'd to *London*; but a letter I receiv'd from one of my relations, by which I was inform'd that *Oliver* was come to visit me, and made mighty enquiry where I was, oblig'd me to change my resolution. He was now rais'd to so much power, that I did not doubt, since he was capable of committing the worst crimes with impunity, but he would infallibly be my ruin, in case he set about it; and I was so well acquainted with his character, that I was certain he would attempt it, if he had the least suspicion of the protection I afforded to his son, and the great share I had in disconcerting all his measures. As this last reflection threw me into a dilemma, I possibly should have found it a difficult matter to fix upon any thing, had I not call'd to mind, that I my self was in possession of what would infallibly put an end to all my fears. My country house is situated after a very particular manner, being built on the borders of *Devonshire*, on that side where 'tis divided from *Somersetshire* by high, rocky mountains. At the bottom of them lies a little valley, which is part of my estate, whence several subterraneous passages reach to the very center of those mountains; and as the place was uninhabited, it being barren, 'twould be scarce possible to meet with a better asylum against violence and persecution. Accordingly I resolv'd to bring up poor little *Bridge*, in one of these caverns; thinking this would secure him from all the searches that might be made; and my self

from the artifices of *Oliver*, or the treachery of my servants. I did not suspect either Mrs. *Bridge's* maid or my own servant, as they had been faithful hitherto : I reveal'd my design to them only, when finding them inclin'd to second me, I order'd *James* (for that was my man's name) to carry into the most remote part of this solitude, all the furniture that might be necessary for making it tenantable. *James* was so industrious, that in five or six days he built a little room, which he furnish'd in an humble, but useful manner. I had the curiosity to visit it, and it pleased me so much, that, as I had not taken much pleasure in conversing with mankind, I almost took a resolution to sequester my self in it also, and take upon me the care of young *Bridge's* education. However, as it was not probable I could live there as unsuspected as wou'd be necessary for the safety both of the child and his governess, I sent them away in the night time to their little hovel, and bid *James* stay in the house, in order that he might visit them from time to time, and carry them necessaries. I was very easy in my mind after I had settled matters in this happy manner, and then set out for *London*.

Being sensible that *Oliver* was of a fiery and revengeful temper, I was persuaded, that he, at least by his agents and emissaries, would have a watchful eye over all my actions. *Molly Bridge's* death wou'd have eas'd me of all my fears, had I had to do with any other person but him. His hatred ought to have been buried with that unhappy woman, and his hypocrisy seem'd to have nothing to fear from her. But I knew him too well, to rest secure on those false appearances. I had studied him long before, and was sensible, that as he was incapable of being ever reconcil'd to those who had offended him; a person who had had the ill fortune to once oppose or displease him, was sure to be the everlasting object of his hatred. All his impulses were so many violent passions, the effect of which was so much the more dangerous, as he disguis'd them with the utmost art. I therefore was very careful of my behaviour, and affected even not to have heard of Mrs. *Bridge's* unhappy death. He look'd for an opportunity of seeing me, and having found more than one, I observ'd

observ'd that he studied my countenance and my eyes; however I was always on my guard both against his looks and insidious questions; and thought that the defence of innocence would allow me to employ dissimulation, or in other words, those very weapons he endeavour'd to turn against me.

Some years pass'd, when I imagined all his suspicions were remov'd. I used to go from time to time to my rural habitation in *Devonshire*, where 'twas with great pleasure I saw young *Bridge* grow in stature. Tho' his governess was not capable of giving him all those instructions which are proper to form the mind of a young man, she yet made him capable of receiving them from another hand, by teaching him to read and write very early. He became vastly fond of reading. The deep solitude he was in having given him a serious and close way of thinking; he made merely by the assistance of books, and his own reflections, a surprising progress in several parts of useful knowledge. He seem'd surpriz'd, as soon as reason began to dawn in him, to see himself confined to a frightful cave, far remov'd from the correspondence of other men. He had a confus'd idea of the things he had seen in his infancy; and knowing from books that the world was peopled with creatures like himself, he used often to ask his governess and me, why we made him spend his days in so odd a manner? I used to answer him, that we should not always immure him so; that he would thank us, when I inform'd him of our reasons for it, which I said were very just, and therefore he ought to comply with them for some time. The sweetness of temper that was natural to him, and the solitary life he led, made him patiently submit to this restraint. But now, when I thought him of an age to be taken from under a governess's direction; and judicious enough to conceal the manner in which he had been brought up, I resolv'd to send him to school, in order that he might be educated regularly. I sent him to *Eaton*, after having inculcated to him that he had several powerful enemies; and that if he had any regard to his own safety, he would never tell any person in the world of his having lived in the cave, it being as much as his life was worth. And indeed, it was impossible, in case so odd an incident was

told, but several reflections must be made upon it, as would infallibly cause the whole secret to be discover'd. And now *Oliver's* power increased every day, and his ambitious views began to disclose themselves. He grew daily more hypocritical; and though I was not certain that he had a design against my young pupil's life, yet as he had already acted so vile a part with regard to that unfortunate youth, I justly supposed he wou'd never do him any good.

Our intestine broils, and the beheading of king *Charles*, had now pav'd the way to *Oliver's* grandeur, who, tho' he had usurped the sovereign power, he still preserv'd his outward appearance of sanctity, and endeavour'd to make himself be consider'd as the reformer of the religion and manners of the people. I had flatter'd my self at first that the very reverse wou'd have happen'd; that is, as he had then fully gratified his ambitious views, he would have thrown off the mask, and show'd himself in the odious colours that were natural to him. I even hop'd that this change would have been advantageous to young *Bridge*; however I found the contrary, and that his abominable and uninterrupted hypocrisy, dash'd all my expectations; so that now I thought only of fixing this unhappy youth in some decent station of life, in order to acquit my self of what I believed I ow'd to the memory of his mother. After he had spent some years at *Eaton*, I took him from thence; and finding him of an age to govern himself, I told him whose son he was, and his several misfortunes to which he till then was a stranger. This produc'd an effect upon him quite different from what I expected. He first desired some time to reflect on what I had told him; and coming to me two days after, he begg'd me to relate to him once more the particular circumstances of his mother's death. As for my part, says he, after I had gratified him in that particular, I don't see any thing in what you now told me, that proves my father either wanted to kill me, or had any hand in my mother's death. The reason of his sending me to the hospital, was purely to secure his own reputation; and possibly he intended to take me out of it afterwards, and do something for me. With regard to my mother, 'tis not probable that he shar'd in the guilt of those

those two wretches whom he had set to watch her; or that he would have employ'd them had he thought them capable of perpetrating so villainous an action. I therefore, says he, can't think that my father hates me, or has any design upon my life. I'm resolv'd to go to him, and declare that I am his son. I'll promise not to discover my birth, in case he does not think proper to have me reveal it; but I can never be brought to believe, that he will be offended at my paying my respects to him, or that he can refuse to put me in some post, suitable to a person who has the honour of being so nearly related to him. In a word, *Bridge* was ambitious. The reflection of *Oliver's* being his father had blinded him; and his unexperience not suffering him to perceive the danger of it, he resolv'd to go to *London*, in spite of all the arguments I could employ to dissuade him from it. I set every engine at work for a week together to make him lay aside all thoughts of it; but his obstinacy made him look upon all my fears as unnecessary.

I pitied his fate, foreseeing all the misfortunes that would befall him, and burst into tears at his leaving me. I sent *James* along with him, and repeated to him at his going away, that he was going to run himself into danger against my inclination. I offer'd to give him my company, and would at least have procur'd him some considerable persons to introduce him to *Oliver*, who, very possibly, would have been ashamed to use his son ill, had any person been present at the interview. But young *Bridge* differ'd from me in opinion in this very particular; his hopes being chiefly grounded on the private manner in which he should address his father. He will certainly, says he, be affected with my presence, and immediately receive me with a paternal affection, when I shall have assur'd him that I am perfectly discreet, and he sees that he will run no hazard in being indulgent. In a word, *Bridge* left me, and I continued very uneasy for a week; but was much more so at the end of that time, for now *James* brought me news of his unhappy fate. Tho' the relation was made in very obscure terms, he yet let me into so much, as made it almost certain that *Bridge's* end was very near as melancholy as that of his mother. Scarce was he got to *London*, but he was impatient to make

make a visit to his father. He went, and desir'd at once to be admitted. *James* had follow'd him to the door; but he saw him come out of the apartment, surrounded with five or six soldiers, who carried him to one of the strongest goals in the city. 'Tis not known how he was us'd there, for *Oliver* has made himself so formidable to his creatures, that they dare not reveal any of his secrets. *James* had been several times at the prison gate, but was never allow'd to speak to, or know what was become of him. He flew to tell me this, which threw me into the deepest affliction, when I set out instantly for *London*, in order, if possible, to assist my late unhappy friend's son. I went immediately to the goal where he was confin'd; I spoke to the turnkeys whom I attempted to gain over by presents (not to give him his liberty, or me the satisfaction of seeing him;) but barely to be inform'd where he was, and the condition he was in. All this was to no purpose, and the only answer I was able to get out of those hard-hearted wretches, was, that they were not allow'd to reveal the *protector's* orders, nor what was become of their prisoner. I'm persuaded that a severe sentence pals'd upon unhappy *Bridge*. I am certain of it, from the knowledge I have of his father's savage and inflexible temper; such are the paths by which this tyrant goes to glory. After having shed the blood of his king to satisfy his ambition, he might well have spilt that of his son, to keep the people in the opinion of his continence and the sanctity of his manners.

Dread therefore, says *Mrs. Riding*, his cruelty and artifices, after having finish'd her relation. The only motive of my telling you this story, is, to shew by other dangers, that which you yourself are in. I see plainly, says she, thro' *Fairfax's* design, in mentioning *Molly Bridge* and her son to you as living, and telling you they had waited upon *Oliver* that morning. 'Twas undoubtedly to hear whether you had not been acquainted with their story, in order to impose on you the better. I in like manner guess, why *Oliver* (when he refus'd to own his son when you were first admitted;) went no farther than to command you, as you valu'd your life, not to give out that he was his child. Depend that he would never have let you gone unmolested out of his palace, had he thought

thought he might have seiz'd you privately. But fearing in all probability that the arresting a woman and a youth in that manner, would have discover'd what he is so desirous of concealing, he has taken a resolution to rid himself of you in such a manner as may best suit his purpose. Don't fancy that your meeting *Fairfax* a little after was owing to chance; 'tis manifest that *Oliver* order'd him to follow you, after having concerted before-hand what the former should say to you. Heaven undoubtedly directed your steps hither, purely that I might inform you what was so necessary for you to know. Make a proper advantage of these informations, and at the same time, take care that it does not turn to my prejudice.

So important a service merited our utmost thanks, and accordingly we express our gratitude to Mrs. *Riding* in the strongest terms possible. You, says my mother, are our guardian angel. I now behold the prodigious steepness of the precipice; we were on the brink, and I must confess that my imprudence had like to have thrown us down it. But now that your prudence has pointed out the danger to us, your friendship must preserve us from it, and we'll owe our lives to you. Good God! says she, oppress'd with a variety of fears, do I reap no other fruit than this, for having led a life of so much innocence for these fifteen years last past? But if my former guilt deserves to be punish'd with so much rigour, in what has my unhappy son offended? As I myself did not harbour one vile or vicious thought, I could scarce think it was possible for any man to be so wicked as my father was represented. I reflected seriously on what I had heard, and adding these informations to what had been told me before, I ask'd myself, why the love and practice of virtue were so strongly inculcated to us, since it is of so little advantage, and that the favours of fortune are indulg'd only to the guilty? at last, my mother having intreated Mrs. *Riding* to tell us what to do, that excellent friend told us plainly, that it would be dangerous for us either to accept or refuse my father's offers; that she believ'd the only way to secure us, would be to leave *England*, or to conceal ourselves in some very remote part of it; that either of these expedients would be attended with danger, since we might depend upon being watch'd very narrowly;

narrowly; however, that we must expect some relief from heaven, which never abandons the innocent intirely. I spoke. Madam, says I to Mrs. *Riding*, whither can we retire with greater safety than to that solitary grotto, where you was so generous as to bring up my brother? I have a great inclination to live in such a retirement. I'll spend my whole life in it; for if all men are like my father, there is no solitude how dismal soever, which I would not prefer to the correspondence of such abominable creatures. My mother was pleas'd with the hint, it being the shortest way for us to escape the greatest of all dangers. She propos'd it seriously to Mrs. *Riding*, who immediately agreed to it; and for fear lest delays should be of ill consequence, we resolv'd to set out a little after. Mrs. *Riding* advis'd us not to return to *Hammer-smith*, promising to take care of our goods, and to lodge them in safe hands. She order'd *James* to get a coach, which he did, and sent him down with us to *Devonshire*, where we arrived safe. *James* carried us immediately to the cave, unseen by any one. We entred it with a kind of horror; and indeed the situation of it was such, that no one could view it without being struck. But then, I was overjoy'd to find myself not only secur'd from my father's hatred, but the very sight of the rest of mankind; and I now began to consider them as so many enemies and persecutors. We appointed *James* the days when he should come and attend upon us, and bring us necessaries. He employ'd the first days in furnishing our room, which he did in a tolerable neat manner, and in procuring us all the conveniencies which his mistress's house could furnish. He convey'd the furniture in the night time, but brought us chiefly books and candles; for as our apartment was unenlightned by the sun, we were oblig'd to burn candle continually.

We are so happy, says I to my mother, in the midst of our misfortunes, that the earth opens its bosom to us, to screen us from the persecutions of mankind. She was more afflicted than I, and answer'd, Alas! when will it open itself, to receive me in my last asylum! Something is still wanting to complete the favour it now indulges us. The earth open'd its bosom to us; why, did it not shut that instant, and bury us at once?

I endeavour'd to comfort her. We are not, says I, to hate life, for this you yourself taught me, but the miseries it exposes us to. The lot of mankind would not be severe, did they but make a proper advantage of every thing that might contribute to their felicity.

They make themselves voluntarily wretched, by their mutual injustice, their jealousies, aversions, and the other irregular impulses of the soul. Were mankind not inflam'd with passions, the world would be happy. Why mayn't we then be so, as we meet with nothing here that opposes it; and since we may continually employ those simple and innocent methods which nature indulges us here, to make ourselves so? Is not the contemplation of the unalterable principles of truth and virtue; our own reflections, the pleasure of committing them to paper; and the communicating them to one another, a source of felicity, for ever within us; and independent both on mankind whose society we have abandon'd, and fortune, whose fickleness or whims we need not fear in this solitude? The gloominess of our habitation may contribute to the tranquillity of our minds, since our imaginations will not be disturbed by tumult and hurry; we shall not dread those involuntary emotions, which are excited by the presence of objects, since we see but very few things in our dark mansion; and may gain such an ascendant over our own minds, as not voluntarily to form any useless wishes. The bare consideration of these things, gives me an antepast of that happiness I hope to taste here. I am persuaded, dear mother, says I, that you will draw still greater consolation from your wisdom and virtue, as I am indebted to you for that small portion I possess of both, which, nevertheless will make solitude vastly agreeable to me.

My mother seem'd to listen to this discourse with pleasure, and told me, that she was overjoy'd to find me of the same turn of mind with herself, and answer so faithfully all her hopes: And indeed, I did but repeat what she had so often inculcated to me, when we liv'd in *Hammer-smith*; but then she said that she was to be consider'd in a different light from me. I, says she, think as you do, and have the same ideas with regard to wisdom and happiness; I view with the same eye the

ridiculous passions of mankind, and the obstacles which they themselves oppose to their own happiness. 'Tis they themselves occasion the perpetual tumults which ruffle the soul; nature did not make them to be unhappy, and they complain of her unjustly. Why don't they follow her innocent dictates? She would undoubtedly point out a plain and simple path, which they might follow with ease and pleasure, and never deviate from.

Nevertheless, it must be own'd, that if it be easy to lead a calm, unruffled life, by following the impulses of nature, 'tis when she has not been vitiated by the passions. This circumstance, says she, relates to me, and will plainly discover to you the difference there is between us.

You are young, and have been nurs'd in a deep solitude; your heart was never assail'd by any violent passion, and your imagination has never received any traces, that might make too deep an impression on your mind. Thus, as you still preserve the natural principles of innocence in all their purity, all your cravings are just, and you are not sensible to any thing internally, that clashes with them. Add to this the care I have taken to inspire you early with the most perfect maxims of virtue, and to strengthen nature by education. In case such a mind as yours should find it difficult to attain happiness and peace, they then indeed might be consider'd as mere ideal Beings.

But now observe how far I am from having such favourable dispositions within me. I was for several years a prey to a thousand violent passions; I was carried away with the stream, and followed the most pernicious maxims. 'Twas rather despair, than a prudent resolution which made me retire to *Hammer-smith*; and if I immediately after laid down the plan of a more regular life, I was not so much prompted to it from a natural inclination, as forc'd by a happy necessity. I consider'd, that as all my expectations with regard to the world were lost, I was bound to form other desires, and to seek elsewhere the pleasures it refus'd me. Heaven darted a ray of light into my soul, which discover'd to me the most secret recesses of my heart; I therein discover'd some traces of those blessings you enjoy, some remains of rectitude, and love
for

for truth and virtue ; but such weak, such disfigur'd remains, that when I compar'd what they were, with what they ought to have been ; I was deeply afflicted to think I had suffer'd those rich gifts which nature had indulg'd me, to be so much deprav'd and corrupted. I then saw clearly what I had lost, and resolv'd to repair it to the best of my power. But what an attempt was this ! and what pains and labour did I consider that such a task would cost me ! How many combats against a multitude of vicious inclinations, which a long oblivion of myself had suffer'd to spring up, and had infected every part of my soul with their destructive seed ! What a course of study ! how many reflections ! what care ! after so many efforts, incessantly renewed, and resolutely maintain'd, how many victories must be won to make the conquest compleat ! However, I flatter'd myself that I had obtain'd it. I had imbib'd philosophy enough, not only to comfort me for all my past afflictions ; but sufficient, as I fancied to furnish me with consolation for futurity. You know the happy life I led in *Hammer-smith* ; alas ! I was happy, had my felicity been lasting ; but I must confess that our misfortunes have something abated my constancy. I don't find that peace of soul which you seem to enjoy. My past actions are for ever present to my imagination ; and in case I should have strength to support the remembrance, as I have done for this fortnight, I am afraid 'twill fail me when I reflect on my present torments. Thus I justly wish to die ; not that I hate life, which is the gift of heaven ; but because I fear, that the numberless anxieties with which it will be attended, will render it insupportable.

I told my mother, that afflictions abated insensibly ; but that on the contrary, wisdom and virtue are perpetually increasing. Hence, methinks, says I, a wise and virtuous soul cannot long be unhappy. The soul has two resources which are infallible ; first from the nature of afflictions, which is always to grow weaker insensibly of themselves ; and secondly from that of the remedies of wisdom, whose strength and efficacy is continually increasing. Besides, if a son's tenderness and compassion, are capable of soothing a mother's grief, I may give you some little consolation. I have a father, but he is a very

ry cruel one. All the affection I ow'd him, is united to that I have for you; and as for your anguish, I shall tenderly sympathize with you in it.

Tho' my mother had naturally a great strength of mind, and I was comforting her continually, she now led a languishing and melancholy life. Mrs. *Riding* came on purpose into the country to see us, and finding her good friend very much chang'd, she desir'd her to leave the cave, and take the air a little abroad; but all her arguments could not prevail with her to do it. 'Tis indeed probable says she that I shall run no great risk in frequenting company, since we may suppose that *Oliver* has given over all search of me; but what motive can I have to return into the world? I cannot flatter my self with the hopes of enjoying any pleasure in it. I must be oblig'd to get fresh acquaintance, and lead a life I no ways love; or if I go into it to fly the commerce of mankind, I shall never do it so effectually as in this gloomy grott. Here only, says she, still speaking to Mrs. *Riding*, I enjoy the things I love, my son's company, my books, my reflections, and the pleasure of your conversation now and then. If I have any thing more to desire, fortune is too much my enemy to indulge it me. Let me therefore end my life here. I am already half buried, and therefore shall have less way to go to the grave. Mrs. *Riding* opposed her resolution, but to no purpose; and as I my self was well acquainted with her way of thinking, I did not therefore endeavour to divert her resolution, but contented my self with paying her, till she left the world, all those duties a child owes to a tender parent. She died two years after, and repeated her instructions to me as she lay on her death-bed; This, says she to me, a moment before she expir'd, is the only inheritance I am allow'd to leave you; but you'll be rich enough in case you never erase from your mind, the love for virtue, with which I have endeavour'd to inspire you. Don't regret the fortune which your birth seem'd to promise you; bewail only your father's cruelty, who deprives you of it unjustly. That circumstance which is his crime, has made us both happy; for I see by the tranquillity you discover that you are truly so; and notwithstanding that I have been in so desponding a condition our last misfortune, I can assure you, that there

is no place in which I could spend my days with greater satisfaction than in this hermitage. Adieu, says she, with a dying voice, I'll be buried in this place. Don't you leave it till your father is dead. She breath'd her last. As I had no one here with me but *James*, he help'd me to lay her in the grave, which was made in the very room where we always liv'd; and this I did that she might be still near me, and by that means influence, in some measure, all my thoughts and actions. This being done, I sent *James* to carry the melancholy news to Mrs. *Riding*, who was return'd to *London* about a fortnight before.

What resolution soever I might have shewn, when I lost my excellent mother, I yet was afterwards forced to give way to the tender impulses of nature; and no sooner was I alone, but I shed a flood of tears. However I did not reproach my self for it as a weakness. All those sensations, which are divided when a family is numerous, because we owe part of them to every relation in particular; those sensations, I say, I united in the person of my dear mother, who was to me as a whole family. Our affection was no less cemented by blood, than by the conformity of our desires and inclinations; and considering the light in which she taught me to view things, the life she gave me was not her most valuable gift. Philosophy therefore itself suggested to me reasons why I should bewail her. But after these first reflections, which had her only for their object, I began to consider the condition in which she now left me; tho' I did not shed tears when I reflected on my own unhappy lot, I yet was very much perplex'd. What pleasure soever I had hitherto tasted in my retirement, a kind of trembling which seiz'd me, when I call'd to my mind that I was alone, made me sensible that I ow'd my greatest satisfaction to my mother's company. I was oblig'd to continue in this solitude, were it but merely in compliance with her last request. Besides, where shou'd I go, as I was destitute of parents, relations and friends, Mrs. *Riding* excepted, who was the only one I had in the world. I never had spoke to any human creature, but she and my mother, except *James* and the maid who liv'd with us in *Hammerfinish*. But I neither grew weary of my recess, nor desired to quit it; but then, in order to make it agreeable, I shou'd have enjoy'd the company

company of some person in my mother's stead, who, like her, wou'd have sympathiz'd with me in my inclinations. I found it wou'd be impossible for me to live in it, in case I was denied this consolation. In thus examining my own heart, I found that my aversion to mankind was not so great as I imagin'd; or at least that I hated only their vices, since I was disposed to love any person who was as virtuously inclin'd as I was. I hence had a better opinion of my self; for I must confess, that in reflecting on my own thoughts, I had more than once been displeas'd at my self, for harbouring some ideas which are not altogether so consonant to that mildness, that humanity, which ought to be the fruit of true philosophy; several maxims whereof I had admir'd so much in the course of my studies. I was even terrified, for instance, to find I had hated my father to such a degree, as even to refuse any favours from him, in case he would have indulg'd me any. I began to be persuaded, that in case I hated him, 'twas more his fault than mine; and I found, by examining still farther into my own mind, that I could easily have prevail'd with my self to love him, had he been a man of honour and integrity. 'Tis impossible to express the satisfaction which this discovery gave me. No, says I, I am not a monster that abhors creatures like himself, I love mankind; I am equally sensible as they to the sweets of society; all I require in it is virtue and integrity; and I promise to bestow all my esteem and even tenderness, on those whom I shall find endued with those qualities. O heaven! says I, wilt thou not throw some virtuous, some faithful friend in my way, in whose bosom I may lodge all my secrets? I desire one only, but one, such methinks as thou hast made me; one who is tender, sincere, and generous; bless'd with discernment, and a taste for the most solid and sublime knowledge. In what part of the world soever I shall hear of such a man, I'll fly to him, the instant thou pointest him out to me.

I entertain'd my self for several days with these thoughts, when I began to consider that I was not born to be alone. However, I had no inclination to go among crouds, so far from it, that 'twas my utter aversion; and I am persuaded, that if at that time, when I had seen so few human creatures, I had happen'd to be carried suddenly into

into the midst of a multitude of people, I shou'd have fainted away with fright ; and indeed this had like to have happen'd to me in *London* streets, the only time I was ever in them with my mother. However, the reader will find, in the sequel, that I was not of a fearful nature ; and indeed a proof of it is my daring to live alone in so dreadful a cave. My mother had so little curiosity, and her indifference on that article gave me so little, that we never once thought of examining the numberless windings and turnings of our subterraneous habitation, but this I resolv'd to do one day as I was alone. This gloomy place is call'd *Rumney Hole* by the inhabitants who live in the places adjacent to it. 'Tis surrounded with wilds ; and the entrance to it is at the bottom of a valley, which is so narrow, that 'tis almost cover'd by a Stream that issues from the foot of the mountain just by the mouth of the cave. Its head had not yet been discover'd, tho' one may follow its course a considerable way under the mountain. The rock which forms a natural arch, is sometimes so near the ground, and the banks of the stream are so steep in those places, that one cannot go farther without danger. But this cave opens so spacious and lofty both to the right and left, that one cannot but admire the wonderful hand of nature in this place, who has made, but for what use one cannot tell, a great number of spacious apartments. However the grotto is not so wide in all places. Here we meet with a kind of fallons and closets ; some are as so many outlets to other apartments as large as the former ; and others have none at all. 'Twas one of the latter sort that *James* had fitted up for us, in one of the most retir'd corners of the cave ; so that as the outward air could not easily enter into it, we enjoy'd a kind of perpetual spring. One day as I was examining some deep places, which excited my curiosity more than the rest, I perceiv'd by the light of a candle which I held in my hand, letters cut in the rock. Curiosity incited me to read them, and they were as follows.

If chance should bring hither some unhappy wretch who wants an asylum ; let him be comforted when I assure him, that his torments can never equal mine, nor his tears those I shed incessantly : such is the will of heaven, that appointed

ted to each man his destiny, and whose judgments are unfathomable.

This melancholy inscription gave rise to several reflections. At first I was persuaded it was writ by *Bridge*, who had spent so many years in this gloomy place, and had just reason to complain in such a manner against fortune, as to imagine she had never treated any person more cruelly than himself. However, after calling to mind, that according to Mrs. *Riding's* account, he had not begun to know his misfortunes till he was return'd from *Eaton*; it was not probable he could have afflicted himself to such a degree, in an age when he was altogether ignorant of his miseries; or had he known them, was too young to be so strongly affected with them. I might naturally suppose that they were writ by some other person; for the cave in *Rumney Hole* is not unknown, though it lies in a desert place; some person might possibly have lived in it before we did; for unhappy persons have frequently a similitude of thought. I only found one difficulty, which was, that the letters seem'd to be lately engrav'd; and computing the time that *Bridge* and I had lived in this solitude, I could not, as the letters seem'd so fresh, suppose he had cut them. I went on reasoning in this manner, and look'd on all sides, to see whether I cou'd not find any other inscription which might give me some light into this. My thoughts were employ'd so much here, that I did not now take notice of the places I went thro', in order to find my way back; by which means, when I was for returning to my apartment, I knew not which way to turn me. I was now in the greatest perplexity, and immediately invoc'd heaven, which alone was able to lead me out of this labyrinth. I went first one way, then another; some had no outlet, when I was oblig'd to return back again; others did but encrease my anxiety, which, as they open'd several ways, I therefore did not know which to strike into. But the most melancholy circumstance, was, that my candle was almost burnt out; and I knew that shou'd it be extinguish'd, it would be impossible for me to find my way. I was sensible of the dreadful danger I was in, and must confess, that how little soever I might value life, it yet struck me prodigiously when I thought of my ending it in so deplorable a manner.

ner. At last, my candle went quite out; but what words could describe the agonies I was in! I lost all hopes of ever finding my way, which it would be impossible for me to do in the dark; besides, the danger I was now in bereaving me of motion, I was forced to stop, when I sat down upon the ground. All my reflections must undoubtedly be sad and grievous; but then I had none of those violent ones which assail persons in despair. I recover'd by little and little from the terrors which had seiz'd me; and calling up all those maxims of fortitude and resolution which philosophy suggests, I prepar'd my self for death with the utmost resignation. I spent near twenty-four hours in this manner, and what is most surprising, I slept sweetly a considerable part of the time. A power more real than fortune, was then employing itself in my preservation; 'twas he, undoubtedly, who thus lock'd up all my senses, in order to preserve me from becoming a prey to the most gloomy reflections, which possibly would have kill'd me. I awak'd, when I was in pretty near the same frame of mind as when I first fell asleep; that is, I was at first very much frightened, but afterwards I insensibly arm'd my breast with resolution against impending death. I am truly, says I, a child of the earth; I came from it, I have liv'd in it, and I am now going to die in it. May it then imprison me for ever! a confus'd noise which I heard on a sudden, put these reflections out of my mind. I listned to it, and as it was then but an-eccho, I knew not what to ascribe it to. But now the sound being more distinct, I fancied I heard some body walking. I got up, and without giving my self time to make any farther reflections, I ran as fast as my feet cou'd carry me; (and as tho' it had been by that impulse which makes all creatures endeavour at their own preservation) towards the place where I thought I heard the noise. Happily the ground was smooth, and my feet met with nothing to stop them. I held out my hands, to prevent my running my head against the rock. After having gone about an hundred steps, I fancied I saw a little light. The cave had several windings in this place, when I follow'd this ray of hope that seem'd to grow brighter, and which now gave so much light, that I cou'd see round me. I no longer heard the noise of feet, but as the light in-

increas'd, I did not doubt but that in advancing farther, I should find what I ow'd my life to; and indeed I was not mistaken, for I saw a man, a creature like myself. What joy must this be to an unhappy wretch, who thought of nothing but dying; and that too in a most fatal and terrible manner.

However, I was not yet quite out of my pain. This man who had stopt upon my advancing towards him, was as much frighten'd as I was glad. He held a lighted torch in his hand, but scarce had he discover'd me when he put it out; and probably supposing me a robber, or some monstrous inhabitant of the cave, he continued silent and motionless in the dark, to avoid the danger he imagin'd himself in. I was now seiz'd again with all my former terrors; and so unhappy an accident at the instant I thought my self out of danger, threw me into an inexpressible consternation. I must then, says I, perish. O heaven! thou abandonest me, for now I have no farther hopes. I was persuaded, that what I had just before seen was a mere illusion, a dream, the sport of some malicious spirit, purely to make my death still more grievous, by feeding me with the specious hopes of deliverance. I nevertheless advanc'd a few steps, when thinking my self near the place where I had perceiv'd the phantom which deluded me, I cry'd out with a most lamentable tone of voice; whosoever you are, whether a man charitable like myself, or some hideous demon; if you will not let me see you, at least indulge me the satisfaction of hearing you speak. Alas! I beg but one word of consolation.

I was scarce able to pronounce these words; for my running, and the fright I was in, had almost taken away my breath; I waited some moments for an answer, but receiv'd none. I then spoke again in a melancholy tone, If you are a man, why d'ye refuse to answer me? Can you be so hard-hearted as to let me perish in this dreadful place, if 'tis in your power to take me out of it? What d'ye fear from an unhappy wretch whose life is in your power, and who asks it of you as a favour? The person then answer'd in a soft voice, that in case I had no evil design, he would do me all the service that lay in his power. I guess'd that I was not above ten paces from the man who spoke to me. I went nearer to him, and in order to
excite

excite him still more not to abandon me. I told him in few words, how I came to lose myself, in this vast subterraneous place. Give me your hand, says he, we are not far from the mouth of it; you'll see light in a moment. I follow'd my kind deliverer, who indeed, brought me to it a little after, when, alas! I not long before thought I had lost it for ever.

I thank'd heaven which undoubtedly first wrought my deliverance, and then the instrument it was pleas'd to employ in my preservation. I thank'd him with so sincere and unaffected an air, as seem'd to surprize my unknown friend, when looking stedfastly upon me; in case, says he, you have no reasons which engage you to conceal your self from me; and what it was that brought you into this dreadful cave, I should be glad to have my curiosity gratified in that respect. I was at first in doubt what answer to make him, knowing, in general, that most men are perfidious, and that it was of the highest importance not to discover who I was. I could not conceive what that man could be whom I had met alone, with a torch in his hand, in the place where I liv'd, nor what design he was come upon. My surprize too was very great, when I perceived as he talk'd to me, that the mouth of the cave was very unlike that by which I first entred it; for instead of the deep and narrow valley, I now found myself on the side of a mountain cover'd with trees. Finding myself then in an unknown place, with a person who was equally unknown to me; the little correspondence I had then with the world, inspir'd me at first with doubts and fears. I only answer'd that I was an unhappy young man, whose birth and actions were not worthy any man's curiosity. I thank you, says I, from my soul for the service you have done me; and in return, wish you a better fate than mine. I know not whether these words, or the simplicity of my countenance and behaviour, gave him an idea of me, different from what I desir'd him to entertain; but taking me by the hand, he begg'd me, at least, to tell him where I liv'd and what I intended to do. His pressing me so much, threw me into some perplexity, upon which I began to survey him attentively. He was plainly clad, and his countenance was pale and dejected; but then a sweetness which appear'd in his eyes, gave me

me a great pleasure, and I found that my heart was naturally inclin'd to wish him well. You ask me, says I, who I am, and you desire to know my habitation; but let me first know who you are, and by what name I am to distinguish the curiosity you seem to have. Is it love or hatred? Are you one of those sincere and upright men, whose number is said to be so very small; or one of those perfidious wretches, whose only aim is to ruin innocence; wretches, whose malice I endeavour to shun? Tell me — If you are the man I wish you to be, I shall look upon your acquaintance as a favour from heaven, and will then open my heart to you without the least reserve. I will first inform you, that this cave is my only place of residence — He was silent for a moment or two, as tho' he were considering what answer to make. My expressions, and the manner in which I spoke, seem'd different from the vulgar way. He continued to gaze upon me, and not knowing what to think, he therefore was in doubt what to say. He afterwards told me, he was then in so great a dilemma, that he was upon the point of leaving me without saying a word more. But now he took as great a liking to me as I did to him, when he embrac'd me and said; you surely can never deceive since you abhor artifice and perfidy so much; come with me; I'll shew you my habitation, upon which he led me into the cave. I follow'd him thro' several dark windings, which at last brought me to a kind of room very like mine. Here, says he, is my house, or my grave, which you chuse to call it; now tell me whether it be like yours. I answer'd, that mine differ'd little from it, except that 'twas somewhat better furnish'd. Then, says he, there must be very little difference in our souls; for nothing but a great conformity in fortune could have prompted two persons at the same time, to devote themselves to so extraordinary a way of life. I am so much the more surpriz'd at it, says he, as you seem to be younger than I; and in all probability have not liv'd long enough to meet with much sorrow and anxiety. My life, says I, would have hitherto been calm and unruffled, had I felt no other pangs but my own; and my temper is such, that I could easily have pardon'd fortune for persecuting me; had not the sorrows of a mother, who was vastly dear to me, and the crimes of a father, who is ha-

ted

ted by all good men, thrown me into the deepest affliction. These are the reasons why I have buried myself for some years in this cave. I then did not make the least scruple to inform him who I was, and in what manner I had hitherto liv'd. I also told him that I had been lately so unhappy as to lose my mother; I related to him the commands she had laid upon me with her last breath, not to leave this retirement till my father was dead; the trouble it was to me to live in this solitary manner, and the satisfaction it would be to me to dwell in it with such a companion as himself in case I was not deceiv'd in the opinion I entertain'd of his integrity and virtue.

As I spoke from my heart, and my mind was full of these thoughts, I did not perceive that the tears gush'd from his eyes as I was telling him my story. Being very much surpriz'd to see him take on so, I ask'd him what could be the cause of it. Oh! says he to me with a sigh, what an abominable wretch is your father? Come says he, taking up the torch which lighted us; come, and I'll give you more instances of his goodness. You are his son; but since he has been no less cruel to you than he has been to us; and that what you have related, assures me of your sincerity, I'll now repay the confidence you have put in me. Heaven certainly sent you to comfort me. Possibly 'twill be some consolation for you to know, that there are men more unfortunate than yourself. Saying this, he took up the torch and walk'd before me, when I follow'd him about fifteen or twenty steps, into the more remote part of the cave. Being come to a narrow place, he unlock'd a little wooden door, when we came into an apartment, which like mine, was hewn in the rock, but much more regular; for being hung and handsomely furnish'd, it might have pass'd for a very magnificent apartment in any other place. My surprize was very much increas'd, when I saw a girl of nine or ten years of age, who was led by a kind of chamber-maid, or governess, come and embrace my guide. He shut the door very carefully, and taking me by the hand, led me towards a bed which stood at the other end of the room. My dear, says he, turning the curtains back, I have brought you a young man who will share with you in your griefs when you shall have related them to him; and will endeavour to comfort you,
by

by acquainting you with his own. He is *Oliver's* son; but don't, says he, let that name frighten you, for he has been as barbarously us'd by his father as we have; and has for some years been forc'd to live in our cave, where I had the good fortune to meet with him.

I suppos'd 'twas his wife he spoke to, who answer'd only by a sigh. We sat down, when he order'd the waiting-maid to give me something to eat, justly supposing I must be hungry, after having fasted four and twenty hours. He then desir'd me to relate to his wife my own and my mother's misfortunes. The lady listned to me with the deepest attention, but I found by her deep sighs, that her breast was very much tortur'd.

The gentleman beckon'd to me to follow him, when we left the room, and afterwards went out of the cave. We walk'd for some time without once opening our lips, in an open part of this desert mountain. 'Tis but just, says he, at last to me, that I inform you who I am; and return the confidence you've put in me, by telling me your misfortunes. You was born in affliction, and as you have always been in an unhappy condition, you cannot have a true idea of it. You pronounce the word *unhappiness*, without hardly knowing the signification of it; and I plainly perceive, by your happy temper, that even this cave, and the dreadful horrors of it, rather increase than lessen your tranquillity; but 'tis the very reverse with me. I was once the most happy man breathing, and 'tis by an unparallel'd adventure that I am now reduc'd to live in so gloomy a place. Every moment I spend in it, is to me a racking pain; as it increases the horror that is ever brooding over my soul. Prepare your breast to yield me the compassion which my anguish so justly merits. My story is short, but never sure was any one so mournful. These words, which were spoke with a most melancholy tone of voice, and the esteem I had already for him, put me into the frame of mind he wish'd I should hear him in, when he began his relation as follows.

My name is viscount *Axminster*. I was born in *England*, but my father having been made governor of *Florida* and *New-England* by queen *Elizabeth*, I cross'd the seas in my infancy, and liv'd several years in that part of *America*. I was brought up here in the same manner as I should have been

been in *Europe*. My father's mild administration, gain'd him the love of all the colony, and even of the savages, who also felt its happy influence. I also reap'd the benefit of it, by the love and esteem which every one discover'd, for me; insomuch that I reign'd, in some measure, over the place, so kind, so obedient were all the people to me. Of this I had a thousand testimonies on different occasions, but particularly in an attempt on which all my happiness depended. I had made a voyage to the island of *Cuba*, upon account of the trade which we carried on with the *Spaniards*; and had there seen the governor's daughter, call'd *Theresa d' Arpez*, whose beauty having inspir'd me with a violent passion, I on the other side, had the happiness of pleasing her. I was return'd from hence full of love, and determin'd to beg my father to let me return speedily to *Cuba*, in order to wait upon the governor, and to desire his daughter in marriage; and there's no doubt but he would have indulg'd her to my wishes, had not a war broke out between the *English* and *Spaniards*, which unhappily defeated all my measures. However, as nothing was capable of diminishing the passion I had for her, I resolv'd, like a hot-headed young man, to make even the war subservient to my desires. I was thoroughly persuaded of *Donna Theresa's* tenderness, and therefore did not doubt but I should engage her to leave her father and come along with me. The only difficulty, was, how to get at her, and carry her off. I reveal'd my passion and design to some young gentlemen of the best families in the colony, but they heard me with an indifference which surpriz'd me very much. I wonder'd what could make them so cold and indolent, in an affair which I had so much at heart; and it even troubled me so much that I could not forbear reproaching them in the sharpest manner. Some days after, 'twas found that the young men of the principal families, and all who were judg'd capable of undertaking a bold enterprize had fled, as it were by consent, and were gone no body knew whither. They were near 200. We afterwards heard, that having join'd themselves to a like number of savages, they had got to the neighbouring harbour; had seiz'd upon two *English* ships which lay in it, and were sail'd away. My father was prodigiously alarm'd when he

heard

heard this news, for the *Spaniards* had already committed some hostilities; and now they were gone, 'twas scarce possible for us to make a defence, and we were persuaded they wou'd never return again to the colony. We spent about two months in this anxiety, but happily for us, we continued unmolested by the *Spaniards*. In the mean time my father took all the care possible for our security. He ordered a little fort to be rais'd at the mouth of the river. I was superintending it with him, in order to hasten the work, when we spy'd two ships coming towards us with a very favourable wind. As we were too far from them to see what flag they carried, our fear was equal to the danger we were in. We took up arms, and all those who were capable of making the least defence, resolved to oppose the descent with the utmost vigour. The two captains of the ships which our young people had run away with were with us; and they first discover'd that 'twas their own vessels which were sailing towards the port. Though we were very joyful at this, it yet was dash'd with fear, as we were intirely ignorant of the design they came upon.

In fine, when they were advanced near enough to be seen distinctly, we saw their decks crouded with our friends and countrymen, who stretch'd out their hands to us in token of peace and friendship; a little after, when they came ashore, my father receiv'd them with a severe and discontented air, when the chief of them advanc'd towards him in a submissive manner, and ask'd pardon; confessing at the same time the rashness of their conduct, which, they said, cou'd not be justified but by the motives of it, *viz.* to do the governor's son a piece of service. In a word, they had attempted to carry off *Donna Theresa*, upon my acquainting them with my violent passion for her; had succeeded in their enterprize, and brought away that charming woman. I was in such transports of joy, at what I heard, that I fell at my father's feet, and conjur'd him to forget what was past, and suffer me to run to my felicity. Where is she? says I. My excellent friends, in what manner can I reward so signal a piece of service! They told me, that she was in one of the cabbins alone, and was vastly melancholy; they not having acquainted her whither she was to go, in
order

order that she might be agreeably surpriz'd when she found herself in my arms. How greatly soever I might rely on her affection, I yet was afraid that she would be offended at her having been carried off so suddenly; and consequently would look upon it as a want of love and esteem in me. For this reason I dreaded to come into her presence, and first made them tell me in what manner it had been done; in order that I might know whether they had acted any thing that could justly displease her. They told me, that they had carried her off without any violence, as she was walking with her father and a few ladies. Hearing this, I went aboard the ship, and surpriz'd her prodigiously by my presence. There's no doubt but her fears were entirely remov'd, when she saw a lover at her feet, whose tenderness and fidelity she had so often experienc'd; but as she thought the methods I had employ'd to get her, too rough and not very common; she receiv'd me at first with some coldness, and said, she did not imagine I should have employ'd strangers to carry her off. I cleared my self to her, by explaining the whole mystery of the adventure, and soon brought her to join with me in thanking heaven, for making us both thus happy in so unexpected a manner. I conducted her to shore. My father, who during this might possibly have been in doubt with himself how to behave towards us, was determin'd, the moment he saw us, to give me leave to marry her. For my sake he forgave the young gentlemen who had exerted themselves so much for my service; and every one being overjoy'd at my success, I was made happy a few days after, by the solemnization of our marriage.

My pleasure increased afterwards every day. I loved my amiable consort with the utmost tenderness, and had a daughter by her whom you just now saw in the cave. We spent several years happily in *Florida* till my father died, whom I possibly might have succeeded in his government, had I been inclin'd to stay any longer in *America*; but I had long before made a resolution to go for *Europe*, the first opportunity that should offer itself, which my wife was no less desirous of than my self. Accordingly I put all I was worth in the world on board a ship, and with my dear family, set sail for my native country. But do

men know what they desire, when they propose a satisfaction in what they make choice of? those very things which they think will best promote their happiness, plunges them often into misery. They quit a certain repose which they grow weary of through levity, and run after a shadow that leads them to destruction. 'Tis thus I my self contributed to my own ruin, when I thought to increase my felicity. I led a calm and easy life in *Florida*; I was esteem'd by my friends, and dear to my wife; what occasion was there for me to go to *England*, there to be oppress'd with shame and misery, out of which I have never been able to extricate my self?

I arriv'd in *London* about two years since, when I found the government chang'd, and *Oliver's* authority firmly establish'd. How much compassion soever I might have for the sad fate of our unhappy king, and the vile treatment I heard he met with, I yet thought my self oblig'd to follow the stream, and submit with the rest to his tyranny. The first thing I did was to lay out part of my fortune in purchasing some considerable Manors in this country; and this being done, I settled in *London*, where, without intermeddling with publick affairs, I confin'd my self to the acquaintance of a few persons, who had been my father's friends, and the company of my dear wife. We liv'd undisturb'd for fifteen months, but during this, villainy and fury were conspiring my ruin. *Aberdeen*, *Oliver's* favourite and confident, happened to see my wife at a publick shew; when burning with a brutal passion, he endeavour'd to get an opportunity of visiting her, and set every engine at work to seduce her. She acquainted me with it. Her love and her prudence prov'd sufficiently that her conduct was perfectly virtuous. But now *Aberdeen* growing flagrantly insolent, I thought proper to acquaint *Oliver* privately with it, and begg'd him to check his favourite's insolence. *Oliver* heard me with an affected astonishment, and answer'd, that as he knew *Aberdeen* to be a very discreet man, he could scarce believe him guilty of the villainy I charg'd him with; that possibly I might be too soon shock'd in affairs of this nature; that a man should not always judge from appearances, or yield too lightly to suspicions; and that he was almost sure I had either
been

been imposed upon by false reports, or was deluded by jealousy. I don't, says I to him with great warmth, tell you these things from hearsay, but from what I my self have seen with my own eyes. *Aberdeen* was so audacious as to come to my house, and even in the night time; I was at home, though he supposed me abroad; and had it not been out of respect to you, I should that instant have put it out of his power ever to repeat his insolence. I conjure your Highness, says I, to put a stop to it in case he ever re-assumes to act the same part, or else give me leave to punish him.

We were interrupted, and nothing came of my complaint; but in the evening *Aberdeen* came up to me as I was taking the air in a place of publick resort. My lord, says he to me, I know that you have made several complaints against me; possibly I may have given you some reason for it, but I'll never do any thing that can offend you more. I look upon wedlock as sacred; and I therefore wish that heaven may punish me, if I had the least design to injure you. I must confess that I love your lady: 'Tis either a madness or a disease; but I'll give you leave to punish me with your own hand, if ever you find I pretend to any thing farther than the innocent desire of seeing her. Don't refuse me this satisfaction, and indulge me your friendship. A compliment of so singular a nature, oblig'd me to reflect some time upon what answer I should make him. I was sensible, that a man might be inflam'd with a strong passion, and at the same time be virtuous enough to resist it; but then I could not naturally expect so much greatness of soul in an *Aberdeen*, that is, in a man who was a slave to a tyrant. Virtue is not acquir'd in a moment; and it must have taken deep root in the soul before it can produce such effects as may be infallibly depended upon. How shou'd *Aberdeen* be so much devoted to *Oliver*, were there not a perfect similitude in their inclinations? I could not rely upon either of them. However, as I was not willing to pass for a whimsical or jealous husband, I answer'd him in a civil manner, that I could not be offended at any person for esteeming my wife; but then that I thought him so reasonable, as to know that some bounds were to be set to an esteem of this kind. He appear'd satisfied, but how

was I surpriz'd to see him come to my house the very next day; however I us'd him very handsomely, when, after we had talk'd together a moment or two, he ask'd whether he might not have the honour to pay his respects to my wife. I did not deny him; but as I had told her the night before what had pass'd between us, she refus'd to appear, upon pretence that she was out of order. He left me with an air of dissatisfaction, which however did not prevent his returning some days after, and repeating his visit several times, tho' he always met with the same reception. At last, as this villain could no longer mask himself, he took a most horrid resolution, which brought him to a just death, and plung'd me into the depth of misery.

As my wife took a pleasure in publick shews, she us'd to be frequently a spectator on those occasions. She was one day gone to one of these with some ladies of her acquaintance, and I expected her return at the usual hour, when one of my servants came almost out of breath, and told me that my coach had been stopt in the street; that the traces had been cut, and his lady taken out by several men mask'd, who had immediately thrust her into another coach, and made off. I was in such a rage when this was told me, that I rush'd out of the house, but was met that instant by the ladies who had been along with my wife. They were in a hackney coach, not having an opportunity of returning in mine. The tears which stood in their eyes, confirm'd but too strongly the sad news my servant had brought me. Cruel women! says I to them, with an air of distraction, restore me my wife! I had entrusted you with her. Saying this, I would have left them that instant, but they stopt me, saying I should soon hear from her; and that whether so ever those ruffians might carry her, they would certainly be found out. And indeed they had had so much presence of mind, as to bid my coachman follow the coach in which his mistress was carried off; and this he did by getting upon one of the coach horses, whose traces, as I before observ'd, had been cut: So that the very expedient which those villains had taken for their own security, serv'd to hasten the discovery, and the punishment

of their crime. But then this was a feeble consolation, since they had time enough to perpetrate their villainy!

I came back into the house, in order to wait for the coachman's return, but in the mean time was tortur'd with a thousand tumultuous passions, and unable to utter a single word. He return'd about an hour after, and told us he could not learn the names of the ruffians; however, that having follow'd them about a mile out of town, they stopt in a solitary place, and went into a house, which he had taken very exact notice of. This gave me some hopes, and I easily suppos'd that no man but *Aberdeen* could be capable of committing so vile an action. I devoted him to all the furies in hell, and swore I would murder him tho' he should run for shelter to *Oliver's* arms. I immediately call'd all my friends together, when about a dozen of us, all of them of the highest quality, and private enemies to *Oliver* and his adherents, set out with our servants. 'Twas about ten a Clock when we got to the house to which my coachman directed us; when I desir'd eight of my friends to surround it, so that none might escape. We then broke open the door, and I went in the fourth, sword in hand, firmly resolv'd not to give quarter to any person. The first thing I saw was a servant who attempted to fly the moment he saw me, but I stopt him, and cried in a furious tone; Where is *Aberdeen* and lady *Axminster*? The fellow feign'd very cunningly to be surpriz'd, as though he had not known what I meant; but my coachman, who follow'd me, having assur'd me that he knew him to be one of the ravishers, I turn'd the point of my sword to his breast; and cry'd, Speak! or you are a dead man. Hearing this he trembled, and told me, that his master was above stairs with my wife. I ask'd him if they were alone; he answer'd, that they were in bed together. In bed together! says I. Revenge, revenge, my dear friends! Saying this I fell into a swoon. My friends supposing I had only fainted away, order'd my coachman to take care of me, and flew to the room where the guilty *Aberdeen* was. He had heard the noise, and being afraid, had barricaded the door; however, 'twas instantly forc'd open, tho' he did his utmost endeavours to keep them out. My friends did not kill him, but thought proper to leave me

the choice of the death he should die. I ran up stairs a moment after, for I recover'd presently from the swoon, and 'twas impossible but I must be more than ordinary furious. I found *Aberdeen* kneeling down, and begging for life in the most abject manner. I was going to stab him in every part of his body, when one of my friends kept back my arm, and said, that since his life was in my hands, it would be proper to ask him several questions before I dispatch'd him. I stopt. The confusion I was in took my speech from me, when I cast my eyes round to look for my wife, who was still in bed. My fury which had not vented it self on *Aberdeen*, was now directed wholly to her. I deceiv'd my friends, who had no manner of distrust of what I meditated, and gave her several wounds. This being done, she yet had so much strength left, as to hold me fast by the arm as I gave the fourth stab; and even to draw me on the bed, when with a faint voice she call'd me her dear, but barbarous husband. My friends came up, and forc'd my sword out of my hand; but my wife still held me fast by the arm, and reproach'd me in the most tender manner with my cruelty. I was in such distraction, that I did not at first hear what she said; but the repeated protestations of her innocence, and the complaints she vented of the cruel death I made her suffer, which yet she said she did freely, tho' it was so unjust; her languishing sighs, the tender name of husband, which she repeated a thousand times, at last pierc'd my ears, and soon found their way to my heart. I then open'd my eyes, like one who was come out of a dream, when I beheld my unhappy wife, bath'd in her blood, which gush'd out from every part: I saw her pale and expiring, and her eyes ready to close themselves for ever; and I the cause of all this dreadful calamity! I did not speak a single word, or breathe one sigh; for 'twas impossible, as so many racking thoughts rush'd on my soul in an instant, for any one of them to break into expressions. I turn'd to my friends: Come, says I to them, with an air of coldness, which surpriz'd them; make haste, if it be possible, before I die, to succour her, and clear up these dreadfully-dark circumstances which terrify me so much. Tell me, dear friends, says I, in a low voice, and staring wildly on them, whether you did

did not find her in bed with that villain? Alas! cries my agonizing wife, he forc'd me to it with a dagger. One of my friends said to *Aberdeen*, speak, perfidious villain! and let us into this whole scene of wickedness. The wretch, who was frightened at the sight of so many drawn swords, and the terrors of an impending death, said trembling, that he begg'd heaven, my self, and my wife, to forgive his crime; that indeed he had employ'd the strongest violence to force her to yield to his criminal desires; but that he probably might merit compassion, if I would but call to mind that he was young; had been precipitated by an unruly passion, and follow'd *Oliver's* advice. All the company shudder'd at the name.

My friends, whom I had desir'd to stay without, came into the house, when they found no one made any resistance; and having only seiz'd some of *Aberdeen's* servants, whom they order'd ours to guard, they were come up after us; so that all of them were present when *Oliver's* name was mention'd. There was not one of them but desir'd to hear *Aberdeen* explain himself farther, with regard to the great intimacy that was between him and *Oliver*. He then reveal'd to us his great injustice, his numberless crimes and iniquities, all which I omit as foreign to the present subject. With regard to my wife, he repeated that he should never have attempted to get any favours from her by violence, had he not been solicited to it by *Oliver*; that the tyrant, at the same time that he gave me this advice, assur'd him he had enjoy'd her more than once; but that besides the natural depravity of his mind, two reasons had prompted him to a design so fatal to my honour and repose; that he had been very much disgusted to find me, at my return from *Florida*, shun his presence, and refuse to increase the number of his flatterers; that he had been no less affronted afterwards to hear me complain in such resolute terms about the insult which was offer'd my wife; and believing therefore that I despis'd him, he had taken that opportunity to humble what he call'd my pride and haughtiness.

After my friends had thus got a full confession of *Oliver's* and *Aberdeen's* crimes, from the mouth of the latter, they ask'd me what they should do with him. Alas!

says I, you may revenge my cause as you shall think proper. But who among you will undertake to punish me? Am I less guilty than he is? He has dishonour'd my wife; and I, alas! have cruelly put her to death. We both of us deserve to die; I beg you to kill me. They endeavour'd to give me consolation, by representing that after the fatal violence which had been offer'd to my wife, I perhaps ought not to consider her death as the greatest misfortune that could befall me; that I ought to thank heaven for having discover'd her innocence to me; and be less afflicted at a separation, to which I must one day have been forc'd to submit, in what light soever I might consider my self; but which would be much more grievous, in case that dear object of my love and sorrow should not happen to die. Yes, says I to them, you tell me the light in which I am to consider my misfortune, but you must first endue me with strength sufficient to bear up against it. The most useful assistance you could lend me, would be to take away my life, at least return me my sword; I'll soon find the only remedy to all my pains. They had the cruel regard to remove every thing from my sight that might heighten my despair; and observing that the sight of *Aberdeen* fomented it, they consulted together in what manner they should rid themselves of him. but not one of them would undertake to kill him in cold blood. They debated whether it would not be better to let him die publickly by the hand of the executioner; but fearing lest *Oliver* should screen him from justice, they at last resolv'd to carry him down, naked as he was, into the court-yard, and order our servants to dispatch him before us.

In the mean time my wife's wounds had been dress'd; but as she had lost a great quantity of blood, and there was no sign of life in her, I suppos'd her to be dead. I was resolv'd to die also, and was considering how I might elude the vigilance of some of my friends, who watch'd me whilst the rest were punishing *Aberdeen*. But as I was revolving all the circumstances of my ill fate, I recollected that I should be but half reveng'd by *Aberdeen's* death, since *Oliver* was equally guilty. I contemplated with pleasure on this thought; and immediately resolv'd to employ my life, which I was now determin'd to lose

in.

in punishing the tyrant. I shall, says I, do my country service, by ridding it of a monster, who rules it with a rod of iron; I shall revenge my honour, the death of my sovereign, and that of my wife. All *England* will join with me in my quarrel; I'm sure of being applauded by all good men; in case I die in the attempt, I shall at least find a period to all my evils, which I now only wish to prolong, merely upon these hopes. This resolution, which I engag'd myself to execute by a thousand oaths, diffus'd in an instant such a tranquillity over my soul, as surpriz'd my friends. They enquir'd, but to no purpose, into the cause of this change; but I would not let them into my design; not only because I was afraid lest they should oppose it, but from a kind of Jealousy, which made me wish that no one might share with me in the fame and danger of so glorious an enterprize.

Aberdeen was kill'd by this time, when we resolv'd to leave this unhallowed place, and carry off my wife's body. My friends supposed as I did, that she was dead; and having done all they could to recover her, they at last perceiv'd that she breath'd, tho' very faintly. Upon this they redoubled their care, when she insensibly got a little strength, and was able to open her eyes and throw them round her. I was for drawing near the bed, but was prevented; not that my friends were afraid of my doing her any mischief, for now grief and pity work'd as strongly on my heart as fury had done before. Dear, unhappy wife, says I, you still breathe! you return back to life, only to feel all the horrors of your wretched fate! Good providence, who restorest her to my arms, by what name am I to call the present thou now makest me? My friends debated together upon this unexpected accident, which made it more difficult for us to get off; for my wife was too weak to be carried to *London*, or to bear the joulting of a coach. Happily we were just by the *Thames* side, when my lord *Terwill*, who was one of our associates, propos'd that we should carry her by water to *Kingston*, where he had a country house. As boats are very easily had upon the river, he immediately sent two of his servants to get one ready; and thinking it not safe to take watermen along with us, he offer'd to row with such of our companions as were willing to go along with him. Accordingly these ge-

nerous friends carried my wife in their arms to the river side, when three of them agreed to conduct her, with my lord *Terwill*, to *Kingston*. I saw them set out, intending to return to *London*, to carry my daughter out of it before night. In the morning I went back to *Aberdeen's* house, with the friends who stay'd behind, in order to see what might have been the consequences of this fatal adventure. 'Tis certain that we should have had nothing to fear under a good and upright administration: For *Aberdeen's* crime was of such a nature, that the injur'd person had a just right to punish it; but *Oliver's* conduct was not to be judg'd by the principles of equity. He was prodigiously fond of *Aberdeen*, and had been let into his black design, whence we could not doubt but he would endeavour to revenge his death; and that he would be so cunning in his hypocrisy, as to work his revenge under the colour of justice. 'Twould have griev'd me to the soul had the eleven noblemen who so kindly assisted me, brought themselves into any danger. Is there no possibility, says I, of concealing this action from the world? We are in a lone house, and 'tis plain *Aberdeen* had hir'd it, on purpose to put his execrable design in execution; not a soul but those in the house has seen us; his death must indeed be known, but who will be able to tell in what manner it happen'd, or who struck the blow? At least *Oliver* can suspect no one but me; and as for myself, I don't dread either his hatred or revenge. My anxiety is wholly for you my worthy friends, who have so generously expos'd yourselves to such dangers for my sake. They thank'd me for the regard I had for them; and tho' they were dispos'd to continue their service with the same vigour, they nevertheless approv'd of the measures I had intended to take for their safety. 'Twas not impossible to keep the whole a secret, they being pretty sure that their servants would be faithful; and the only difficulty was to prevent those of *Aberdeen* from betraying us. We had confin'd them together in a room, they being four in number, who had all assisted in forcing away my wife. They are guilty, says one of my friends; and as there's no country in the world where they would not be put to death, would it be unjust in us to punish them with our own hands? 'Twould be doing service to mankind

mankind to rid the world of four such villains. How barbarous soever this resolution might appear to me when it was first started, I nevertheless approv'd it, because 'twas on this that the safety of my friends depended. Accordingly these wretches had the same fate with their master. They being thus dispatch'd, we made our servants dig a large pit, and buried the five bodies in it; and having wash'd out every drop of blood we could meet with, we lock'd up all the doors of the house very carefully, and set out for *London*.

I immediately sent my daughter to *Kingston*, under the guard of a faithful servant. I also sent thither my money and jewels. As for my self, who was meditating upon things of the highest importance, I stay'd in *London*; and pretending to go into the country the next morning, I only chang'd my lodging, in order to secure my self from the search which I expected would be made after me. I spent the first days in enquiring what had been the consequence of *Aberdeen's* vanishing away so suddenly. *Oliver* was perhaps the only person that guess'd the fate which was really befallen him; however, he disguis'd his thoughts and suspicions in a politick manner which I had not foreseen. He seem'd to believe, as was the common report, that his favourite had either left the kingdom privately, or been murther'd by some secret enemy. I nevertheless heard, that he had been tampering with my servants, and had set every engine at work in order to know what was become of my wife. I spent a week without seeing one of my friends. I was firmly determin'd to murther the tyrant, and thought of nothing but how I might dispatch him. 'Twas no very easy matter to get access to him, and he had lately chang'd his conduct and behaviour. Instead of that popular air which he had assum'd during the first years of his administration, he was now gloomy, morose, and almost inaccessible. He even was suspicious of his own guards, and so great was his groveling timidity, that he always us'd to be shav'd by his own relations, not daring to trust any other person. I remembered how difficult a matter I had found it to get access, when I complain'd to him about *Aberdeen*; and was persuaded, that as he had suspected me to be guilty of his death, he would never suffer
me

me to approach his person ; and consequently that I must find out some extraordinary expedient to make my way to him. I had heard that he intended to spend part of the summer at *Windsor*. I therefore went thither, in hopes of meeting more easily with an opportunity of killing him there, than in *London*. *Oliver* arriv'd a little after me.

I lay very close, having only a faithful and resolute servant, to whom I had confided my design, and who was determined to hazard his life to serve me ; him I made use of to inform me of all my enemy's motions. I drew up several schemes, but could not put one of them in execution, because the suspicious tyrant was grown surprisingly fickle in his resolutions. The perpetual dread he was under, made him act quite differently at night, from what he had purpos'd in the morning ; probably in the view of discovering all the designs which he justly imagined were carrying on against his life. However, I was one day inform'd, that he was gone to hunt in the forest, upon which I got on horseback, put two pistols in my holsters, and rode in search of him. I avoided mixing with the sportsmen, and hovering continually about him, I at last saw him strike alone down by a long range of trees, in order to intercept a stag which the hunters were pursuing. I cross'd the way and came up with him. The horse he rode upon was as fleet as the wind. He had no pistols, so that I might very easily have at once put an end to his life and crimes ; but in this moment I so eagerly wish'd for, I did not foresee that generosity would prevail over my hatred ; for I was asham'd to murder in cold blood, an enemy who was unable to make any defence, or divide the danger with me. However, I took a pistol out, and stopt him, when he plainly perceiv'd that I had a design upon his life, which made him turn pale and tremble. Tyrant, says I to him, with a furious tone of voice, where are thy weapons ? Scarce was he able to answer me that he had none ; and that he thought me too generous to kill a man who was unable to make the least opposition ; when giving him one of my pistols, Now, says I, defend yourself ; and, if you can, take away my life, since you have robb'd me of my honour and repose. I struck my horse gently, in order to retire

retire a little way from him ; when he that instant clapping spurs to his horse, flew with prodigious speed, and, as he ran, let fall the pistol I had given him. I was so exasperated at his cowardly artifice, that I pursu'd, and fired at him ; but the fury I was in prevented my taking good aim. The report of the pistol brought some of the sportsmen up, for which reason I was forc'd to make off thro' the forest, and had the good fortune to get at a considerable distance, before the guards had orders to pursue me.

So great was my anguish at the ill success of my attempt, that I believe I should have kill'd myself, had not the thoughts of my wife and daughter prevail'd with me not to abandon life, in spite of the resolution I had made to put an end to it. Since their leaving me, my lord *Terwill* had often wrote to me about them. He acquainted me, that the surgeon was of opinion; the wounds which my wife had received were not mortal; but then, he said, that she had lost so much blood, that he believ'd it wou'd be impossible for her ever to recover; not to mention that the deep grief she was in, render'd the remedies which were applied ineffectual. He said she begg'd me to come to her, and see her breathe her last; since that my long absence, gave her but too great reason to think that I look'd upon her as guilty, and that therefore she was now become the object of my hate. I was prodigiously struck with this reproach; for heaven is my witness, that so far from loving her less, she had never been dearer to me, than after the cruel outrage she had suffer'd. *Aberdeen's* crime appear'd to me so great a mystery of horror, that I did all that lay in my power to suppress the thoughts of it; but then I was for ever reflecting with pleasure on my dear wife's innocence. I represented to myself her cries, and her tears; and with what bravery she had resisted an infamous ravisher, who had forc'd her either to gratify his brutal desires, or make choice of death. And I, in a barbarous transport had punish'd her for a crime which another had committed. What a reward was this, for her great virtue and the struggles she had made! No, says I to my self, I won't love her less upon that account. Her innocent charms have indeed been the prey to a perfidious adulterer, but then
he

he cou'd not either lessen or corrupt them. How unhappy would be the lot of a virtuous woman, did the opinion of her honour depend upon the violence of an abominable wretch, who, whenever he pleas'd, cou'd cover her with shame and infamy ! A distinction must be made between unhappiness and guilt. A husband of good sense will never punish any crimes in his wife, but such as result from a vicious inclination. My affection for my wife was so far from decreasing, that nothing but the most inveterate hatred to *Oliver*, could have kept me so long from seeing her ; or rather my hatred to that tyrant, was but an effect of my great love for her ; since there was nothing I so ardently desired as to revenge her. At my going out of the forest I made towards *Kingston*, and rid all the way on a full gallop. Being arriv'd, I went to my lord *Terwill*'s with great privacy ; for as *Oliver*'s hatred now no longer wanted a handle, I did not doubt but he'd order the strictest search to be made after me ; and I expected to be treated in the most cruel manner, in case I should be so unfortunate as to fall into his hands. Indeed my lord *Terwill* receiv'd advice from *London* the next day, that the tyrant returned to it instantly after ; that the terror with which he was seiz'd was so visible, that even his friends laugh'd at his cowardice ; that he had given orders I should be search'd after in all places ; and had even gone so far, as to mention the death I should suffer.

'Twas dark when I arriv'd at *Kingston*, so that I easily got over the bridge and through the town without being taken notice of. I came in privately to my lord *Terwill*'s, and happening luckily to find his lordship at home, I inform'd him how necessary it was for me to be conceal'd, even from his servants. He carried me to my wife's apartment. The effect which my presence produced on her, was so vastly melting, that I can never think of it without some emotion. She lifted up her hands and eyes to heaven. Do I then, says she, bedewing her face with her tears, behold him once more ? No ; he does not hate me, since he is so kind as to let me see him again. Alas ! says she, wherefore should you hate me ? I had undoubtedly offended heaven which has been thus cruel to me ; but you, whom I have always lov'd dearer than my self ; you, the joy of my heart, and my dear husband

how'

how have I incurred your hatred? I feel that death is going to lay his icy hand upon me, and I don't desire heaven to prolong my life; but if I must die without your love, I am then to bid adieu to all hopes of happiness in another life, for felicity can never begin by despair. She pronounc'd these words with so mournful a voice and air, that my lord *Terwill*, who also stood by her bed-side, and suppos'd, as she did, that the violence, which had been offer'd her, had turn'd my love to hatred; cou'd not forbear exclaiming against my cruelty and injustice. Why could not they both see to the bottom of my soul! Oh! with what pangs was it tortur'd! I fell upon my knees in silence, before the person that was dearer to me than life; and reclining my head on this bed of grief, I was for some time lost in the croud of reflections which my sorrows suggested. I rose up, but 'twas to groan aloud with as much violence as I had done in secret. Dreadful God! says I; how is it possible for man to respect thy decrees, when they seem to interfere with justice, and that he feels such fatal, such bloody effects from them! I broke into a thousand expressions equally injurious to the Deity; but the tenderness which was natural to me, abating insensibly the violence of my transports, my cheeks were soon bath'd in tears. I now did nothing but weep and sigh, and spent the whole night by my wife's bed-side, sometimes in bewailing her wretched fate and mine; and at other times in making the strongest protestations of loving her eternally; but at the same time was as deeply afflicted and as inconsolable as herself.

The unhappy posture of my affairs would not allow me to stay long in *Kingston*, where I every moment run the risk of being discover'd. My lord *Terwill* prest me, but to no purpose, to stay in his house, for fear I should expose my self to greater danger by going out. I had design'd to conceal myself in these parts; but tho' I had not yet thought of retiring into this cave, I knew that I might safely shelter myself in several places in my own estate, part of which consists of several barren mountains. I went thither travelling only in the night, in order to pitch upon the most secure retreat, and discover'd myself to none but the rector of a parish which belongs to me; a man of great integrity and good sense, whose advice

vice has since been of great service to me. 'Twas he who first told me of this deep solitude, and prompted me to go and live in it. He knew it better by tradition than experience. A little after we visited its several recesses, when I found so many commodious places, made as it were on purpose by the hand of nature, to serve as a last living refuge for a miserable wretch, that I immediately resolv'd to make choice of one of them for my habitation. The parson undertook to get it fitted up privately, and 'twas resolv'd that I in the mean time shou'd return to *Kingston*, in order to fetch my wife and daughter, whom I determin'd to carry into my recess. I desired the parson to get two of the grottos furnish'd; one of which is that I carried you into first, and the other that which lies further up, where you saw my wife and daughter. This is a double security to us. I live in the first, which is a sort of vanguard, where I superintend all I esteem valuable in the world. The parson was so assiduous in this affair that my apartments were tenantable in a few days; so that arriving with my little family whom I brought in a litter (observing always to travel in the night) I found the habitation prepared for our reception. We have liv'd above five months in it, and been visited hitherto only by two or three of my most faithful friends, who came purposely from *London* with my lord *Terwill*; in order to furnish me with many things I wanted, and to do me several friendly offices. We are attended upon by two affectionate servants; a woman who is always with my wife and daughter; and a man-servant who lives in my grotto, and goes every night to the parson, to fetch us necessaries. You will naturally suppose that our occupations are of a melancholy kind, and suitable to our condition and the place we inhabit. You saw my wife. She has not yet been able to recover her strength; and her constitution has been very much weaken'd by her wounds, and the great quantity of blood she lost. She is for ever pale and languishing, and her sorrows make her pine away sensibly, so that I am afraid I shall not enjoy her much longer. My daughter grows up amid her mother's incessant sighs and tears. My poor girl, whose birth, and, if a father may be allow'd to say it, whose numberless good qualities, seem'd to promise her happiness; was doom'd almost at her birth, to suffer all the rigours of fate.

As

As for myself, who perpetually mix with my own pangs, those of two persons who are so dear to me, I shall not pretend to tell you what torments I suffer. Heaven is witness to them, and knows how long they will last; and has undoubtedly been so gracious as to endue me with fortitude sufficient to resist their violence, since I have been able to bear up so long under them. However, I will be so ingenuous as to tell you, I have not always the resolution I affect to discover outwardly. I have a thousand times been torn to pieces by a most deep despair, and nothing less than a superior power, could have enabled me to oppose it's violence. I often read: Reading frequently softens the most violent sorrows I feel, and changes them into a gentle melancholy which makes me relish solitude. In those moments, whenever I set my foot out of the cave, every object has a gloomy aspect; so that my anguish seems to diffuse itself over all nature, and I fancy that every thing round sympathizes with me in my Afflictions. This sight gives rise to reflections that encrease my grief. I return to my living grave; ramble over its vast retreats; engrave my misfortunes on the hardest rocks, and water the letters with my tears. 'Tis surprising, since you've liv'd so long in this place, that you have not yet found any of those sad monuments. This is to me a delightful exercise, and my anguish seems to soften when I express it in this manner. I then return to my wife's apartment, where I comfort her and instruct my daughter; and wish she may inherit all her mother's virtues, but not meet with her ill fortune. Thus have I spent near six months in this desert. As the meeting you, says my lord *Axminster*, surpriz'd, and even put me into some fear at first; I now look upon it as a fresh testimony of the protection which heaven indulges me, who will not have me die here with grief, since it was so gracious, as to direct my steps to so worthy a man as you appear to be.

I thanked his lordship for the good opinion he entertain'd of me, and assur'd him I wou'd endeavour to preserve him in it. As for probity and integrity, those, says I, you shall always meet with in me; but I'm afraid that such a nobleman as you, who have been us'd to the politeness of courts, will not be able to relish my plain, and possibly

possibly my somewhat rustick carriage. Mind me, says I, with my usual bluntness; I've heard my mother say a thousand times, and have read in the greatest authors, that nothing can be more dangerous than a polite knave; because he is able to assume all the appearances of virtue, at the same time that he has not so much as one good quality. I am very far, says I, from entertaining this opinion of you; but in case you desire we should become friends, you must promise never to deceive me. He answer'd in the most courteous manner, that he promised never to impose upon me; and that I might easily judge, by the freedom with which he had open'd himself to me; that he had not only discover'd my frankness, but that 'twas the sole motive of his suing for my friendship. You then, says I, are just such a friend as I begg'd heaven to indulge me: His name be prais'd for it! my heart told me you were an upright man the instant I saw you. I in return promise, that you shall always find me faithful and sincere, and ready to serve you to the utmost of my power. He cou'd not forbear smiling at the candid and affectionate tone in which I pronounced those words; when embracing me tenderly, he assur'd me that I was also just such a man as he wished for, to love and esteem like a brother; that as 'twas probable our captivity would end at the same time, since it was owing to a like cause, he therefore wou'd have me blend, as it were, my fortune with his; when he promised to love me, and to do me all the service that lay in his power, with the same zeal that I had offered mine. Nothing in the world cou'd have given me so much pleasure, as the happiness I thought wou'd accrue to me from this promise. My joy was so natural and visible in my countenance, that it had the power of soothing his deep pangs; and he himself own'd to me, that his heart was greatly eased; for which, he said, he was wholly oblig'd to me. We continu'd our discourse, and the conversation increased our first warmth of esteem and mutual friendship, by the satisfaction I tasted when I found he lov'd learning; and by that, which he on the other side felt, when he perceiv'd I was more vers'd in the sciences, than people at my age generally are. Nevertheless he thought me older than I really was; the serious occupations in which

1

I had been employ'd, had given a solid turn to my features. He express'd his surprize to hear I was but sixteen, and was pleas'd to say, That I was perhaps a single instance of wisdom and maturity at such an age.

As it drew towards night, I hinted to him the difficulty I should have, to find out that part of the cave which answer'd to my dwelling. He desir'd me to stay with him till next morning; but the fear I was under of making *James* vastly uneasy, in case I should be absent two days together, made me insist upon returning the same evening. The viscount knew no more than myself in what part the little valley which belong'd to Mrs. *Riding* lay; moreover, as he had gone a great way into the cave, he happen'd to ask me, whether I could recollect some remarkable place, where he possibly might have been. I then mention'd the river to him, but he knew nothing of it. I recall'd to my memory the Inscription I had seen in the rock; and which I had not mention'd to him while he spoke, for fear of interrupting his story. I repeated part of it which I had got by heart; when telling me that he knew the way perfectly to that place, and I on the other side assuring him that I could easily find my way from thence to the grotto, he offer'd to conduct me to it that instant.

Accordingly he called his servant, whom I had not yet seen, and having order'd him to light up a great torch, and to walk before us, we struck into the windings of our gloomy habitation. We got in about half an hour's time to the inscription, and the viscount shew'd me several others in the way, which were equally affecting. When I knew where I was, I entreated him to return back, but he had the civility to conduct me to my apartment. I desir'd him, when we were come near it, to give me leave to go a little before him, in order to see whether any thing particular had happen'd in my absence. I found the door shut tho' I had left it open, and suppos'd *James* had done it; but how great was my surprize, just as I open'd it, to hear the voices of two persons who were talking together with heat. I listned, and found 'twas Mrs. *Riding* who was exclaiming against *James* for his negligence, to which she ascrib'd my destruction, looking upon me as lost. She was just come from

from *London*. I did not think proper to let her know I was so near her, till I had first acquainted my lord *Axminster* of it. Accordingly I went back to him, and he seem'd very unwilling to appear before a stranger: However, after I had let him into Mrs. *Riding*'s character, and told him that I ow'd my life to her, he consented to go into my grotto. We knock'd at the door, came in, and she was overjoy'd to see me. I then told her all that had happen'd, and my good fortune in meeting with the lord *Axminster*, who had sav'd my life, and had indulg'd me something more valuable, his friendship I mean. Mrs. *Riding* was very much surpriz'd to find a man of his quality in so deplorable a condition: She had heard the adventure which oblig'd him to conceal himself; but then she was persuad'd with *Oliver* and the rest of the kingdom, that he had cross'd the seas. This generous woman gave him such unaffected marks of respect, and compassion for his ill fortune, as gain'd his heart at once. He embrac'd me with tears in his eyes, and said, that he had gain'd as much as I had done by his saving my life; since with my friendship, he acquir'd that of so amiable a lady. He did not scruple to tell her, he also liv'd in the cave; he even mention'd his wife and daughter to her; and begg'd, in case she thought it could be done with secrecy enough, to come and divert sometimes with her conversation and presence, two unfortunate persons, who for six months had been denied all correspondence with the living.

Mrs. *Riding* was in the utmost astonishment, to hear that my lord *Axminster*, his lady and daughter, had spent six months in this dreadful retirement. Tho' this noble man had a considerable estate that join'd almost to hers, she yet never had seen him, because he generally resided in *London*. But her generosity, which inclin'd her to be a friend to all in distress, soon affected her strongly for the misfortunes of that unhappy family. She told the viscount that she was impatient to see his lady and daughter, and desir'd to have this satisfaction that very evening; but he entreated her to put off the visit till next night, in order that he might prepare them for it. As for myself, who was to live hereafter, in great familiarity with him,

I should have begg'd him to let me wait upon him back, had not Mrs. *Riding* hinted that she wanted to have a little private discourse with me; and desir'd me to lie at home that night, upon which my lord *Axminster* took his leave.

Being now alone with Mrs. *Riding*, we fell into one of those discourses in which there is more cordiality and tenderness than wit. I had not seen her since my mother's death, she having been detain'd in *London* by urgent business. This was the first time she came to the grave of her dear friend, to pay her the last duties of esteem and friendship. I before observ'd, that I had buried her in the middle of the room, and *James* had already shew'd it her. She took me by the hand, and carrying me up to it, this then, says she, is the place where you have thought fit to lay the remains of your unhappy mother; 'tis here that constancy, integrity, good nature; all the perfections of body, and virtues of the soul, are buried with that dear woman. The ground should here produce the sweetest flowers only, and exhale the most fragrant vapours. Heavens! says she, with her eyes still rais'd, thou surely must bestow the noblest rewards on virtue hereafter, since thou takest so little care of it here below! What other construction can we put upon thy justice? She now undoubtedly leads a life of greater felicity; thou crownest her in thy bosom; 'tis in that source of glory and felicity, that my dear friend at last tastes the sweets of an everlasting repose; after having been so long the object of mankind's malice, and the sport of thine and her enemies. May therefore her happiness be now the care of thy love, and the work of thy power. And you, says she, in directing herself to me; you who have survived her, perhaps to go through a longer series of misfortunes, what wishes shall my friendship form for your welfare? Shall I wish you affluence, which your mother's example and instructions have taught you to despise? And, indeed, this would ill answer her views and your own. What fate soever heaven may decree you, may you be as good as she! This is the sincere wish of my heart.

After

After these testimonies of her tenderness and love, Mrs. *Riding* sat down to discourse with me upon subjects of a less melancholy nature. She observ'd to me, that tho' her principal wish was that I might tread in my mother's steps, she yet was of opinion that I ought not absolutely to neglect the making my fortune; that as I was now my own master, I ought to lay down several wise maxims for my future behaviour; that indeed 'twould not be prudent for me to appear abroad while my father was living; tho', says she, 'tis not so dangerous now you are left alone, as when your mother was living; but then that I might be safe tho' I retired from my solitude; and that she had thought of an expedient, which she advis'd me to listen to, which was that I should leave the kingdom, and fly to *Charles II.* our lawful sovereign, and offer him my service: That by taking up arms for him, and sharing in his quarrel, heaven it self would give me an opportunity of revenging my father's cruelty; that the *English* would at last open their eyes, and return to their allegiance; that the usurpation must end one time or other, either by the overthrow or death of *Oliver*; that then it would be of the highest advantage to me, to have an opportunity of returning to *England* with the knowledge of my sovereign, and the merit of having engag'd in his cause; that she would undertake to equip me out, when I should make such a figure as would be no disgrace to his train; that it would be necessary for me to determine speedily, because of a rumour that a general peace would be proclaim'd all over *Europe*; and therefore she believ'd it would be best for me to wait upon his majesty, and offer him my service before the war was ended; that in case I relish'd her proposal, she would get every thing ready for my embarking before the week was out.

I was so far from being pleas'd with this proposal, that I thought it a dreadful one. This sudden transition from the solitude in which I had always liv'd, to a military and court life, rais'd such thoughts in me as almost made me tremble. I did not conceal my anxiety from Mrs. *Riding*. I may, says I to her, confess the truth to you without blushing, since you know so well the way in which I have been brought up. I have convers'd with hardly two men in my life. What an odd figure shall I make

make in an army or a court, since I'm so unus'd to both? 'Tis not that I find myself want either courage or resolution; but the life I have hitherto led, makes me altogether unfit for the commerce of the world. The conversation, says I, which I have to day had with my lord *Axminster*, has shewn me the ridiculoufness of my own carriage, by the vast difference there is between his and mine. Mrs. *Riding* smil'd to hear me say this, and answer'd, that indeed there was something wanting to give me the air of a gentleman; but that a little use would make me completely so. However, I could not promise to follow her scheme, without first taking some time to reflect on it, which I did all that night. My lord *Axminster* return'd to my grotto the next morning, and as I was not yet determin'd, his presence gave me the greatest pleasure. I discover'd the perplexity I was in, and begg'd him to tell me sincerely the opinion he had of my personal qualities, and my disposition with regard to a publick way of life. He thought this an odd question; but after laughing modestly at my simplicity; I should, says he, impose upon you, were I to assure you there was not still something wanting, in order for your appearing in the world with some distinction. The virtues you have studied, are very little regarded by those who don't possess them; and even those who do love them, are not pleas'd when they are savage and austere. They must be adapted to the weakness and depravity of mankind. You are, says he, naturally sweet-temper'd and humane; what I myself have seen of you plainly proves you to be so; but then you possibly express your integrity in too plain a manner. You have form'd a just idea of men, in supposing them in general wicked and deceitful; but then you ought to conceal this opinion in the most retir'd recesses of your heart, and use it only to regulate your actions by. He gave me an instance of this, from the manner in which I had desired his friendship the night before. You first, says he, discover'd a certain fear and distrust which were something shocking; when flying immediately to its opposite, you gave yourself up without reserve, upon the bare assurance which I gave you of my sincerity. There you was-guilty at one and the same time of a double excess. The former might have
disgusted

disgusted any person but me, and have occasion'd such an answer as would not have pleas'd you. By the second you ran the hazard of your life, by discovering too easily who you were. As I myself have added some experience to my natural sincerity; I immediately saw into your soul, and therefore did not scruple to open myself to you with the utmost freedom; especially after I had heard the relation of yours and your mother's misfortunes. But what I did with discernment, was done by you in a rash and imprudent manner. I embrac'd my good friend tenderly, and thank'd him for his very seasonable advice. How much more, says I, shall I want, before I shall be fitted for the society of mankind? And yet Mrs. *Riding* would have me go to King *Charles's* court. I then told him the discourse she had with me, and the proposal she made me. He was very much surpriz'd at it. The truth was, that the love she had for me, made her consider my defects in too favourable a light. This she herself confess'd to the viscount, when he, at my request, discours'd with her on that subject. And, indeed, I myself have often wonder'd, in recollecting my simplicity, and I may say the rusticity of my behaviour; that the gentlewoman above-mention'd, who as polite and witty as she was good-natur'd, should have pointed out to me a way of life, for which I was so unfit. Nor can I more easily comprehend, how it was possible for my mother, who had been brought up in courts, and wanted none of those qualities which render a woman amiable, since she had merited the love of a monarch; should have so far neglected so essential a part of education; but the strong passion she had for study, made her look with indifference upon every thing that was not relative to it. Probably she had flatter'd herself, that time and opportunities would insensibly teach me what she judg'd unnecessary for my infancy. All her care was to inspire me with the most solid principles of virtue, and the unalterable precepts of reason and wisdom. The reader will find in the sequel, that her pains were not altogether thrown away; at least if we may depend on the testimony of a great king, who afterwards honour'd me with the title of philosopher.

My lord *Axminster* having thus, like a true friend, confirm'd me in the diffidence I had of myself; I conjur'd him to continue his goodness, and to make all my errors subservient to my instruction, by reproving me for them. I am greatly mistaken, says I, if I am not endued with virtuous principles; all I wanted was a good friend to direct them. As to my outward behaviour, this I can form from a just pattern, I mean your's ———. His lordship promised to comply with my desires. I propos'd, in order that I might have the satisfaction of seeing him always, to permit me to leave my grot, and carry my furniture into his; which he consented to with joy. This was done that very afternoon, after *James* had brought me my meal as usual. The viscount at my desire took part of a frugal repast with me, and we afterwards waited for Mrs. *Riding*, who promis'd to return to the cave.

She came at midnight, which she always did in order to avoid the suspicion of her servants. We then set out towards my lady *Axminster's* apartment. In the way, I renewed the discourse I had had with her the night before; and desir'd the viscount to give us his thoughts of her proposal, which he did freely. She confess'd that she had not duly weigh'd the reasons which might prompt me not to go; and she was astonish'd at my lord *Axminster's* goodness, who condescended to act the part of a preceptor with regard to me. This generous friend, who was resolv'd to be useful to me in every respect, ask'd her, whether she cou'd procure us a horse, a pair of files, and several other polite instruments, whose uses he intended to teach me. She promis'd to get them, and accordingly we had them a few days after; so that by this nobleman's generosity, I was as well instructed, in the most dreary and dreadful solitude, as I cou'd have been in cities by the most eminent masters.

We got to my lady's chamber, who had been told that we were to visit her, and had been also let into Mrs. *Riding's* character. Very little ceremony was made, for virtuous hearts soon put a reciprocal confidence in one another, which grows up instantly into Friendship. My lady was indispos'd as usual; and as our conversation was tender and affectionate, 'twas at the same time melanco-

ly. 'Twas impossible for my lord to be so calm and easy in his dear consort's company as he sometimes was out of it; nor cou'd we see him griev'd, without being afflicted at it. He took Mrs. *Riding* aside; and, as he might easily perceive that she was a woman of good sense and experience, he ask'd her what she thought of his wife's health. She told him sincerely, that she was afraid her weakness wou'd be fatal; and that tho' she did not know the cause of her indisposition, she yet judg'd it mortal; but added, that a more commodious residence, or at least a more healthy air, might make her a little better; and at the same time offer'd my lord her house, and us'd the most pressing instances. He did not seem averse to the proposal; as 'twould be no difficult matter to carry her ladyship thither in a coach, and pretend she was a friend of Mrs. *Riding's*, who was come from *London*. The only difficulty was to get the afflicted lady's consent, who was so vastly fond of her husband, that she did not care to have him a moment out of her sight.

This the viscount knew very well, and he even was afraid of making her such a proposal, lest it should give her some uneasiness. However, he did do it; but then, what dread was he under lest it should give her pain! She at first answer'd no otherwise than by a flood of tears, with which she bedew'd his hand, that was clasp'd in her's. One would have thought that her grief could not vent itself any other way; but at last she broke out into the most tender complaints. Alas! says she, you have a design against my life, and I find you are weary of me. Heaven, says she, is going to call me to himself; why are you weary? But a few moments longer and you'll be rid of me for ever. We cou'd not forbear weeping to see her fast-flowing tears; and my lord, who was as much affected as she, and all of us together, was fix'd like a statue to see and hear her. Mrs. *Riding*, who was the innocent cause of this trouble and perplexity, begg'd her ladyship's pardon for it, and besought her to ascribe the warmth she had shown to the sincere desire of serving her.

This visit was nevertheless of more than one advantage. First, it was a fresh remedy to the viscount's melancholy, by Mrs. *Riding's* agreeable conversation; and gave his lady an opportunity of getting several assistances, she

could

could not so easily procure before. Mrs. *Riding* seldom let a night pass without visiting them in the same manner, or sending them whatever she thought might best contribute to their health and consolation. As for myself, whose friendship for my lord *Axminster* increas'd daily, I also receiv'd continually fresh testimonies of his goodness, so that we were inseparable. He was as assiduous as ever in instructing me; so that in a few months I made a greater progress than gentlemen commonly make in a year. I myself perceived a sensible difference in my air and carriage; and though study was always my darling employment, I nevertheless laid aside my books with pleasure to go to my new exercises. I learn'd to ride, and to fight with different weapons; I acquir'd a graceful presence; grew polite and obliging; and I found daily, that the most solid sciences, and even virtue itself, require some embellishment, when they are not heightened by a certain grace, and an air of politeness which only make them amiable and engaging.

A new revolution which happen'd in my mind, contributed very much to the success of my illustrious preceptor. This is a circumstance of my life I must explain with the utmost care; because, how trifling soever it may have been originally, it yet afterwards gave rise to events of so considerable a nature, that they compose the most affecting part of my story.

I liv'd in so familiar a manner with my lord *Axminster* and his lady, that I did not so much consider myself a stranger as their son. The days past, either in receiving my lord's instructions; in diverting my lady with some good book, or in giving her amiable daughter such a tincture of the sciences as was suitable to her sex and tender age. Her name was *Frances*; my lord used to call her his little *Fanny*. This young lady had a surprizing love for knowledge. She was but ten years of age; but nothing opens the mind so much as adversity. Her penetration was so great, that she at once enter'd into the sense of my instructions and the subjects she read; and committed nothing to memory, till after she had digested it by the most serious reflections, and wou'd not have refus'd to be instructed in any thing she did not understand. By this means, as all her ideas were clear and well connected; she thereby

attain'd a just turn of thinking, and a surprizing facility of expression. As I admired her natural talents, so I did my utmost to cultivate them. Nature had made her of a most amiable temper, and surprizingly grateful; and therefore she set the highest value on the care I took of her instruction. She express'd her gratitude every moment, by her innocent caresses, and her kind and tender thanks. I used to give her severall lessons a day; and tho' a girl of ten years of age, is, as it were, no longer a child, I used to fondle her, not thinking that it would be attended with any consequences. I wou'd frequently set her on my knee; embrace her with the most unapprehensive and ingenuous innocence; and this I did for a considerable time, without once considering what I was about. But in the mean time, a secret fire was lighted up in my veins; a fire I felt before I knew the nature of it. The first idea I had of it, was from a kind of trembling which seiz'd me whenever she appeared, and which was afterwards chang'd to a delightful sensation, when I set her upon my knee. I cou'd not resolve with myself to leave her when she was thus sitting in this tender posture. I used to bring her near my heart, naturally as it were, and without reflection; when methought it open'd itself to receive the charming creature, and clos'd mournfully always when she went away. When ever I used to make her read any thing before me, I insensibly lost the attention I used to give to books. I was lost in thought, out of which I wou'd recover, and not know what I was reflecting on. I used to catch myself, as it were, with my eyes gazing languishingly upon her, when I wou'd immediately cast 'em on the ground in a kind of confusion; and I afterwards used to ask myself with a sort of astonishment, what cou'd have occasion'd it. A little after, I cou'd not stir a step out of the cave, but her lov'd image was ever present to my imagination. I used to see her in my dreams; was full of her when I waked, and burned with impatience to return to her; and then I listen'd attentively to every thing she said. Her voice would excite the same emotion in me, and every thing she touch'd seem'd to have acquir'd a new quality. In a word, love has not one symptom, but it appear'd in me, before I discover'd that I was really the prey of that violent Distemper.

'Twas

'Twas not but I had read, as well as heard, that there was a passion which went by that name; that it was dangerous; and that a person is often attack'd by it without having foreseen it, or being able to guard against it; but as sensations are not represented by ideas, experience was necessary to me before I cou'd know them. This I acquir'd at a time when nothing could interfere more with my interest and repose.

I don't pretend to make a merit of my struggles and the strong resistance I made; but will confess naturally, that if love is a blemish to wisdom, I have undeservedly had the title of philosopher bestow'd upon me, and been reputed virtuous. That passion got possession of my heart by a kind of surprize, but I was not at all terrified at it. I was persuaded according to the principles of my mother's philosophy, that when the simple emotions of nature are uncorrupted by vicious habits, they can in no manner be criminal; and need not be repress'd; but only regulated by reason. So far therefore from reproaching my self with weakness, or being asham'd at my defeat; I confess I fancied my self happy in the change I felt. The reader need only consider the way in which I had been brought up. My whole life had been spent in solitude, and my heart had been so insensible to emotions, that I scarce perceiv'd I had any. Study has sweets, but then they are of a melancholy and uniform cast. I had even tasted the tenderesses of nature imperfectly, for my mother was philosophical even in her caresses and affection. I cou'd rank myself among the number of those unhappy children; whose parents had never afforded them one smile. Nothing therefore cou'd equal the thirst with which my heart imbib'd the first sensations of love. O God! says I, after some reflections which reveal'd to me the true state of my soul, I know not what lot thou intendest me; but what I now feel cannot either be the effect of thy hatred, or an evil augury; 'tis happiness itself which seems to diffuse itself on a sudden over my heart. How could I then be ignorant till now, that I was susceptible of so much felicity; and wherefore do mankind exclaim so much against nature? However, says I to myself, let me behave prudently in my passion. Love is vastly delightful; I have

the strongest proofs of it; 'tis an innocent passion, at least 'tis so in me, who never sought to give it birth; and have hitherto led so virtuous a life, that there is nothing in my heart which flow'd from a bad principle. But we are told that 'tis a dangerous passion, and has need of being restrain'd continually; that in case it is not curb'd after this manner, it lulls virtue to sleep insensibly, at the same time that there seems to be the utmost harmony between them; and at last betrays and ruins her. Let me therefore not abandon myself to it but with the utmost precaution. The first shall be, to govern it always with the strictest care, since 'tis so necessary. This, says I, will be very easy; for of what advantage would my mother's study and instruction be to me, if they did not enable me to have some command over myself? I shall incessantly find weapons wherewith to combat love, in my books, my reflections, and the rectitude of my soul. Study, if possible, shall make me wise, and love shall make me happy. Another caution I shall observe, which possibly may alone secure me from all distrusts, is to make an ingenuous confession of the state of my heart to lord *Axminster*. He is fond of his daughter, he loves me; he is experienc'd both in the world and in love; his counsels shall shape my conduct and the impulses of my heart.

Such were my first resolves. — I revolv'd 'em again in my mind after I had form'd them, and they appear'd to me prudent and virtuous; at least I was sure they were sincere. After this, I no longer dreaded my passion, and thereupon ran to my lady's chamber, in order to feast my eyes with the sight of the object I ador'd. I fancied, that after this examination of my thoughts, I shou'd not be in such perplexity upon her account, but should fondle her with greater liberty than ever. I came in---But tho' I now began to know by experience what a sensation of love was, I yet was ignorant of the odd effects of that passion. The open and familiar air with which I intended to address my amiable *Fanny*, abandoned me when I was come up to her, and that she darted her eyes upon me. I trembled and continued dumb; and was unable to get the better of the fear which now seiz'd me. I intended to fondle her as usual, but I was not bold enough to do it, and my arms refus'd to obey me. She perceiv'd by my eyes that I

was

was in confusion, when, possibly ascribing it to some uneasiness upon my spirits, she herself came to divert me by her caresses, but the moment her hand touch'd mine, my cheeks were instantly flush'd with an unusual red, as tho' it had been the involuntary effect of shame. — I then disengag'd myself from her with more respect and reserve than she had hitherto found in me, and this made her ask me the cause of that apparent coldness, which she indeed took for melancholy: but when she saw me as much embarrass'd in my answer as in my gestures, it surpriz'd her very much.

Greatly astonish'd at what had then happen'd to me, I resolv'd to go a little after, and walk alone at the mouth of the cave, in order to enquire into my own mind, and the reason of so great a revolution within me. Am I, says I to my self, already cur'd of love? Is this the passion I thought so ardent and tender, and whence I thought to taste so many sweets? So far, says I, from loving *Fanny*, I certainly hate her; for nothing but hatred could occasion those constraints, and the emotion I felt in her presence. I'm of a quite different nature from other men; I'm a monster, as I thought myself formerly; for 'tis not natural for a man thus to change his love instantly into hatred. I then began to recollect the idea I formerly had of my own character, and I complained much more of nature than of fortune; but after all my complaints, I did not yet find that I had less inclination to go to miss *Fanny*; so far from it, that my heart flew towards her; it accus'd me for having left her so abruptly, and discovering so little gratitude for the obliging uneasiness she seem'd to be under for fear I should be sick. I resolv'd suddenly to return to her chamber, to throw myself at her feet, and kiss them ten thousand times. I ran, without giving myself time to examine these new sensations, or asking myself why I was rather for throwing myself at her feet, than embracing her as usual; but spying the viscount, who was come from taking the air a little out of the cave, and returning into it, I was oblig'd to go to him,

This meeting with him did not give me any uneasiness, tho' it prevented me from following the dictates of my heart. The moment I saw him, I resolv'd to reveal to him the state of my heart as I had before propos'd. I

walk'd up, and desir'd him to take a turn with me; which he consented to. But as I was going to open my lips, my voice forsook me on a sudden, and I found myself almost as unable to speak, as when I was with my charming miss *Fanny*. My lord, fancying by my air that I had something to communicate to him, look'd upon me stedfastly, as though my silence had surpriz'd him. 'Twas impossible for me to forbear blushing; and not having boldness enough to speak, I breath'd some involuntary sighs which betray'd my uneasiness. His lordship ask'd me hastily what ail'd me — Nothing, says I, with a melancholy tone. He urg'd me to explain myself farther, but to no purpose. I then assum'd a more chearful air, but 'twas purely to make him believe, that I intended to talk only of indifferent matters. He return'd into the cave, and I staid a moment without, in order to question myself on this incident, the cause of which I knew not, nor did I even know what name to distinguish it by. Was ever any thing so unaccountable, says I? Wherefore did nature give me a tongue but to express myself? Who hindred me to open my mouth? Did I not beg my lord to stop, purposely to mention my love to him? At last, by examining all the recesses of my heart, methought I discover'd that 'twas bashfulness had kept me from speaking; and this circumstance gave me some light into the emotions I had felt when in miss *Fanny's* presence. Let me, says I, now have recourse to my maxim: If all the sensations I naturally feel are reasonable and virtuous, this too must arise from a just cause which I must endeavour to find out. I made a thousand reflections in searching for this cause; and my mind, at the same time that it boasted the utmost simplicity, did not, if I may be allow'd to say it, want penetration. I at last discover'd, that the modesty which seiz'd me when I attempted to explain myself to lord *Axminster*, was not only just; but the effect, tho' in a dark and confus'd manner, of a principle of reason and equity, which I ought to have follow'd also, had I before consider'd it more attentively. In a word, I was struck at the great disproportion there was between the viscount's fortune and mine. He was, by his birth and rank, infinitely superior to me. I should not have been his equal, had my mother

mother been lawfully married to *Oliver*; much less was I so, as she was but his mistress. 'Tis true, indeed, that we were associates in ill fortune; but the point which made the difference between us, was attach'd to our persons. 'Twas my gross credulity had impos'd upon me, by making me only consider his goodness and friendship, and not reflect on the inequality of our conditions. To the same cause I ascrib'd my bashfulness with regard to his daughter, that is, to a secret and natural awe which an exalted birth claims; and which I could not forbear shewing at the instant I was going to offend against it, by revealing my passion to her in an abrupt and gross manner. I possibly was mistaken with regard to her, or at least I ascrib'd my silence to part of the cause only, when I imputed it merely to the awe which the greatness of her birth had inspir'd; for there's no doubt but tenderness had a very great share in it. But tho' I was then able to argue justly on order and rank, I was so great a novice in love matters, as not to know that a real passion inspires a greater awe for a belov'd shepherdess, than nobleness of blood for the most august princess in the world.

This discovery occasion'd a great change in my former notions. It first made me doubt whether the passion I then felt was not repugnant to order, and consequently to virtue. Fixt as I was in my principles, I should infallibly have attempted to get the better of my passion, had I believ'd it would have been impossible for me to indulge it without guilt. But after a mature examination, I thought that as the rights and privileges of nature were superior to all others, they consequently ought to triumph over them all; that love is one of the most sacred, since it is, as it were, the soul of every thing that exists; and therefore, all that reason, or that order which mankind have establish'd among themselves could do on this occasion, was to forbid certain effects of it, but not condemn the principles on which it was grounded. On these foundations, I resolv'd not to oppose my inclinations for miss *Fanny*, but to make my passion subservient to my happiness; and at the same time made the strongest vow to heaven, never to act in any manner that was repugnant to order, or could make me criminal. I resolv'd to adhere stedfastly to these resolutions. I was too unskill'd

in the nature of the heart, to foresee the struggles which my constancy in observing them would one day cost me ; but my bare knowing my duty, was sufficient to determine me to follow it immediately.

The first effect of my resolves, was, to make me more reserv'd and circumspect in my behaviour, both towards my lord *Axminster* and his amiable daughter. According to the plan I had laid down, his lordship could never discover I had the least tenderness for her ; and I was not to reveal them to the dear creature herself any otherwise, than by my assiduity and services : services possibly more zealous than those which are offer'd by an indifferent heart ; but at the same time more disguis'd than those of a lover who has room to indulge his hopes. I condemn'd my tongue to an everlasting silence ; and what I had felt within me, made me believe it would be no difficult task for me to bridle it. I return'd to the cave after having fortified myself by these reasons, and immediately began the rigorous practice. I approach'd miss *Fanny* with less confusion than I had done an hour before, but with a more compos'd and serious air. I was no longer so exceedingly familiar with her, so that my caresses seem'd to have chang'd their nature no less than my thoughts, and that I could no longer look upon them as innocent. I grew more desirous of instructing her, but my assiduity in that affair could not betray the cause of it, because it was natural for my lord to consider it as an effect of my gratitude for the favours he had indulg'd me. However, as he had a great penetration, and that I on the other side was not cunning enough to assume that easy air, without which 'tis impossible to act a borrow'd part long ; the constraint I was under plainly shew'd, that I harbour'd something more than ordinary in my soul. He was urgent with me to reveal my thoughts to him ; he press'd me in so tender a manner, that he had like to have forc'd my secret from me more than once. However, I had so much strength of mind as to resist his solicitations. I observ'd the same conduct for almost a year together. I saw my dear *Fanny* continually ; I admir'd her charms, and devoted myself to the pleasure of loving her in secret ; and the only mark I gave her of my love, was, to dis-

continue

continue those which friendship prompted me to bestow.

But now the death of my lady verified Mrs. *Riding's* prediction. Heaven indulg'd her a favour in ending her sufferings; nor was it a less one to the viscount; for the perpetual anguish of a woman that was so dear to him, made life a burthen to him; and indeed, he hardly had a moment's ease. Nevertheless, he was as much afflicted for her loss, as if all his happiness had fled away with her; infomuch that he was a long time inconsolable; till at last, by the good offices of Mrs. *Riding*, miss *Fanny*, and my constant care to divert him, we insensibly sooth'd the agonies of his soul, and made him consent to live. Mrs. *Riding*, in order to his entire recovery, begg'd him to leave that gloomy habitation, where he spent so many melancholy days. She did not advise him to return to *London*, or to think of staying in *England*; for as *Oliver* had not stifled his resentment, the viscount was in as much danger as ever. That he stay'd in *England*, after his attacking *Oliver* in *Windsor* forest, was purely for his lady's sake, who was not in a condition to follow him; Mrs. *Riding* prest him to leave a place, which was as unsuitable to his mind as fortune. I shall, says that worthy friend, thereby lose what I hold most dear; but since 'tis for your's and Mr. *Cleveland's* advantage, I must submit. I must give your lordship the same advice I did to Mr. *Cleveland*: about a year ago, that is, to go for *France*, where 'tis assur'd king *Charles* is at present. His majesty will be very much pleas'd with two such illustrious servants, and you will meet at least with an agreeable asylum. My lord *Axminster* did not much relish this proposal at first; for the aversion he had to life made him wish to end it in the gloomy solitude, where the remains of his dear consort were deposited. As for myself, whose utmost desire was to enjoy my lord and his daughter's company, I did not value whither I went, so 'twas to follow those two persons who were so dear to me. I left his lordship to discourse upon this affair with Mrs. *Riding*, who, at last, won him over to her sentiments; but then, by an unexpected return, he prest her to leave *England* with us. He represented to her, that as she abhor'd *Oliver* and his tyranny so much, our unhappy country

country ought to be as indifferent to her, as it was to us. Go, says he, into *France*, and there wait till such time as heaven shall indulge our countrymen, a more just, and thereby a more happy government. Whatever fortune we meet with in that kingdom, you shall divide it with us. You shall be a mother to my daughter, and I shall always have the deepest sense of the inestimable benefits my unhappy family has receiv'd from your indulgence. I join'd with his lordship in his solicitations, when after having maturely weigh'd matters for some days, she agreed to accompany us. We now only prepar'd for our departure, and Mrs. *Riding* sent *James* to hire cabbins for us in the first ship that should sail for *France*. One happen'd to lie at *Topsham*, about two miles from *Exeter*. We applauded *James's* prudence in going directly to that little port, as we should thereby be the better secur'd against the search of *Oliver's* emissaries. My lord *Axminster* and Mrs. *Riding* sent their Jewels, &c. on board; and all things were so happily dispos'd, that we were ready to set out a few days after, when we got on board without the least obstacle. Thus was our resolution put in execution almost as soon as it had been concerted.

B O O K II.

T WAS with some regret that we abandon'd our dear cave; the mansion, indeed, of our sorrows; but at the same time the asylum of our misfortunes, and where we had liv'd in so much security. The viscount and I left two monuments in it, the remembrance of which would be as lasting as our lives; for he had buried his lady there, and I my mother. We did not leave this desert place without bedewing their graves with our tears; and recommending to the guardian angels, who had protect'd us so long in it, to watch over their remains, and keep them from being profan'd by the impious.

I again repeat it, notwithstanding the deep sense I had of the viscount's favours, which determin'd me absolutely to follow him whithersoever he shou'd go; and
notwithstanding

notwithstanding the violent passion I had for his daughter, which made the attending upon her so delightful, I yet could not bear up against the deep anguish which seiz'd me the day we left *Rumney-Hole*. I might naturally have supposed this to result from the impression which the thoughts of the new course of life I was going to lead had made upon me; but by examining more narrowly into the disposition of my mind, methought there seem'd to be something in this of a more serious turn than a mere chimera of my imagination. 'Twas not a superficial sorrow, which, in an instant, arises and dies away. I was oppress'd with grief, and look'd, with a deep sigh, on the calm abode I was going to quit, like a mariner who is oblig'd to leave the harbour in tempestuous weather, and therefore casts a wishful eye towards the shore, before he turns himself to the wide extended ocean, where perhaps he is to suffer shipwreck. My life had begun too unhappily, for me to hope that fortune would ever indulge me her smiles. My mother's example, and that of the viscount, which was still before my eyes, augur'd too fatally of my fate. In general, I had a thousand times more reason to fear mischance, than to hope any good. Whither am I going? In what view? On what hope? Such were the questions I was continually asking myself the day we set out, and could not give myself one satisfactory answer. I depended firmly on my lord *Axminster's* assistance, but then, were his hopes better ground'd than mine? The reader may guess that those reflections were not suggested by experience; they were the result of the solid turn of mind I had receiv'd from nature; and which made me at least argue on possibility, in those things which I did not know practically, because I had never convers'd with my fellow creatures. If 'tis you, O heaven, says I, after making these reflections, who thus makest me presage the troubles with which I am threatn'd; enforce, at least, thy dictates with thy succour; and do not expose me to evils which exceed the little strength thou hast endued me with. I know that reason and integrity are thy gift, and I hope to give thee a faithful account of them. If I have need of any thing farther, I must owe it to thee; and 'tis thee whom I implore to bestow it.

I was wholly fix'd in this meditation all the way I went to *Topsham*. A moment after our arrival we went on board and set sail. The vessel on which we embark'd belong'd to the city of *Nantz*, and was to put in at *Brest*, where we intended to land. The wind continued fair for a good part of the day, when it chopp'd about on a sudden, and blew so hard, that the sailors were afraid of a dreadful storm. Such was the first favour which fortune reserv'd for me. As the captain appear'd to be a very civil man, we did not scruple to acquaint him with my lord *Axminster's* quality; and his lordship receiv'd a thousand testimonies of respect and kindness upon that account, so that when he perceiv'd we were in some danger, he came and desir'd my lord and his company, to go to the safest part of the ship, where he himself plac'd us. We continu'd in it about two hours. The dreadful noise of the waves, and the tossing of the ship, gave us reason to believe that we were in the greatest danger. But the passion of love prevail'd in me over that of fear; for the only uneasiness I felt was lest some disaster should happen to miss *Fanny*, who was half dead with fright, nor was Mrs. *Riding* under less terrors. My lord endeavour'd to encourage them by his exhortations; and as for my own part, I was revolving the danger in my mind, and considering how I might best assist the object of my affections. As I was viewing the cabin we were in, I perceiv'd a long rope, which immediately recalled to my mind a story I had read, of a man who had sav'd his wife's life by such an instrument, when they were going to be shipwreck'd. I took it up carelessly, and put it into my pocket, when the captain came in a moment after, and told the viscount, with dread in his countenance, that we were all lost; that it would be impossible for the ship to bear up ten minutes longer against the storm, and therefore that we must either prepare to die, or think of defending our selves by some brave resolution. Mrs. *Riding* and miss *Fanny* fainted away at hearing this; when, says the captain, I have but one word more to say to you; one of my boats (and I have but another) are at yours and your family's service. My lieutenant shall go in her with you; she is already let down into the sea, so make haste and don't lose a moment. Immediately the viscount

viscount order'd his man and *James* to take up Mrs. *Riding*, who was very heavy, in their arms, and put her in the boat; and he himself was for taking up his daughter, but I had got her in my arms. For God's sake, says I, let me perish, so I do but save her. He endeavour'd, but to no purpose, to take her from me, when I flew upon deck, and sure nothing was ever lighter in my hands. Tho' the ship toss'd with so much violence, I nevertheless let her down safe in the boat. My lord came in a moment after, when we were eleven in company, viz. the lieutenant, two sailors, our own servants, and two women who attended upon miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding*. The impetuous waves drove us in a moment at a considerable distance from the ship. We had no other light than that of a candle which was put in a broken lanthorn. The wind rag'd with the utmost fury, so that we were cover'd every moment with the waves, which flew at a prodigious height above our heads, and then came tumbling upon us. I would not let miss *Fanny* go out of my arms, notwithstanding all my lord could do, but clasp'd her, as a tender mother does her best beloved babe. I now regarded neither respect or decorum, and could listen only to love. She was not yet recover'd from her swoon; or in case she reviv'd a moment, she immediately fainted away again, at the thoughts of the danger she was in. As the storm did not seem to abate, I resolv'd to employ the rope I had got, to the use I had intended it; and heaven, sure inspir'd me with that thought, for otherwise my amiable *Fanny* and my self had been lost. I tied her fast about the body with one end of the rope; put it round my own; and then fastned the other end to the boat; so that between the end of the rope which was fix'd to the boat, and that part which held me fast, there was about the length of five or six foot; and about as much between my dear *Fanny* and I. The reader will easily imagine why I manag'd the rope in this manner. Scarce had I tied my knots, and made them very tight, when a dreadful wave, by giving a violent shock to the boat, put out our candle. Mrs. *Riding*'s waiting maid flew towards me, in the utmost fright, when the tossing of the boat pushing her forward, she fell into the sea, and drew poor miss *Fanny* and I after her. Well fell in so suddenly,

denly, and 'twas so pitchy dark, that our companions did not miss us immediately, so that we took in large draughts of the salt water. The waiting woman went to the bottom: As for my self, I for some time lost my senses; but the continual tossing of the boat, to which I was tied fast, and its jirking me sometimes above the water, at every blast that made it go faster; these, I say, brought me at last to myself, I then open'd my eyes, but could not see any thing; and what is almost incredible, I found, that notwithstanding I was dragg'd into the sea; notwithstanding the violence of the waves and the loss of my senses, I yet still held my dear, dear *Fanny*, clasp'd in my arms, which I yet could scarce believe, and could not be persuaded of it, till several circumstances proved it to be so. I now collected all my strength of body and mind, in order to resist the waves, whose impetuosity increas'd. Sometimes I found myself upon the surface of the water, and suspended, as it were, by the rope, between the boat and the sea; then I had an opportunity of taking breath, and would raise miss *Fanny* up, as well as I could, in order that she might share the blessing with me. The next moment, I was buried as it were under a mountain of waves, which roll'd over me; and I was forc'd, notwithstanding all my struggle, to drink large quantities of the brine. I endeavour'd to call aloud, in order that those in the boat might hear me; but the waves made so prodigious a noise, that a thunderclap would hardly have been heard. It would have been impossible for me to have resisted, or the rope not to break, had the storm continued as violent some time longer; but the wind fell about day break, and the waves grew still insensibly.

We were absolutely given over for lost. My lord *Arminster* was inconsolable to think his daughter was drown'd; and so far from rejoicing that the danger was over, he begg'd heaven to bury him in a watry grave also. As the light increas'd, he threw his eyes all over the sea, in the dismal hopes of, at least, spying our bodies floating on the water. Notwithstanding the deplorable condition I was in, I yet could see him standing upright in the boat, and looking about for us. I endeavour'd to call out, but my voice was gone. Besides, the water

was

was so thick, and mix'd with so much sand, that tho' he had imagin'd we were near him, and ready for assistance; he yet could hardly have perceiv'd us, till such times as the shades were entirely dispell'd. I thought several times of holding out my hands. The lieutenant was the first that spy'd me; when immediately stooping, in hopes of reaching me with his hand, he was surpriz'd to see a cord stretch'd out, which seem'd to have something at the end of it. He then drew it, and having brought me, with very little difficulty, near the boat, he soon took me and my dear charge in. This was done so instantaneously, that my lord *Axminster*, whose back was turn'd to us, and was viewing the sea on the other side, had not time to see what was done. The lieutenant cry'd out, my lord! Heaven restores you your daughter. Words can never express my lord *Axminster's* surprize; he did not know whether he ought to believe his eyes, nor how to explain such a miracle. However, as he was not sure that she was alive, he did not yet dare to abandon himself to the transports of joy. He was at first for taking her in his arms; and tho' I lay along in the boat, I yet clasp'd her still fast in my arms. He had a very hard matter to loose her from me; for as all my spirits were hurried to those parts of the body which held her, the nerves had contracted such a stiffness, that they were almost inflexible for some time. Miss *Fanny* was completely in a swoon; I indeed still had my senses a little about me, when I was first taken into the ship, but I soon lost them. However we were both reviv'd in a much shorter time than one would have imagin'd, when I open'd my eyes, and the first thing I then desir'd to know, was whether miss *Fanny* was living or dead.

My lord stood by me when I ask'd the question; for his friendship made him divide his care equally between his daughter and me. He told me that she had discover'd some symptoms of life, and hop'd she would do well. She indeed reviv'd by little and little, after she had been made to throw up the salt water she had swallow'd. The sea was now so smooth, that we were no longer in danger; and the sun being upon the sky, we discover'd the coast of *France* much nearer to us than the lieutenant had imagin'd. He then order'd the sailors to row as fast as they could.

could to the land that lay nearest us. Being very well acquainted with these seas, he knew we were not far from the port of *Fescamp* in *Normandy*, upon which he order'd our men to make for that place.

We soon got sight of the steeples of the town, but unhappily the tide was beginning to ebb. As the river was very narrow, and the current very rapid, we run the hazard of being kept four or five hours longer out at sea; a misfortune which gave my lord *Axminster* the utmost pain, not so much thro' fear of meeting with fresh dangers; but because he was unprovided of every thing that might contribute to the recovery of his daughter. Whilst he was encouraging the sailors to row fast, in order to conquer the violence of the stream; we discover'd a little vessel coming out of the river, which seem'd to be making towards us as fast as possible. She advanc'd with so much speed, that she was immediately up with us. At her approach, we fancied we saw our captain in her, and indeed 'twas he himself, who was got aboard another vessel. He told us, that he saw his own sink to rights, when getting into the long-boat with the eight sailors who were in the vessel with him, he had been carried to *Fescamp* by the same wind which had blown him thither. His generosity and great regard for my lord *Axminster*, had engag'd him to go aboard the first ship that came in his way; and to come and see whether we were still in a condition to receive any assistance from him. We got on board of him, and landed a little after.

We shed tears of joy to think we had again recover'd land, which we before had so much despair'd of. Miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding* were but half recover'd from their fright and weakness, so that they were carried in chairs to the inn. I had strength enough to go thither on foot; but going to bed a little after I came thither, it was impossible for me to get out of it for a fortnight. The two ladies kept theirs as long. At last, having, by the goodness of providence, recover'd our strength, we began to discourse on the state of our affairs, and the fortune we were to expect. We had not only suffer'd by the fright, but were almost as great losers as the captain, who had lost half of what he was worth in the world by the shipwreck. Among the several valuable things the viscount

count and Mrs. *Riding* had brought aboard with them, they had sav'd only their ready money and some jewels, part of which they had had the foresight to put into their pockets at the beginning of the storm, and to give the rest to their servants. We had neither moveables, cloaths or linnen. The viscount was of opinion that we should go immediately to *Rouen*, there to equip ourselves, and enquire where king *Charles* was at that time. Accordingly we set out for that city, where being arriv'd, we met with a great number of *English* men, who had left their native country with the king, and waited with the utmost impatience for his restoration. These told us whatever we desir'd to know with regard to the figure his majesty then made, and consequently what we were to expect from him. That unhappy monarch had very little for himself, and we were told that he had hardly as many attendants as an ordinary gentleman; that indeed he had more when he was in *Paris*, or at the neighbouring courts; but that in his journies from one place to another, to sue for succour of different princes, he seldom was attended by more than two or three servants; that the little money he had, oblig'd him to make this mean figure; that if we had any to offer his majesty, or were willing to follow him at our own expence, he possibly would be very glad to see us; but that if we design'd to subsist upon his liberality, they advis'd us to lay aside the thoughts of a long journey, as it would be entirely fruitless. They told us farther, that they believ'd he was gone towards the frontiers of *Spain*; where a treaty of peace was to be negotiated between Cardinal *Mazarine* and *Don Lewis de Haro*; that we had two hundred leagues to go at least; and that 'twas our business to consider whether we were in a condition to undertake such a journey, upon such slender hopes.

My lord *Axminster* had not discover'd himself to those who gave him this advice, no otherwise than as an *English* gentleman that had been banish'd his country for adhering to the king. He thank'd them, and explain'd himself no farther; but this, so far from damping his design, made him on the contrary think, that if there were, for a nobleman like himself, any moments more favourable than the rest, to insinuate himself into his sovereign's

vereign's friendship; he could not wish for a happier conjunction of circumstances than those which presented themselves. Notwithstanding the great loss he had sustain'd by the shipwreck, he had still a large sum of money left; and then he expected very considerable remittances from my lord *Terwill*, to whom he had writ, before we set sail; and desir'd him to take care of his affairs as he had done hitherto. How was it possible for him to spend his wealth more gloriously than in his sovereign's service; I even perceiv'd that this reflection gave him an air of satisfaction, I had never seen till now. He order'd our cloaths, which he had already bespoke, and a coach and saddle horses to be got ready with all possible dispatch. His design was to go through *France*, rather than by sea; the latter was the shortest, but miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding* did not care to expose themselves so soon to dangers they had but just before escap'd.

Whilst the viscount was busied in *Roan* in preparing his equipage, I was not idle. The walking up and down a great city, and mixing with so many people, was so new to me, that I let few days pass without giving myself this diversion, which, at the same time that it gratified my curiosity, contributed to my instruction. I talk'd *French* pretty fluently, having learnt it from my infancy. The first use I made of it out of the viscount's presence, was among some shop-keepers, to whom I got myself conducted, in order to purchase several things I had occasion for. I knew, in general, that there were a great number of these officious persons in cities, who collected great quantities of all those things which mankind use out of necessity, or to feed their luxury; and that those men were always ready to distribute them for money, whereby they got a considerable profit, which I thought but just. I admir'd as I came into a famous toyshop, the order and variety of trinkets of all kinds dispers'd up and down it. As I refer'd all things to my principles of generosity and justice, I could not but have some respect for the master of the shop, when I consider'd how great a friend he was to society, since he took so much pains to assist all who had recourse to him. How, says I to myself, shall I repay such services? My admiration still increas'd, when I observ'd the kind eagerness with which

he

he offer'd me every thing in his shop; and in how polite a manner he presented me whatever I might have occasion for; so that one wou'd have thought he divin'd my wants and inclinations. Cases of instruments, knives, boxes of all sorts; a thousand pretty knick-nacks, the bare sight of which pleas'd me very much. I receiv'd them from his hands as he offer'd them; ask'd him their uses, which he explain'd to me immediately with a great volubility of tongue; and laid them down by me while he was reaching more. In fine, as I was not weary either of seeing or hearing him talk, he ask'd me if I pleas'd to take all the things in his shop. I threw my eyes round again; saw a great quantity, and consider'd with myself whether I shou'd take so many things, which were more for beauty than use. At last, I reflected it would be rude to refuse what was so kindly offer'd me. His generosity was so visible in his eyes, and lips, that I was even afraid he wou'd have forc'd me to accept of the trinkets *gratis*, and purely out of kindness, upon which I instantly told him, that I accepted of all, but then that 'twas but just he should receive a consideration for them. As I am an honest man, says he, the lowest price is ten pistoles; I should be afraid heaven would punish me, were I to impose upon a young gentleman, especially a foreigner. This made me again admire his uprightness, when giving him the money he ask'd, I left him with a thousand testimonies of a sincere friendship. *James*, who attended upon me, took up all the trinkets. I know not whether 'twas out of respect, or from some other motive, that he disguised his sentiments; but having observ'd to him as we were coming back, that men had more probity than one wou'd at first imagine; and that I myself had then found an instance of it; the only answer he made was, that 'twas sometimes met with, and even among trades people.

I found my lord *Axminster* and Mrs. *Riding* at home at my return, when I presently showed them the things I had bought, and told them what I thought of the civil shopkeeper to whom my good fortune had directed me. I prais'd him in such unaffected terms, that they look'd at one another and smil'd, being as much surpriz'd at my discourse as they were at the multitude of trifles I shew'd them.

them. The viscount ask'd, what they cost me? I answered ten pistoles, but he would scarce believe me. I assured him that they might be worth more, but that they certainly were not of less value, since the person who sold them me, had assured me so on his word and honour. However it was so plain they were not worth a third part of that sum, that my lord, who cou'd not but know the amount of my purse, since he himself had given it me, desired me to let him see what money I had left. Possibly, says he to me, you forgot the value of the coin, tho' I taught it you before you went out. You fancy only you've paid more than you have done; upon this counting over my money, he found that the toyman had taken fifteen pistoles instead of ten, whence he took occasion, not to reproach me for buying those trifles, which he knew I despis'd as much as he did; but to instruct me in a thousand particulars which are not learnt in books.— I could hardly believe I had been so grossly imposed upon, when, says his lordship, don't blush at it; your ignorance is in one sense less shameful, with regard to you, than with respect to those who may deceive you; because you don't mistrust, and have not yet had an opportunity of knowing men. 'Tis the unhappiness, says he with great wisdom, and scandal of mankind, that in order to live among them, one must be obliged to study other things than virtue, and principles different from those of innocence. 'Tis not enough for a just man to pity and despise those of a different character from himself, but he must learn to defend himself against their artifices. As there is a science by which we are taught to do good to others, there is another, which instructs us to avoid the injury they may do us. You want the latter, but a little experience will soon instruct you in it. I answer'd, I was not vex'd merely at my being impos'd upon, but for having been deceived by a false appearance of goodness and virtue. You'll often be so, says he, if you always judge of things at first sight. The science I hinted to you, and which will be so advantageous, consists wholly either in distinguishing appearances, that are frequently deceitful, or at least in observing a reasonable distrust with regard to those persons whose designs we have not had time to examine. How artfully foever vice may disguise

disguise herself, yet a just and attentive eye will soon see through it. She has very few marks in common with virtue, and 'tis no difficult matter to discover the difference. The viscount added, that the precepts he then mentioned were general, and relative to all mankind; but that there were others which related to dealers, that were easier to follow; that fraud and over-reaching were now so much practis'd by those kind of people, that they were no longer dangerous; that shop-keeper and cheat being synonymous terms, no man had any dealings with them, but prepar'd himself against their frauds; and that as every one was inform'd of their deceit, no man could be involuntarily imposed upon. This advice was of the highest advantage to me, I meeting daily with a thousand occasions to apply it. Tho' I was simple enough to be imposed upon once, yet heaven had given me so much sense as not to suffer myself to be deceiv'd twice; for the reflections I made on what ever happen'd to me, serv'd as so many precepts for my future conduct.

With regard to the five pistoles I had given over and above the price I had agreed for, as 'twas but an error in counting, my lord *Axminster* did not doubt but the toyman would immediately return me the overplus; and thereupon he advised me to go to him, which I did accordingly; but the only satisfaction I could get from him, was, an abundance of fresh compliments. He assur'd me that he had not taken a farthing more than his due; and that we had both calculated so exactly, that 'twas impossible for us to have made so great a mistake.

Tho' I every day found, that 'twas necessary for me to frequent company, and even to be sometimes imposed upon, I nevertheless felt a kind of shame whenever this happen'd to me in any occasion I had not foreseen. The viscount, who look'd upon me as his son, and would have been glad to find me rid of several things, not altogether so suitable to my ideas, or proper for my behaviour, urg'd me often to go abroad, and see every thing that was remarkable in the city. He advis'd me to insinuate my self into company, and took a pleasure in hearing the observations I used to make upon every thing.

He

He staid in *Roan* longer than he intended upon that account. As he did not understand *French*, he told me he cou'd not know the country any otherwise than by the account I gave him of it; when desiring me to acquaint him with the most trifling particulars I had taken notice of, he pretended to receive as a favour, what he did purely to do me service. Tho' he had not the least suspicion that I lov'd his charming daughter, he yet observ'd, that the respect I discover'd for her, made me pay the highest regard to all he said; he also made this subservient to the change he wish'd to see in me. He bid her to rally me agreeably, when ever I should happen to do a silly thing before her; and indeed miss *Fanny* play'd her part to a miracle. I could not at first conceive what was her design; and being surpriz'd to see so great a change in her, with regard to me, I consider'd for several days what could be the cause of it. At last, I thought I had found it out; for I flatter'd myself, that the desire she had of obeying her father's commands, which I look'd upon as her chief view, was heightened by a secret gratitude she entertain'd for the great care I had taken of her which was the reason why she wish'd to have me polish'd as soon as I was capable of being so. This was such an incitement, that I was more eager than ever to improve myself; and accordingly I got myself introduc'd to the chief persons in the city, by some *Englishmen*, who were acquainted with them. Here I not only met with models by which I might improve myself in those things I already had a tincture of; but a numberless multitude of objects that were new to me, and which afforded both diversion and instruction.

The *French*, 'tis certain, are very polite, particularly to foreigners, but I cannot tell how to define their politeness with propriety. It not only consists in their outward behaviour, which is graceful and kind; but they even affect to infuse it into their thoughts; or, at least, in a certain manner of expressing them, which is peculiar to themselves. Were all the protestations of friendship and esteem which are made in *France* sincere; that people ought to be consider'd as a society of chosen men, who possess the most amiable qualities of the soul in an eminent degree, unsuited with any of those vices which are com-

mon

mon to the rest of the world. Scarce was I introduced in one of the best families by one of my countrymen, but the utmost civility was shew'd me, upon the bare recommendation of my being an *Englishman* and *Oliver's* son. I was ask'd how long I had been in *Roan*; and they no sooner heard that I had been a fortnight in it, but they were very angry I had concealed myself from them so long. That I ought to have sent word of my arrival to all the considerable men in the city, when they would have visited me first. What a misfortune is it, say they, we did not know a person of so much merit sooner! They made me such offers of service, as would have put me above want as long as I liv'd, had they been faithful in executing them. They admir'd my agreeable mien; and as I made no manner of answer to these compliments which pour'd in upon me, three or four ladies, who seem'd to be the most distinguish'd of the company, discours'd a long time on the excellent qualities I possess'd, tho' they certainly had not had time enough to find out, whether I had one. Confounded with this profusion of civilities, I at last express'd the deep sense I had of them, when immediately my wit and good sense was admir'd, tho' I had said the most trifling things, and the four ladies again expatiated on my praise, and were as lavish of their compliments as before.

I must confess, that as they spoke with a serious air, and seem'd to be persons of some distinction, who had no motives which might prompt them to deceive me, 'twas with great pleasure I heard myself applauded by so many pretty women. I was even persuaded, that nature had given me qualities I till then had been a stranger to, and by that means I was for some moments impos'd upon by self-love; but it happen'd very luckily, that another lady in the city, who was come to visit the mistress of the house, came into the room, when all the company got up to receive her; and while they were making their compliments, I heard one of the four ladies above-mentioned, whisper to the person who sat next to her, and cry, what a silly fellow this *Englishman* is! This threw me into so much confusion, that I blush'd prodigiously, which she did not perceive; and what is still more strange, is, that she immediately after began to

VOL. I. F praise

praise me to the skies to the lady who came in last. I was so highly offended at her hypocrisy, that I was then going highly to reproach her for it in the severest terms; but a moment or two's reflection chang'd my resolution, when I only accus'd myself for my simplicity; and knew then better than ever, that the words and actions of men can seldom be depended upon, since they are naturally so perfidious, that they'll frequently deceive, when it is of no advantage to them.

However, I was revenged before the visit was ended. I had not once open'd my lips all the time the conversation had turned on the merits I possess'd, and afterwards on fashions and such kind of topicks. But now a serious reflection which a well-bred man in company made, possibly with design, gave occasion to their discoursing on nobler subjects. I insensibly struggled with my natural bashfulness, and explain'd my thoughts so well, as to draw attention; when I encourag'd myself so much by continuing to speak, that I at last began to make some figure in the conversation, by recollecting of several fine passages I had read, and the assistance of my own reflections. I found that the company heard me with pleasure, when casting my eyes every now and then on the lady who had rallied, rather than applauded me; I had the satisfaction to find that she look'd upon me with a kind of admiration and astonishment. The utmost testimonies of esteem, more sincere than the former, were shewn me at my leaving the company, but I had very little regard to them; my integrity not permitting me to delight in the commendations which were bestowed upon me, tho' I possibly deserved them; since they had been indulg'd me in as liberal a manner at a time when they were persuaded I did not deserve them.

My lord *Axminster* seem'd vastly pleas'd at this adventure; and, indeed, 'twas of the utmost advantage to me. The efforts I had made to speak without hesitation, began to inspire me with a boldness I till then had been insensible to; and this gave me the utmost satisfaction. I had been very much vex'd ever since my arrival in *France*, that is, since I began to converse with men, to find myself in a certain confusion when among them, which I yet could not get over, tho' the conversation held ever so long.

My

My timid nature appear'd in my countenance, and in every motion. 'Twas not that I was afraid; so far from it, I was firm and resolute, and preserv'd a great presence of mind; but the circumstance which gave me pain, was, that though I thought pretty justly on all occasions, I yet could not heighten my expression with that free and disengaged air, which so strongly inforces wisdom and good sense. In case I convers'd with a person of no sense, I instantly discovered his incapacity, and the superiority I had over him, and yet I was constrain'd; I cou'd hardly open my lips before him, or even look him in the face. I was disconcerted with the least motion he made, and trembled, as it were, before him; tho' at the same time I did myself justice in my own mind; and consider'd him in the contemptible light in which he ought to be plac'd. Thanks to the raillery I suffer'd in *Rom*, I almost got the better of this weakness in a little time. 'Tis not without reason that I take notice of this incident, and the several circumstances of it; for an intelligent reader wou'd undoubtedly ask, how it were possible for me to discover so much resolution as he will find me inform'd with in the sequel; had I not acquainted him how, by insensible degrees, I triumph'd over my natural weakness and timidity.

Miss *Fanny* was very assisting in curing me of these childish imperfections; for I no sooner saw that she discover'd and condemn'd them, but I immediately resolv'd to combat them, and I always came off victorious. She employ'd so much art on these occasions, and her inclination seconded so well her father's commands, that I must ascribe to her the quick improvement I made. My warmth increas'd very much by a happy circumstance, which gave occasion to what I may call the happiness of my life; for tho' it was the source of numberless troubles and crosses, yet these are not to be compar'd to the exquisite delight to which it gave occasion.

My love for Miss *Fanny* had hitherto kept itself within the bounds I had set to it in *Rumney-Hole*. Not a moment pass'd but I felt I lov'd her, and her image follow'd me wherever I went. I had always paid my devotions as assiduously as the most tender lover cou'd have done, but had not yet broke my passion to her. I did not know what she

thought of the great change that was wrought in me, since my leaving *Rumney-Hole*. She also was grown more reserv'd, but at the same time seem'd to be as much my friend as ever. She was sensible how much she had been oblig'd to me at sea, and acknowledg'd with joy, that she ow'd her life to my care. Her father us'd often to put her in mind of this, and would tell her, that she ought to love me as a second father; since there is little difference between giving a person life, and saving him from death. Ah! says I in my own mind, when he us'd to tell her of this; may she rather consider me as a tender lover! I am not for a relation, which will allow another to share her heart with me. However, I did not dare to form the least hopes, much less could I presume to acquaint her with my wishes. 'Tis true, indeed, that I was not tortured by the pangs of absence, for she was incessantly with me; nor needed I to fear her coldness or disdain, being sure of her friendship, if I was not of her love. Thus I was as easy as 'twas possible for a man to be, who has no reason to complain of any rigours, and yet does not enjoy what his heart languishes after.

Such were my thoughts when I was the laughing stock of the four *French* ladies abovemention'd; which, though it gave me the greatest uneasiness at first, did not yet prevent my returning to the assembly the next day. The company consisted of the very same persons, who receiv'd me as politely as they had done the day before. The success which my boldness had then met with, inspir'd me now with greater; and I shar'd so much in the agreeable part of the conversation, that I was certain that the ladies had a pretty favourable opinion of my talents; and receiv'd, before the day was ended, the strongest assurance of it. The character of the *French* ladies, according to the best observations I could make during my little stay in *France*, is made up of extremes. They are not for a medium in any thing; for they must either despise or esteem, censure or applaud, love or hate. They rally most unmercifully, and are eagle-ey'd in discovering the ridicule of persons they don't love. They have need of all their politeness, which is in some measure natural to them, to suppress the violent itch they have to laugh, rally, and throw out their witty jests, which are always smarter when u

ter'd by a pretty mouth. On the other side, if they love a person, they are sure to extend their indulgence to him even to blindness. Every thing they esteem is chang'd into virtues and perfections. They are tender and passionate; they praise, they approve and admire; in a word, their understanding is always regulated by the heart, and their heart is never moderate in its sensations. One of the four ladies who had rallied me the night before, the very one who call'd me silly fellow, seem'd highly delighted with me. This I might have observ'd, before I left the company, had I been capable of making such observations; but looking upon her continual glances, and the assurances of esteem which she found an opportunity of making me in private, for mere civility; I return'd home without seeming to take particular notice of it. Several weeks pass'd, during which I frequented the assembly regularly, when the civilities of that lady, her glances and encomiums, encreas'd every day; but they had no other effect upon me, than to make me forget she had ever rallied me. At last, as I was one day talking with my lord, a servant came and brought me a letter. I walk'd out and took it; and as he went away instantly, and did not say it requir'd an immediate answer, I return'd to my lord and open'd it before him. His lordship was as curious to know the contents of it as my self. It did not contain above four or five lines, and the import of it, was, to desire me to go that evening to a certain place mention'd in the letter; where a person, whom I possibly might not think unworthy of my esteem, would be proud of offering theirs. I explain'd the sense of these words to my lord, who wish'd me joy of my good fortune; and overjoy'd at this adventure, which he fancied would contribute still more to my improvement in politeness, he advis'd me to be punctual to the assignation. I answer'd that I did not intend to fail. Miss Fanny, who was present when this was said, did not seem to take the least notice of it; but her father going away a little after, and leaving me alone with her, she continued silent, contrary to her usual custom; upon which I fell laughing, and cry'd, that I thought myself a very happy fellow in having had an opportunity of pleasing a *French* lady. Miss answer'd with an air of fearfulness: Are you then resolv'd to love that lady, and to go to the place she has appointed

appointed? The tone of voice in which she spoke this gave me some emotion. I look'd upon her, when our eyes met; and by an emotion which is better felt than express'd, we continu'd for some time casting the most languishing glances upon one another; when, at last, she blush'd and threw her eyes downward, as tho' she was ashamed she had let me see so much. But now being prodigiously mov'd, I rose up without saying a word, and tore the letter into a thousand pieces. We continued silent till my lord's return, which was a little after, when he was surpriz'd to see the torn pieces scatter'd about the room. Is this, says he, the value you set upon a lady's favours? I answer'd, that I had chang'd my resolution with regard to the assignation; or rather, as I had no inclination to embark in a love intrigue, I therefore did not design to favour the advances of the unknown lady; but his lordship insisted upon his first advice, and gave me all the reasons which, abstracted from love, might induce me to comply. I told him that I could never prevail with myself to do it, and accordingly did not go out all that day.

I was too watchful over all miss *Fanny's* motions, not to perceive that she was satisfied with my conduct, and knew perfectly well the meaning of this sacrifice; but this did not give me greater assurances, or made me less respectful with regard to her. 'Twas enough for me that I had discover'd a glimpse of hope in her eyes; and had reason to believe she was sensible I had some affection for her. She cannot, says I to myself, but perceive my assiduities, whenever I pour out my soul before her; she explains them, and possibly is so good as to stamp them with her approbation. Who knows what happiness love has still in store for me? Were not those glances she shot the other day, infinitely beyond my expectations? I will never sue for any favours at her hands; respect commands me to be eternally silent; but in case heaven inspires her with some little kindness for me, why should I not endeavour to make myself worthy of it? Could my lord himself condemn sentiments, so pure, so regular as mine? That passion must be very perfect which does not dread a father's examination, and at the same time is so timid and respectful, as not to have courage to discover
itself

itself to the object from which it arises. I again resolv'd to keep all my desires within the bounds of innocence.

Before the day was ended, I had some light into the letter which was sent me, and the character of the writer. Being come to the assembly at the usual hour, I observ'd that there was one lady wanting, who us'd always to give us her company; when word was brought me, that a person of my acquaintance, who was at the door, desir'd to speak with me. I went down, and found the *English* gentleman who first introduc'd me into that house, when he desir'd me to follow him to a bye place, where he had a word or two to say to me in private. Being come, I waited for his speaking. I am, says he, sent upon an odd kind of commission. You cannot but remember a lady whom you have sometimes seen in the assembly; a tall, well-shap'd, agreeable *Brunette*, who ogled you so much, that you must have taken notice of her. She is my friend; and I am come hither to complain, in her name, of an injury she says you have done her. In a word, says he, interrupting himself, I am persuaded she loves you dearly, and is desirous that I should bring you together: For upon pretence of having been injur'd by you, which yet she did not explain; she was urgent with me to bring you to her house, and engage you to make her some satisfaction.

I easily guess'd the injury she complain'd of. However, I was so discreet as not to tell my friend that a letter had been sent me, which I was persuaded came from her; and as I had not the least intention to have any correspondence with her, I desir'd him to make my excuses to her, in case I had really offended a lady, for whom I had the utmost respect; but this would not satisfy my friend, who told me, that he had promis'd to bring me along with him; and therefore says he, I must keep it, otherwise our countrymen will pass for a set of rude people. He said so much, that he at last prevail'd with me to go, when he inform'd me in the way, that the lady in question was the relief of a counsellor belonging to the parliament, who had left her a good estate. As he was not unacquainted with my birth and circumstances, which I had not the same reasons to conceal as my lord *Axminster*, he thought friendship oblig'd him to advise me, to make

a proper advantage of the love she had for me. — We came into the House, which was very neat, and well furnish'd. As my friend was every day there, he thought he might introduce me without sending up his name, when a confus'd noise we heard in the antichamber, made us stop a moment in order to listen. We then heard two persons talking in an angry voice. Curiosity prompted him to advance farther, in order to hear better; when he fancy'd that he heard his own name mention'd. After having stood about half a quarter of an hour, he return'd to me, thanking heaven for directing his steps thither, so opportunely, since he had overheard a barbarous design that was forming against his life. Let us, says he, leave the place immediately; I'll never set my foot more in this house, and am vastly sorry I ever brought you into it.

As we were going away he then told me his real name, which was the lord *Omerfon*. He had been three months in *Roan*, and had been forc'd to fly from *England*, in order to avoid my father's resentments, whom he had mortally offended. No one in this city knew his name or his quality, except this lady, whose brother he had seen at *London*, and whose name was *Lallin*. My lord *Omerfon* had brought letters of recommendation from him to his sister; and coming to *Roan*, had contracted so close an intimacy with her, that he did not scruple to confide all his secrets to her. He had indeed no reason to suspect Mrs. *Lallin*, who was a generous and sincere woman; but her brother was a treacherous villain, who was endeavouring to build his fortune on my lord *Omerfon's* ruin. When he was assur'd by his sister's letters of his lordship's arrival at *Roan*, he insinuated himself so well into the *English* court, that he got access to my father, to whom he immediately told the place whither my lord was fled for refuge; and engag'd to deliver him up to the usurer, for the reward of four thousand pounds sterling. 'Tis well known, that my father was implacable in his resentments; he listen'd to *Lallin*; but being desirous of knowing whither my lord was retir'd, and what methods *Lallin* intended to employ to decoy him out of it, he form'd a plan of a much more extensive nature. *Lallin's* design was only to return to *France*, and to seize my lord

Omerfon

Omerſon privately, after having communicated his villainy to ſome captain of an *English* veſſel, of which there are always great numbers lying in the port of *Roan*. 'Twou'd not have been a difficult matter for him to convey that nobleman on board one of them, and to confine him privately in one of the cabbins. My father approv'd of his ſcheme, and being perſuaded by *Lallin*, that it might eaſily be put in execution; he imagin'd he could, with the ſame eaſe, get a dozen of his moſt inveterate enemies, who were in this city, carried off at the ſame time. This he reveal'd to *Lallin*, who immediately applauded his horrid project, undoubtedly in the hopes of a greater reward. Thus, what had at firſt been contriv'd only by a private villain, was made a conſiderable enterprize, by the part which *Oliver* was overjoy'd to act in it. *Lallin*, to make the ſucceſs of it infallible, told my father that it would be dangerous to employ a common captain; not to mention the difficulty there would be of confining and guarding ſo many perſons in a ſmall merchant-man, which generally has not above half a dozen hands on board. He therefore propoſed, that he ſhould ſend purpoſely out of the *Thames*, two of the largeſt Ships that could go from the *Seine* to *Roan*; and at the ſame time that they loaded them with goods, to cover their deſign; they ſhould put a conſiderable number of bold and intrepid ſoldiers, in ſailors habits, on board; who might not only ſerve as a guard over them, but alſo help to ſeize them, one after another, and bring them to the ſhips. My father looking upon this project to be very feaſible, he ſecretly prepar'd every thing that might be proper for putting it in execution. The two ſhips ſail'd out of the port of *London*, and *Lallin* ſet out for *Diepe*, in order that he might get to *Roan* before they arriv'd thither; and he was come to this city the very day that my lord Omerſon carried me to his ſiſter's.

My lord had juſtly conſider'd as a particular indulgence of heav'n, his good fortune, in overhearing part of the plot. He had been let into ſo much of it, as had juſtly alarm'd him; and though he had reaſon to believe, by the objections Mrs. *Lallin* made to her brother's ſcheme, that ſhe did not approve it; he yet could not now think of

either of them but with the utmost horror. After we had talk'd about an hour at my lord's lodgings, I was going to take leave of him, in order to acquaint my lord *Axminster* with it; and lord *Omerfon* to take such measures as might secure him from the malice of his enemies; when a servant of Mrs. *Lallin*'s came with a message from his mistress, who, he said, desir'd to speak with his lordship that moment. My lord was in doubt what to think of it, and took it first for a trick of *Lallin*, in order to get him into his clutches. However, having consider'd that he was arriv'd but the same day, and that the ships were not yet come to *Roan*, he thought there was no danger; but hop'd he might discover some new circumstance that might be of advantage to him, when he ask'd me if I car'd to go along with him. I could not in honour refuse it, were it only to succour him in case of any villainy. Accordingly we went, and found Mrs. *Lallin*, who was waiting for him with the utmost impatience; for her brother had left her a moment before, and she had sent to my lord *Omerfon*, to inform his lordship of the great danger he was in. She did not expect to see me at that time; and though she seem'd to be mightily pleas'd at it, she yet desir'd I would give her leave to speak a word or two to my lord in private; but his lordship answer'd, that he did not conceal any thing from me, and therefore she might say any thing before me. This perplex'd her very much, knowing I was *Oliver*'s son; but his lordship having assur'd her in general, that she need not have the least suspicion of me, tho' my father were concern'd in it; she related to him in the most sincere manner, the motive of her brother's voyage, and the several particulars which my lord had heard but imperfectly. I did all that lay in my power, says she, to make him lay aside his black design, and reproached him for it in the severest terms; which exasperated him so much, that he swore he would murder me: in case I betray'd him; but tho', says she, he were to execute his menaces, they yet should not prevent me doing all that lies in my power to prevent so horrid a design; nor from exerting myself for your lordship, in such a manner as honour and friendship may require.

My

My lord hearing Mrs. *Lallin* deliver herself in this noble, this generous manner, immediately stifled the Resentments he had entertain'd against her. He gave her a thousand thanks, and making as tho' we had not overheard her brother's discourse, he got from her own Mouth whatever hints might be necessary for his security. As he was not the only person mention'd in the black scene, he ask'd whether she knew the names of all the persons whom *Oliver* had order'd her brother to carry off. She nam'd some of them to him, and among the rest my lord *Axminster*. I shudder'd when I heard the name, and could not think how it were possible for my father to find out his lordship was got to *Roan*, especially as he had taken the utmost care to disguise his name, and saw very little company. I then did not doubt but I was nam'd among the rest; and am still persuaded, that Mrs. *Lallin* forbore mentioning my name, purely that she might not frighten me. I ask'd her whether 'twas publickly known that my lord *Axminster* was in *Roan*? She answer'd that every body knew it; and my lord *Omerfon* assur'd me of the same thing; but upon my seeming surpriz'd that he had not hinted it to me before, he told me that he had forbore to do it out of civility; being not willing to undeceive my lord in the opinion he had that no one knew of his being in the city. We debated a considerable Time on the measures we should take for our common safety. The shortest way would have been to impeach *Lallin*, who would certainly have been punish'd for his villainy; but we were oblig'd for his sister's sake, to act very cautiously in that matter, and thereupon resolv'd to debate further on it, with the rest of our countrymen who were included in this horrid sentence.

Before I left Mrs. *Lallin*, I took some notice of the letter she had sent to me the night before, which my lord *Omerfon* observing, he withdrew for a moment. She complain'd of the disregard I had shewn for her esteem, when I assur'd her that no one had a deeper sense of her great merit than myself; but without explaining the nature of my engagements, I told her with my usual freedom, that I had already form'd such strong ties, as made it impossible for me to devote myself to her service. The respectful and unaffected air with which I spoke those

those words made an impression on her. I will, says she, be so impartial to myself, as to own that I don't deserve you should abandon another for my sake; but you might as well have told me this yesterday. Don't you think that it must be some pain to a woman to make certain advances; and is not a man oblig'd to return at least, a civil answer on these occasions? This reproach appear'd to me so frank and ingenuous, that I accus'd myself for answering her so bluntly, and begging her to continue the indulging me her esteem, I assur'd her I would endeavour always to deserve it. My lord *Omerston* returning pretty soon afterwards, we left her; and an unhappy accident which happen'd to her afterwards prevented my seeing her for some time. 'Twas rude in me, says he, as we were going away, to interrupt the conversation you were just got into with that pretty lady; but the apprehensions I was under lest her brother should put his vile design in execution, would not suffer me to stay any longer. I was not so uneasy merely for my own sake, but there are twenty worthy men expos'd to the same danger. His lordship resolved to desire them all to meet at lord *Axminster's*, in order that we might take a resolution in common; and he call'd at his own lodgings to order his servant to give them all notice, which being done he went home with me.

My lord *Axminster* was prodigiously surpriz'd to hear, that not only every one in this city knew his name, but also that *Oliver* had heard he had been a month in *Roan*; and was much more so, when my lord *Omerston*, whom he did not know in *London*, and had taken for a private gentleman in *Roan*, told his name and the subject of his visit. In the first emotions of his rage, he vented some imprecations against *Oliver's* tyranny; and this continuation of his ill fortune recalling to his remembrance the many torments he had suffer'd, replunged him in so deep a melancholy, that I scarce remember to have ever since seen him discover the least token of joy. Seven or eight *English* gentlemen whom my lord *Omerston* had sent to, coming sooner than we expected, we acquainted them with the danger which threatned us; when we were so unanimously of opinion, that it was absolutely necessary to seize *Lallin*, that my lord *Omerston* could scarce prevail with

with us to search for some other expedient. He expatiated on his sister's generosity, to whom we all ow'd our lives; when at last 'twas agreed, that for the honour of the *English* nation we should not do any thing that look'd like ingratitude; since she herself, and her whole family, which was very considerable, must have shar'd in her brother's ignominy. My lord *Axminster* propos'd an easy expedient, which was, that we should leave *Roan*; but the majority were against it, because of the many friends they had in that city. Sir *William Cromby*, who was in the assembly, propos'd the only method that was approv'd of by all; viz. that we should spread publickly the design of *Oliver*; making as tho' we had receiv'd advice to that purpose from *London*, and not to take any notice of *Lallin's* being in the secret. 'Twas plain that the discovery of this villainous design would prevent its being put in execution; and that then each of us might take care to provide for his own safety. We all agreed to this resolution, which met with success, except that it afterwards occasion'd a fatal accident, that gave us mortal uneasiness.

The governor of *Roan* having heard by the report that was spread, and which was also confirm'd by the *English*, of the bold design that was carrying on against us; gave orders that all foreign vessels which lay in the harbour and at the mouth of the river, should be exactly search'd; and at the same time assur'd all the *Englishmen* who were in the city, that they might depend upon his esteem and protection. The citizens were exasperated when they heard we were threatned to be taken away by force out of their city; and this reflection heightning the affection which the *French* have for foreigners, there was not one of them but offer'd to defend us; if we except that villain *Lallin*, who was enrag'd to see the care which was now taken for our safety. Tho' we had concealed his name with the utmost secrecy, he could not persuade himself that we had discover'd his villainy, but we must at the same time be told that he had contriv'd it. As he did not know whom to suspect but his sister, he accus'd her with having betray'd him; and being transported with rage, caus'd undoubtedly by the dread he was under of punishment, or the grief to see all his hopes frustrat-

ed;

ed; he gave her a stab which had like to have proved mortal. Having done this, he left the city and fled to *Diepe*, where he had the good fortune to meet with a vessel which was just sailing for *England*, on which he got aboard, and by that means screen'd himself from justice.

The unhappy accident which had befallen this gentlewoman being known soon after, the cause of it was not conceal'd, and indeed she herself told it to all those who came to enquire about it. All the *English* who were then in *Roan*, thought themselves oblig'd to discover the deep sense they had of their obligations to her; but I did not see her for some time, because we left the city a few days after she was wounded. Being got to *Bayonne*, we receiv'd a letter from my lord *Omerfon*, who inform'd us of her recovery, and the conclusion of that fatal adventure. The two ships arrived in the harbour of *Roan*, and 'twas impossible but they must be discover'd. The governor had the two captains arrested; but as they denied their having any such commission as they were charged with; and there were not proofs sufficient to prove it, he was oblig'd to set them at liberty. The *French* minister complain'd thereof to the protector; but 'twas to no purpose, for he denied his having ever had a hand in it.

This incident made my lord *Axminster* resolve to leave *Roan* immediately, which we did accordingly after having been about six weeks in it. As we heard from all parts, that king *Charles* was gone to the frontiers of *Spain*, we set out directly thither; and met with such good horses, that we got to our journey's end almost as soon as we could have done by sea with the most favourable wind; so that the reader will suppose we made but a very short stay in the cities thro' which we pass.

In our journey, I saw but few which could be compar'd to *Roan*, either for extent, or number of inhabitants; and I met with hardly any thing in these that rais'd my admiration. Tho' I had liv'd but so short a time in *Roan*, it yet had enlarg'd my understanding, and given such a turn to my behaviour, that I began to think and speak like the rest of my fellow creatures. The only circumstance that struck me, was my meeting daily with new vices, which were entirely repugnant to my principles;

ples; I knew that they sprang from the depravity which is natural to man; and found that the effects of it might vary infinitely, according to the different places and occasions; but I could not but wonder, that in the distance only of two hundred leagues, there should be so great a difference in the carriage, the dress, and language of a people who are subjects to the same monarch, profess the same religion, and submit to the same laws. I could not make myself be understood in the Provinces of *Normandy, du Maine, Poitou*, and several others; and I had occasion to ask in every village thro' which I past, whether I was yet in *France*, tho' I spoke the language with great propriety; so much the jargon varied every moment. One may observe some difference on this head even in towns. If we except persons of a certain rank and education in the several cities of this great kingdom through which I past, all the rest are so many rustics, whose language is continually varying; and who differ as much in taste from the polite persons abovemention'd, as they do in dress; so that the few only are true *Frenchmen*, who preside over the rest, and are distinguish'd from those whom we call the common people:

Being arriv'd at *Bayonne*, we enquir'd, as we had always done, for the best inn in the town, and the first thing we heard at our alighting from our horses, was, that the king of *England* had been two days in that place. Illustrious monarch! says my lord *Axminster*, when he heard this; in what a low condition art thou, at the same time that thy throne and thy palaces are fill'd by rebels and wicked wretches! His majesty was incognito in this place, and he had scarce a larger train than my lord *Axminster*, who hir'd a valet de chambre and four men-servants in *Roan*. We repos'd ourselves but a moment after our journey, for my lord had a strong desire to wait upon his majesty, who gave him immediate audience. His majesty had never seen him before, my lord not having left *America*, till after the murder of the king his father. I was with my lord *Axminster*. Notwithstanding all the experience I had acquir'd in *Roan*, and our journey, I could not suppress a kind of trembling which seiz'd me, as I came near the king's apartment. This was not so much fear, as a confus'd sensation of respect, tenderness and compassion united;

ted; for I reflected at one and the same time on his greatness and ill fortune. I now found some remains of the impression which his father's fatal death had made on me, when I heard my mother relate it. Besides, I had that idea of majesty which a young man first forms of himself, who has never been in the royal presence; and I entred his apartment with the same awe as into a church. He was standing and talking with two *English* gentlemen, his attendants. His sweet and amiable countenance encouraged me at once; but at the same time I observ'd a melancholy in his eyes, which undoubtedly was owing to his reflecting continually on his royal father's sufferings and his own.

My lord *Axminster* fell at his majesty's feet, who rais'd him up and embrac'd him. My lord, says he, with the utmost sweetness and grace, we know one another only by name; but if your attachment to my person is equal to the esteem I have for you, from the relation I have had of your great merit, we shall soon be friends. I have, says his majesty, heard part of your sufferings; and I often wonder'd, as you left *London* above a year ago, that you did not shelter yourself with me. If you are now come upon that design, you may depend that I'll endeavour to make your asylum as agreeable as possible. My lord *Axminster* answer'd this obliging compliment in a respectful manner, and told his majesty that it had not been in his power to wait upon him sooner; and then declaring the great impatience he had to see his majesty, he at the same time assur'd him that his life and fortune were at his service, whom he look'd upon as his only lawful sovereign. Alas! my lord, says his majesty with a sigh; with what pleasure could I lay down my own to deliver unhappy *England* from tyranny! When will my subjects open their eyes, and recognize a king who would employ the last drop of it to make them happy! But I look upon the arrival of worthy men like you as a happy omen. But the misfortunes of our kingdoms and our own are not yet past a remedy. Upon this my lord *Axminster* told him a thousand particulars; and his majesty heard with the utmost astonishment the danger to which we had been expos'd in *Roan*. King *Charles* had met with several of the same nature; and he assur'd us that he should more than

once

once have fallen a prey to vallainy and treason, had he not been preserv'd by the immediate indulgence of heaven. After having convers'd for a considerable time, he said to my lord in the most obliging manner, that, as he was but just arriv'd, he must necessarily want to repose himself; and that therefore he advis'd him to take a little rest, and defer their talking of more important matters till another opportunity. Before I left the apartment I fell at his majesty's feet. This, says my lord *Axminster*, is a young man, who is one of your zealous adherents, tho' he be son to the usurper. *Oliver's* son! says the king with a kind of horror: Yes, says my lord; but a son worthy of a better father, and such a one as I could wish to be blest with; saying which he gave his majesty a short relation of mine and my mother's story, and he listned to it with the utmost attention.

My lord had scarce ended, when the king ask'd my mother's name. The viscount had forbore mentioning it, because as she had been the late king's mistress for some time, he thought it not proper to recal it to his son's remembrance; but his majesty being urgent with him, he answer'd that her name was *Cleveland*. Good heavens! says the king, what's that I hear? I really had some notion of this. Let somebody fly and call old Mr. *Cleveland*; I'm sure he will be overjoy'd at this news: and accordingly one of the gentlemen went and call'd my grand-father, who was one of his majesty's attendants. Whilst they were gone to call him, his majesty told us that my grand-father had adher'd so inviolably to him ever since his royal father's death, that he did not believe he had a more faithful servant; that he took a great pleasure in telling him, and hearing him relate stories of past times; but that he had not entertain'd him so often with any thing, as the amours of his daughter with the late king; the ill fortune she had to lose his favour, and to be forc'd to ingratiate herself with *Oliver*; the endeavours she had made but all to no purpose, to get admittance again, into her father's house; and the sorrow into which he was afterwards plung'd for using her so cruelly, when after having lost all his other children, he call'd to mind that she only surviv'd; that he had afterwards search'd for her every where; but that being never able to find his dear daughter, he had incessantly reproach'd

reproach'd himself with her ruin, which he look'd upon as a barbarous and unnatural action. Whilst the king was telling us this, Mr. *Cleveland* came into the apartment where we were, but without telling him that any strangers were arriv'd. I felt an unusual emotion at the sight of the old gentleman, when I fix'd my eyes stedfastly upon him, and had not my respect for the king check'd me, I should have run and embrac'd him. *Cleveland*, says the king, what will you give me if I restore your daughter to you? Alas! sir, says he to me, with the tears standing in his eyes, heaven has not reserv'd so much happiness for my old age. I can't say, continu'd his majesty, that I'll restore herself to you; but then I can a person who very much resembles, and is nearly related to her. Turn about, says his majesty, and embrace that young man, who is her son by *Oliver*. As the name of his daughter seem'd to have made a tender impression on Mr. *Cleveland*, that of the usurper immediately destroy'd it; so that instead of embracing me, he flew off at a distance, when he gaz'd upon me attentively. The king seem'd to be pleas'd at viewing the attitude he was in, for he had one foot forward, and his whole body rested on his other leg, which was drawn back; his eyes were staring wide upon me; but he did not seem to be mov'd, so that one would have thought his heart was hardned by looking at me. But now he began to soften a little, and I could see the tears steal softly down his cheeks, when my anxiety and blushing began to melt him. Your majesty, says he, (turning about to the king, and afterwards throwing himself about my neck) will give me leave to embrace him. He is son to the abominable wretch who put my sovereign to death, but then he is the son also of my dearest daughter. If he has receiv'd ill blood from his father, he shall shed it in his King's defence. Will you not, says he, clasping me fast, my dear son? Won't you love him whom heaven has appointed for your lawful sovereign, and shed the last drop of your blood in his cause?

An indifferent spectator, if 'twas possible for any one to be such in so tender a scene, would have found it a difficult matter, to judge, from Mr. *Cleveland's* looks and expressions, whether he was fonder of his sovereign or his grandson. He was half a quarter of an hour in these emotions,

ons, sometimes casting his eyes upon the king, and beseeching him to have some esteem for me; and at others, directing his glances to me, to conjure me never to swerve in the duty I owed the best of sovereigns. The king was so delighted to hear him talk, that nothing could have prompted his majesty to make him change the discourse, but the fear he was under, lest such strong emotions should prove of dangerous consequence to a person of so advanc'd an age. He then assur'd him that he would take the utmost care of me, and use me like his own child.

We now seem'd to be among our acquaintance in *Bayonne*. Mr. *Cleveland* was overjoy'd to see himself live again, as it were, in his grandson; nor was my lord *Axminster* less overjoy'd with his majesty's conversation, which he was frequently indulg'd. He always attended upon him when he went to the conferences, or made private visits to cardinal *Mazarine*, who was look'd upon as the director of all the affairs of *Europe*. I was equally ignorant with the public of the particulars of their conferences and debates: But as the most able politicians sometimes let drop some distant hints of the business they are upon; I remember I often heard the king complain equally of *France* and *Spain*; and say, that tho' both those crowns behav'd very differently towards him, they yet agreed in one point, which was to act very coldly in his interest. *France* treated him in outward appearance, with great kindness and respect. Every one pitied his distress; the *French* made him very considerable presents privately, and when he was in *Paris* they paid him all imaginable honours; but then, at the same time, the queen and the cardinal were in perfect harmony with his enemies. They had declar'd war against *Spain* in concert with *Oliver*, and 'twas to please him that the *French* fleet had beat their enemies in the *Downs* and taken *Dunkirk*. They had recogniz'd him as lawful protector of the commonwealth of *England*; and sent ambassadors to him and receiv'd his. *Spain* acted in a quite different manner. At the same time that they affected to be wholly indifferent with regard to the *English* affairs and the king's interest, they offer'd underhand to restore him to his kingdom; but then 'twas on such hard and disadvantageous conditions, that he plainly saw they were not touch'd with his misfortunes,

misfortunes, and consider'd nothing but their own interest. Don *Lewis de Haro*, who slighted him so far outwardly, that he did not even depute a gentleman to him; yet at the same time carried on a private correspondence with him, by which he was every day making new proposals; but these were so unreasonable, that the king often complain'd of them as of so many insults. They requir'd no less than that the King should abandon to *Spain*, all the *English* dominions in *South-America*; and not only give up *Dunkirk* after his restoration, but assist the *Spaniards* in recovering all the *French* conquests in *Flanders*. Don *Lewis* put an end to his ridiculous solicitations, after the treaty of peace, and the marriage was concluded between *Lewis XIV.* and the *Infanta* of *Spain*; and this being done, pleasure was much more attended to than business.

In the mean time, the continual conversations which my lord *Axminster* had with his majesty, gave rise to a thought which the king imagin'd would be of great service to him. He knew the figure this lord and his father had made in *America*, and how dear they were to the inhabitants. The great settlements which the *English* have in those parts, make a considerable part of the strength of their kingdom; 'tis the foundation of their traffick, and consequently of their riches. The king form'd thereupon a design of sending my lord *Axminster* thither, in order to endeavour to make all those return to their allegiance, who had any respect for their lawful sovereign. My lord thought this project very feasible; and so far from having a reluctance to attempt it, he was as much prompted to it by inclination, as by the submission he ow'd to his sovereign's commands. After the dreadful reverses of fortune he had met with in *Europe*, nothing bound him to it but his zeal for the service of his king. *America* would be a large field for him to exercise it in; and he hop'd that the sight of a region where he had spent so many happy years, would conduce to give his mind a chearful turn, and erase several gloomy ideas from his soul, which would always cleave to him so long as he should be near *England*. I was immediately told this resolution, and it threw me in the utmost perplexity, for I foresaw all the difficulties I should infallibly meet with; either from Mr. *Cleveland*, who now lov'd me so much
that

that he would never consent to my going with lord *Axminster*; or from my own heart, which would still less permit me to abandon miss *Fanny*, the idol of my affections; or to go at any distance from her father, my tender and dearly beloved protector.

The opposition which I had foreseen, began the moment Mr. *Cleveland* heard of my lord's voyage; for no sooner was he inform'd of it, but he came running to me in the utmost confusion. I imagine, says he, that you don't intend to leave *Europe*. My lord has acted the part of a father to you till now, but now I am to take his place; and, besides you cannot have forgot what the King promised you. He spoke these words in so strong, so affectionate a manner, that I cou'd not answer him, for fear of making him uneasy. He look'd upon my silence as a mark that I consented; and was so overjoyed at it, that he gave out, I was going to leave my lord *Axminster*, in order to follow king *Charles* to *Flanders*. I spent some hours in considering what to do, which making me melancholy, I went to Miss *Fanny's* apartment, in order to chear my mind. The coldness and indifference with which she heard some general questions I made with regard to her father's voyage, plainly discovered that she had some uneasiness upon her spirits. I ask'd her whether something had not chagrin'd her, but she answer'd in such an ambiguous manner as made the whole a mystery. Mrs. *Riding*, who was present, seem'd to be no less troubled. As we still lodg'd in the Inn at *Bayonne*, and that the great number of travellers, made us be very much straitned with regard to room, we generally spent the day in the apartment of our ladies. My lord came in the instant their kind of sullen humour was going to make me leave it, when he mention'd the king's departure, which was put off to the next week; and then turning about to me, he ask'd me whether I was preparing to follow him. This question spoke with such an air as seem'd to denote that we were to be certainly separated; and with such a tone that one would have thought him glad of it, threw me into so deep a melancholy, that I cou'd not utter a word. My lord looked upon the perplexity I was in, as an effect of the confusion I was under, for having concerted upon such a thing without acquainting him

him with it; and afterwards changing the discourse, he went out without saying a word more, which put me to so much pain, that I could not forbear dropping a tear.— I find then, says I to Miss *Fanny*, that my lord is weary of me; he had better, says I with great warmth, (not considering that Mrs. *Riding* was present) kill me than force me to abandon you. These words, tho' spoke at random, were nevertheless intelligible enough. Mrs. *Riding* was so much surpriz'd, and Miss *Fanny* in such confusion, that she blush'd; upon which I rose up, resolving to go and muse upon my uneasiness alone.

Mrs. *Riding* followed me. You seem, says she, taking me into another room, to be quite chang'd; I always thought you prudent and rational, and supposed that you wanted only a little knowledge of the world to complete you; but so far from it, that scarce have you began to acquire a little, but your wisdom abandons you at once. Permit me, says she, to take once more the liberty of declaring what I think of you. First, 'tis a breach of gratitude and integrity in you, in agreeing to leave my lord without giving him some notice of it. Secondly, can any thing be so horrible, or so repugnant to the principles you have always profess'd, to have not only conceal'd from us your amorous intrigue in *Roan*; but protested before my lord and his daughter, that you was absolutely resolv'd not to have any correspondence with the lady who writ to you, at the same time that you had promis'd to marry her. What name will you give to so insidious, so hypocritical a conduct? My lord and Miss *Fanny* had once the highest value for you, but now they are quite chang'd. As for my self, who lov'd you with the tenderness of a mother, I must confess 'tis very much lessen'd, tho' I cou'd have wish'd to love you as long as I liv'd.

Had I not had the utmost respect for Mrs. *Riding*, I should have immediately told her that she talk'd madly, for I did not understand a word she said. I forbore preparing my reader for this incident, purposely that he might be as much surpriz'd at the reading of it, as I was when I began to hear it; but I'll now relate in few words the circumstance which gave rise to it, for fear, lest my postponing it should make my relation not altogether so intelligible.

Mrs.

Mrs. *Lallin*, whom I had quite forgot at my leaving *Roan*, and besides, had never carried on any correspondence with her, for which I had occasion to reproach myself; she, I say, had not forgot me in my absence. I shall henceforward call her by her brother's name, purposely to conceal, as I have done before, that of her late husband, who was of one of the most distinguish'd families in *Roan*. This lady put such a construction as was most favourable to her wishes, to the plain and honest answer I had made her when she reproach'd me; but her being wounded, which happen'd two days after I had visited her with my lord *Omerfon*, prevented her revealing herself further to me, before my setting out. She was not even informed of it, till such time as her wounds began to heal, when she was visited by several *English* gentlemen. How much soever she might resent my going away without taking leave of her, she imputed it to the necessity I was under of following my lord *Axminster*; and she so far disclos'd her mind to my lord *Omerfon*, that she hinted to him, she should not be unwilling to be my wife. My lord *Omerfon*, who had some love for me; and not being acquainted with my unhappy circumstances, thought this would be an advantageous match for me, did all that lay in his power to confirm her in that resolution. He flatter'd her daily with the hopes, that I should return to *Roan* with the King; and he promised her, in my name, the utmost gratitude, in requital of the favours she was pleas'd to indulge me. And, indeed, he depended so much on my consent, that in his letter to my lord *Axminster*, he mention'd Mrs. *Lallin* and I, as allotted for one another; and as two persons who waited only for the nuptial ceremony, being already united by the strongest ties of love and esteem.

This letter came the same day, when Mr. *Cleveland* had imagin'd by my silence, that I was resolv'd not to go to the *West-Indies*. At his going out of my room, he found lord *Axminster* reading it; and making it a kind of punctilio of honour to take me, as it were, out of his hands; he told him in a very blunt manner, that I was resolv'd to follow the king into *Flanders*. My lord had, as he imagin'd, just reasons to be offended at my ingratitude;

tude; and indeed I was more oblig'd to him than to any other person living, not only for his former favours, but for those he intended to indulge me; his resentment therefore was proportionable to his kindneses. His lordship had immediately told the whole to Mrs. *Riding* and miss *Fanny*, and they both had condemn'd me; but as friendship still pleaded in my favour, my lord went out to look for me, and give me an opportunity of coming, at least, to some explanation; now it so happen'd, that I came into his daughter's apartment unobserv'd by him; but he coming a moment after me, and seeing that I not only persisted in concealing the pretended design of my marriage with Mrs. *Lallin*; but even my suppos'd intention of going along with the king, which his lordship fancied I conceal'd purposely from him; he therefore had left the room with much greater disgust than before.

The reader may judge I was vastly uneasy, to hear Mrs. *Riding* reproach me in this sharp, but obscure manner. I was altogether as ignorant of what had past at *Roan*, as I was of the report of my departure which my grandfather had spread abroad; so that I gaz'd for some time upon Mrs. *Riding*, without being able to answer a word. At last my innocence giving me courage, I told her she would have no occasion to employ her eloquence to make me sensible of my faults, in case she could tell me of any I had committed: However, I was oblig'd to put a thousand questions to her, before I could prevail with her to explain the whole to me, which she did at last, when she told me all the crimes I was accus'd of, and the persons who accus'd me. Tho' I was vastly well pleas'd to find myself innocent of them all, I yet was very much afflicted to think my lord could so much as suspect me to be ungrateful; or that my charming miss *Fanny* could have a notion that it were possible for me to love any person so much as herself. Heavens! says I, how unhappy is an upright and generous heart, when it has no other way of discovering its sincerity but by words; that is to say, by an expedient which ingratitude abuses, and which perfidy may render subservient to its vile purposes! As for my pretended amour with Mrs. *Lallin*, says I to Mrs. *Riding*, gazing at the same time upon her with an air of melancholy, as we are now so far from *Roan*, I can
justify

justify myself no otherwise than by my cries, and the sincerity of my aspect. As my lord thought me so vile as to disguise my sentiments in so odious a manner, he undoubtedly will be persuaded that I shall employ untruths to clear myself. I therefore don't see how it will be possible for me to restore myself to the good opinion he once entertain'd of me. With regard to my following his majesty, this is a false story I can easily destroy; and had any person but Mr. *Cleveland* spread it abroad, I should have call'd him a liar to his face. Heavens! says I, observing that my uneasiness began to soften Mrs. *Riding*, I again invoke thy succour. Why dost thou not discover my innocence since thou hast form'd me sincere and incapable of dissimulation?

Mrs. *Riding*, who knew me too well to doubt the truth of my asseverations, immediately resum'd the good opinion she had before entertain'd of me; and thereupon told me that she would immediately go and undeceive my lord *Axminster* and his daughter. If miss *Fanny*, says I, in a sudden transport, thinks me guilty, I am the most unhappy wretch breathing. Mrs. *Riding* had not forgot the words I had said to miss *Fanny* a quarter of an hour before; but the words I spoke last, letting her at once into the secrets of my soul, she ask'd me why I dreaded so much to displease miss *Fanny*. I myself was sensible that I had discover'd too much, but then I had no occasion to repent my having done it, as Mrs. *Riding* had always us'd me with a mother's tenderness; so far from it, that I was glad I had found such an opportunity, of disclosing to her the genuine sentiments of my heart. I then told her that miss *Fanny* was very dear to me, and how much I had endeavour'd to hide it from her, which made her smile. You're a pretty philosopher, says she. Take care, or wisdom will be shipwreck'd on the shelves of love. I conjur'd her to tell me sincerely what she thought of this matter. Mrs. *Riding* was a woman of admirable sense. Let virtue, says she, be always dear to you; and never distrust either love or fortune: This was all I was able to get out of her.

We afterwards return'd to miss *Fanny*'s chamber, when the sight of that dear creature awaken'd the anguish I had just before felt. 'Twas either this, or a kind of satisfaction I found in myself, for having reveal'd my passion

to Mrs. *Riding*, that made me fall at her feet; and continue silent for some time, whilst Mrs. *Riding* undertook my justification. Miss *Fanny* seem'd overjoy'd to find me innocent when she had so little expected it. I then took an opportunity of saying many tender things, with regard to the anguish, which the bare reflection of her coldness made me feel. I was melted to tears, and forgetting insensibly all my resolves, I took her hand, and kissing it in the most tender manner, vow'd to love her so long as I had life. I had no sooner spoke these words, but reflecting on the words which had dropt from me, I look'd wishfully at her, and trembled at the same time. This threw her into some confusion. I have said too much, says I, casting down my eyes; but as you have now got my secret from me, you may pronounce whether I am to live or die. She continued dumb for a moment, when turning to Mrs. *Riding*, she ask'd her, with a languishing air, what answer she should make me. I see plainly, says that lady, who had some reasons not to disapprove our amour, that you had taken your resolution before you ask'd my advice. Answer him as your heart dictates; that is, that you are far from hating him. May, says she, your affection be reciprocal, so long as each of you shall deserve it! Love, since you are in the blooming season of life; heaven approves it, and my lord will not be displeas'd at it.

I was so much surpriz'd, and at the same time so overjoy'd at what I heard, that sure reality never appear'd to me so much like a dream. Even the emotions which my heart then felt, seem'd different from those we are sensible to when awake. 'Twas something methought that was above nature; something more than mortals are capable of feeling; 'Twas. — O'tis inexpressible! But never was I before or since bless'd with so delicious a moment. I again catch'd hold of my dear, dear *Fanny's* hands; and in a transport which I express only by my tears, I kiss'd them a thousand times, nor did she once endeavour to pull them from me. I rose up with the same transport, and embrac'd Mrs. *Riding*; when I begg'd her to confirm the happy approbation she had indulg'd me, and to tell me, whether she believ'd my lord would be favourable to my wishes. She answer'd,

that

that she had perhaps done wrong in discovering her thoughts at once to us, but that she nevertheless did not repent of it; that it would be proper for miss *Fanny* and I to set our minds at ease, till such time as she had an opportunity of resuming the discourse about me, which she had with my lord the night before; that this nobleman, the first time he spake to her of his voyage to *America*, ask'd her whether she was inclin'd to go along with him; that upon her answering, she would willingly follow him all the world over, he had ask'd her whether she believ'd I was willing to go along with them; that as she did not know my inclinations on that head, and therefore could not determine, she had offer'd to sound me in case his lordship thought proper; but he desir'd her only to mention the voyage to me, in order to see how I would take it; that from what he had observ'd, he believ'd I was in love with his daughter; and that as he had the utmost affection for me, he would willingly marry his daughter to me, and take me along with him to *America*; but then he was resolv'd I should be prompted to it by inclination; that he had desir'd her, without mentioning the circumstances above-mention'd, to endeavour to discover my real intentions, and how far I might esteem him and his daughter. Thus, says she, when I assur'd you that my lord would not condemn your passion, 'tis plain I had the justest reasons for asserting it; nor have I broke my word with his lordship, in revealing what he intends to do for you, since I did not do it, till I was before assur'd that you lov'd miss *Fanny*.

However, I should be sorry to deprive him of the satisfaction which he propos'd, in acquainting you with it himself; and therefore you must pretend to know nothing of the matter, when he informs you of it. I'll go says she, and wait upon his lordship; and will endeavour to remove the ill impressions which your grandfather and my lord *Omerson's* letter have made upon him to your prejudice; and afterwards inform him, that you have as high a value for him and his daughter, as he thought you had. Go, says I, in the strongest raptures of joy and admiration, good madam; and assure my lord that heaven cannot make a man happier than I shall think myself, in

case he indulges my passion for his enchanting daughter.

I was now alone with my dear creature. Her confusion and mine were equal for a few moments ; but as it was owing to the perplexity we were in, it soon gave way to the most passionate and tender discourse. Those treasures of love which silence and constraint had so long confined in our hearts, now no longer fear'd to unfold themselves in full liberty.

My lovely *Fanny* indulg'd me such confessions that I thought myself more than blest ; and yet at the same time I seem'd not satisfied, so eager I was to have them repeated. I told her the rise of my passion, its effects, my timid and awful hopes ; the design I had either to conceal them so long as I liv'd, or to wait for some fortuitous circumstances which I cou'd not foresee, and had scarce the boldness to wish for. I seem'd satisfied with my tenderesses, even when awe confined it in the most secret recesses of my heart : to what a height of happiness did I see myself instantly rais'd, by Miss *Fanny's* assuring me that I was dear to her ! by the liberty I was allow'd of breathing my passion, and the hopes I flatter'd myself with, of one day satisfying it. My joy was not only above expression, but even the extent of my ideas. Fortune which had so long persecuted me ; heaven, which hitherto had treated me with rigour ; love and friendship, in short every thing seem'd to unite to rescue me from a state of misery, and raise me to a condition that kings might envy. Heaven ! would I frequently fall in transport, I did not beseech thee to indulge me so much ; thou pourest out felicity with too liberal a hand ; lessen thy beneficence ; my joys are so great that they oppress me. And the next moment changing my wishes, I would beseech it to increase my felicity, if 'twere possible, and make it for ever thus exquisite.

My charmer answered me with such an air of satisfaction, as shew'd she was pleas'd at what she heard. She spake but very little ; but I knew her so well, that I was highly delighted she approv'd of my caresses. Tho' her glances were very reserv'd, they yet were passionate ; every time she fix'd her eyes upon me, my heart was on fire, and I felt some emotion I had not before been sensible

to. She thank'd providence that I lov'd her as well as she wish'd I should; and assured me in the most modest manner, that in case I were really the man I endeavour'd to persuade her I was, we then should be an instance of a perfect passion; and, as far as lay in her power, of eternal constancy and fidelity.

A while after Mrs. *Riding* brought as joyful news. 'Twill neither, says she at her coming in, be my lord's fault nor mine, if you are not the happiest couple upon earth. You will be married before we leave *Bayonne*, and my lord assur'd me, that it would be as satisfactory to him as to either of you. She added, that he had waited upon the king, to desire his consent to our marriage, and to do something for me. My lord himself came a quarter of an hour after, and discover'd so much joy and satisfaction in his countenance, that I did not doubt but his Majesty had granted his request. The first testimonies he now gave me of his friendship, was his embracing and calling me his dear son: Then taking his Daughter and I by the hand, and carrying us to the king's apartment; I now, says he, present my two children to your Majesty. I can hardly say which is dearest to me; and 'tis in order that I may now be no longer oblig'd to make any difference between them, that I am resolv'd to unite them together so close, that they may henceforward be but one. The king told him, that he sympathized with us in the joy we felt, and as an instance of the esteem he had for me, he would begin by knighting me, which he did immediately with the usual ceremonies. This is the first step, says the king, as he was performing the ceremony; you are but young, and therefore I desire that the hopes of my raising you to greater honours, may, for some time, excite you to atchieve such actions as may make you worthy of them; and I give you my royal word, that your services shall be rewarded far beyond your expectations. My lord, says his majesty, has inform'd me that you intend to accompany him to the *West-Indies*. Go, and be assur'd that your king will remember you both. This prince had something so mild and engaging in his air and behaviour, as is rarely met with in a sovereign; and my lord was receiv'd daily with the highest testimonies of his esteem and confidence. He was so very impatient to set out for *Ameri-*

in order to serve his majesty, that he besought him to give leave that we might be married in his presence, in order that we might embark, before he left the city. The king granted his request, and appointed the next day for our marriage. Tho' 'twould have been impossible to have made very grand preparations for it in so short a time, yet his majesty and my lord would have had it solemniz'd in a splendid manner, had not heaven frown'd upon us, and disappointed all our hopes; but now I was going to see a new face of things, and fate had not declar'd itself, with regard to me, till this instant.

The reader has found by the foregoing account of my life, that it was not yet absolutely unhappy. Fortune indeed had persecuted me almost from my birth, but then I had not been very much affected by it. I had even almost made ill fortune habitual to me, till I began to be acquainted with my lord *Axminster*, whose company and friendship had made life very agreeable; but my love for his daughter had done still more, for it had made me happy. My marriage with her the next morning was going to complete my wishes. Thus I had no room to complain of what was past, as I found myself in such a state, as gave me a just reason to be joyful. How dark soever futurity might be, it yet would have been unjust in me to suspect it, since my happiness was now going to be establish'd on the most solid foundation. In a word, I was satisfied with my condition; my soul was at ease, or at least was sensible to nothing but the most delightful emotions.

Nevertheless, all this edifice of happiness and tranquillity, was an illusion of the fancy, which had rose by degrees, and was now to vanish away in an instant. My name was writ in the blackest page of the book of fate; and was followed by a multitude of dreadful sentences, which I was to submit to, one after another. My good genius had endeavour'd to get them repeal'd, but in vain; all it was able to do in eighteen years, was to suspend their execution. O heaven, who hast given me fortitude to bear up under them, endue me now with strength sufficient to recal them to my memory! 'Twas with the utmost struggles that I drove them from my imagination, while I was writing the first part of my life; but I find my

my sorrows return, and they now croud, as it were, under my pen, as the reader will find in the sequel.

BOOK III.

I AM now entering upon the relation of my numberless misfortunes; a relation that will draw tears from my eyes, as well as those of my readers. This reflection will administer some consolation to me as I write, since I shall excite the pity of the tender-hearted, whom I shall leave to judge of my distress. But I must intreat them not to judge so much of my grief from the appearances of it, as from what they themselves have felt; that is to say, that in case they find I possess a greater outward resolution and strength of mind in my affliction than they themselves could be capable of, I don't desire them to form an idea of me from those deceitful appearances. And indeed, the courage and unalterable constancy I discover'd throughout the whole series of my misfortunes, gave occasion to my being called the philosopher. 'Twas supposed, that my evenness of temper, and the apparent serenity of my mind, under the most cruel reverses of fortune, must be the effects of a more than ordinary virtue. These were honour'd with the name of philosophy; a pompous name, that has cost me dear; and certainly those who gave it me were unacquainted with the recesses of my heart. It must be confess'd, that I drew from philosophy all the succour it was capable of administering; it threw a light over all my undertakings, regulated my exterior behaviour, supported my prudence, furnished me with consolation against despair; but then, it cou'd never lessen my inward anguish, nor hinder me from proving, that a philosopher is always a man internally. I will now display the unhappy series of my adventures, whether tender or tragical; but all of them so sad and affecting, that I am persuaded they must excite the compassion of my readers.

The king having consented to my marriage, and my lord discovering as much eagerness as I did to have it completed, one would have thought that nothing could happen in four and twenty hours to traverse what was expected with so much pleasure. I spent part of the afternoon in discoursing with Miss *Fanny*, and the rest in reflecting on the unexpected good fortune which raised me in an instant to the highest felicity. However, at the same time that I thus gave myself up to the most delightful reflections, I yet kept such a guard upon my temper as sometimes to intermix some serious thoughts with them, to which a long habit of meditating had accustomed me. Now, said I to myself, all my desires, and the several plans I had laid down, are finished.

I wished that love might make me happy; the instant is now approaching in which I am to be so, and my heart is so agreeably fill'd, that I plainly perceive I had not proposed a false happiness to myself. But I had another object in view, and what was it? To labour incessantly to attain wisdom by study and reflection: I have not deviated from those paths on this occasion, and am resolved never to do it. But now my condition will be changed, and therefore I must govern myself by other maxims. Tho' wisdom be always the same, it yet assumes a different shape in the various stations of life. I have already had an opportunity of making remarks sufficient on that variety of conditions and duties, to form such a plan as may suit the station of life into which I am now going to enter. Let me endeavour to make love and wisdom go hand in hand, so far as this is possible; and thereupon I actually made, I don't say a series of occupations, for I cou'd not so far foresee what was to happen as to be certain that I should be at liberty to follow them; but a system of new principles, which I thought suited in general to the state into which I was then going to enter, and whereto I needed only apply as the different circumstances might require. I was in this serious turn of thought, when word was brought that my lord desired earnestly to speak with me.

'Twas *James* who brought me word of it, who appear'd with such an air of melancholy, as made me suppose he brought me ill news. He did not wait for my enquiring his message, but told me at once, that in case my marriage was not entirely broke off, it was at least suspended till we should be got to *Roan*, at the request of Mr. *Cleveland*, who had thrown himself at the king's feet, in order to beg it might be deferr'd; and humbly request-ed it as the greatest favour that cou'd be done him. This is all, says *James* to me, I've heard, but my lord will acquaint you further. Hearing this, I went immediately to his lordship, who seem'd vex'd and in a musing posture. Your grandfather, says he, as I came in, is a brute, and nothing but his advanced age, and the respect I have for his majesty, could have kept me from treating him as he deserves. At the same time he inform'd me, that Mr. *Cleveland* had reproach'd him with an air of contempt, for pretending to give his daughter to me in marriage, without acquainting him with it, and to carry me with him to *America*; that he had told him in a very rude manner, that 'twould be in vain for him to flatter himself with the hopes of doing it, since he had obtain'd orders from his majesty to the contrary; that he himself was come to acquaint me with them in the king's name, and to forbid him to think of marrying his daughter before he arriv'd at *Roan*, thro' which his majesty intended to pass in his way to *Flanders*, and whither we were ordered to follow him. Exasperated, says my lord, at his rude way of addressing me, I cou'd not forbear shewing some resentment upon that account, and gave him to understand, that your marrying into my family was far from being a dishonour. Upon this, he had the impudence to reproach me with my wife's unhappy adventure, with which I unthinkingly acquainted his majesty, who, as I suppose, let him into that secret. I must confess to you, continued the viscount, that had he not immediately left the room, after having insulted me in this manner, nothing in the world cou'd have check'd the violence of my sudden rage. However, I went no farther, after his leaving me, than barely to complain to the king of it, who order'd him to come and beg my pardon; which he did: But then he repeated the order he gave of suspending

your marriage, upon pretence that it might be done more conveniently at *Roan*; and that I shou'd afterwards meet with a ship in *Havre de Grace* which wou'd carry me nearer to our colonies in *America*, than that which is ready to set sail from *Bayonne*. My lord *Axminster* was afterwards so ingenuous as to own, that he had made a false step in proposing my marriage to the king without acquainting Mr. *Cleveland* with it first; and as he ascribed his opposition wholly to the anger with which he was enflamed to see himself despised, he assured me, with his usual tenderness, that for my sake he wou'd lay aside his resentments. He even advised me to reconcile myself to my grandfather by my submissive behaviour, well knowing that his favour wou'd be of the highest advantage to me.

Upon this advice I immediately waited upon him, when he reprimanded me very severely for using him so disrespectfully; and having set before me the duty and affection which I owed him as being his grandson, he afterwards declared to me, with a severe tone of voice, the authority which he, as my grandfather, had over both my person and conduct. I did not offer to argue with him in the least, but only took notice of the honour and advantage which wou'd accrue to me by marrying into my lord *Axminster's* family. We were very amicable till our departure; nor did he once give me the least hint of the cruel design he was then meditating.

As I had no reason to suspect any thing of that nature, I consol'd myself at my *Fanny's* feet, for the delay which prevented my enjoying the utmost of my wishes. My lord himself was so far from suspecting Mr. *Cleveland's* design, that he made no scruple of being reconciled, and treating him as a friend. We left *Bayonne*, and arrived at *Roan*, a moment after the king, who receiv'd the greatest honours in that city, and had a noble palace appointed for him to lodge in. My lord took up his quarters again at the same inn with us, which was a very great mortification to Mr. *Cleveland*, who supposed I should devote myself to him, and had even provided me an apartment in the king's palace. A report being immediately spread of our return with the prince, we were visited by my lord *Omerfon* and other friends, who thought they should
please

please me in congratulating me upon my being still so much in Mrs. *Lallin*'s favour. My lord *Omerfon* was very urgent with me to visit that lady immediately; but how did I surprize him, when I acquainted him with the engagements that were between Miss *Fanny* and myself, and the hopes I had of marrying her very quickly! There was no room to think that Mrs. *Lallin*, who undoubtedly had heard of my amour, would have still loved me, had they left her at liberty to reflect that my ingratitude to her made me unworthy of it; but her ill fate and mine made her listen too heedlessly to the destructive advice which was her ruin, and had like to have proved mine.

Mr. *Cleveland*'s real design in getting the king to put off our marriage, was purely that he might have an opportunity of breaking it off entirely; not but that he look'd upon my lord *Axminster*'s daughter as a very advantageous match for me, and consequently it must sooth his ambition; but he loved me so tenderly that he cou'd not bear the thoughts of my going into *America*. He consider'd me as the only surviving person of his family; and he was in so advanced an age, that he cou'd not hope to live till I return'd from that part of the world. He was absolutely determin'd to get me into the household, in order that I might be always near him; but he never communicated his design to me till the day after our arrival at *Roan*. I spoke in such terms as plainly shew'd I had the deepest sense of his affection, but afterwards express'd with so much warmth my engagements with my lord and Miss *Fanny*, as plainly shewed I should never give my consent to be disengaged from them. He was inform'd a little after of the passion Mrs. *Lallin* had for me, which was enough to make him attempt a new artifice, that succeeded but too well. He got himself introduced to her, and saying he was my grandfather, he thanked her for bestowing her affection on me. She did not disguise her thoughts at this overture, and even express some uneasiness to think I should slight her. Upon hearing which, my grandfather offer'd to use his endeavours to make me consider her charms in a duelight, and the value of her affection. He gave her to understand, that provided she would but lend him a little assistance, he had thought of a scheme which would infallibly disengage me.

me from her rival; for she had before heard that there was such a one, and that this was the cause of my coldness to her. He wrought so far on her mind, that after having persuaded her that her reputation would not suffer by it, and that he would let no one but the king of *England* into the secret, that he engaged her to feign I had promised her marriage, and beseech the king to employ his authority in order to force me to complete it. No one was let into the plot but my lord *Omerfon* and a few *English* gentlemen, who willingly join'd in it, as well from the remembrance of the many obligations they owed her, as that they were overjoyed to see her favour our nation so much. Mr. *Cleveland* was likewise so cunning as to get me to write my name upon a piece of paper that very day, upon some trifling pretence which I was not aware of, over which he drew a promise in due form; and this being done, he put the authentic instrument into Mrs. *Lallin's* hands.

In the mean time, I was urgent with my lord *Axminster* to have our marriage concluded; but he justly answer'd that as the king had forbid it, he did not dare to proceed so far without first obtaining his leave. This indeed was properly my business, and therefore I waited upon his majesty, who the moment he saw me guess'd what I was come about, and without making the least objection, told me that he gave me his consent, provided my lord *Axminster* and Mr. *Cleveland* approved it. I was afraid that the latter would not; which his majesty perceiving, told me he would send for him immediately, in order to know his resolution on that head. Mr. *Cleveland* appear'd, and was so far from refusing his consent, that he congratulated me on the loveliness of miss *Fanny's* person, at the same time calling her my bride. Hearing this, I left the apartment in an extasy of joy, and went and acquainted the viscount's family with the occasion of it. Some time after, an order was brought me to return to the palace. At my coming in, his majesty, who now wore a different aspect, held a paper in his hand. He bid me advance forward, and shewing me my name written at the bottom of it, he asked me, with an air of severity, whether 'twas my hand. It was impossible for me not to know it; upon which I answer'd that it really was,

was, but that I could not comprehend how it came into his majesty's hands. I suppose, says the king, that it surprizes you; however, your owning it is something. He afterwards asked me several questions concerning my intimacy with Mrs. *Lallin*, and the reasons which had induced me to abandon her, after having promised her marriage in so solemn a manner. I cou'd not answer clearly to these questions, which were so dark with regard to me; and my surprize resembled undoubtedly the confusion of a guilty person. The King was highly offended at my silence, which he considered as obstinacy; upon which he spoke to me in the most harsh terms, and order'd me to be arrested in his own palace. Mr. *Cleveland* came immediately and visited me in the chamber in which I was confin'd, when assuming an air of affliction, he asked me with an affected compassion, what I had done to displease his majesty. I told him all I could gather from a conversation the subject whereof I was utterly ignorant of; and 'twas here the cunning old gentleman employed all his rhetorick to bring matters about insensibly. After having pretended to reflect upon what I told him, he said that he conjectured what the affair was; that he had heard, since his arrival at *Roan*, of an instrument, by which 'twas said I had engaged myself to marry Mrs. *Lallin*; that some enemy of mine must have told the king of it; that I must know the truth of it all; but as for himself, he had not thought proper to inform me, till then, of what was publickly reported on that head; because as I was just upon the point of marrying miss *Fanny*, he fancied I had little or nothing to fear from Mrs. *Lallin*'s resentments; but that the face of things were now quite changed, since that lady had undoubtedly complained to the king of it; that as he was an upright prince, and jealous of his reputation in a foreign nation, he would never suffer a woman of Mrs. *Lallin*'s merit and quality to be betray'd and insulted with impunity by an *Englishman*; that tho' he were not prompted to this from a love of justice and glory, he yet would be obliged to exert himself upon this occasion, purely for the sake of a great number of his most distinguish'd subjects who had fled to *Roan* for refuge, and stood in need of the protection of the inhabitants of that city. In a word, continued Mr. *Cleveland*,

land, the more I consider this affair the uglier it appears, with regard to you. But now I think of it, says he, interrupting himself, a short expedient may be made use of on this occasion; an expedient that will be no ways dangerous with respect to you; and that is, to fulfil the promise you made Mrs. *Lallin*. By this means you'll come off with honour, will put a stop to her complaints, and make his majesty easy. Besides, she's so beautiful and wealthy a lady, that no gentleman need scruple to make her his wife. Let me, says he, embracing me, prevail with you to marry her. 'Twill be a much greater satisfaction to me to see you married in *Roan*, than for you to cross the seas, and ramble in an unknown country, whence we are not sure of ever returning again, but are certain of meeting with a thousand disasters.

I listened to Mr. *Cleveland* with the greatest attention, and he very possibly flattered himself that his arguments had made some impression on me; but my only view in this affair was to dive to the bottom of the black design that was going forward. The letter which the lord *Axminster* had received in *Bayonne* gave me a great light into this mysterious affair; and I easily discovered, that Mrs. *Lallin* had involved me in it purely from an excess of love, and in order to fix me wholly to her self. But a promise of marriage, sign'd with my own hand, was what I could not possibly comprehend. I had not the least suspicion of Mr. *Cleveland*; and he endeavour'd to prevent my entertaining any thing of that nature, by asking me a thousand questions with an air of the greatest sincerity; for the moment I had protested by oath, that the instrument which his majesty had was forged, and was never made by me; he asked me whether some letter which I had writ, and subscrib'd with my name, might not have been torn off with an ill design. I was certain I had never writ a letter in my whole life; and my warmth when I made this asseveration seemed to surprize him very much. Then, says he, somebody must certainly have counterfeited your hand: The *French* ladies are vastly cunning in their gallantry; but in a word, as no man would be more earnest than I, to dissuade you from marrying Mrs. *Lallin*, in case it would turn to your disadvantage; my opinion is, that considering your present circumstances,

circumstances, prudence will dictate to you to accept of her offers. I was so little affected with these reasons, that I did not once attempt to answer them, and only desir'd he wou'd give my lord *Axminster* notice of this unlucky affair. My discovering so much confidence for the viscount, and so little for him, exasperated him very much. He answer'd, that I judg'd like a heedless young fellow, and that I was greatly mistaken, if I fancied that this nobleman could preserve the least esteem for me, and persist in the design of giving me his daughter, when he heard of the affair between Mrs. *Lallin* and me. Be assur'd, says he, that whatever may be the result of it, 'tis a blot that will for ever exclude you from the hopes of marrying miss *Fanny*; and this reason, continued Mr. *Cleveland*, with a kind of indifference, is one of the strongest which prompted me to tell you, that you ought for your own sake to embrace the happy opportunity which Mrs. *Lallin* is so good as to indulge to you.

This malicious reflection made the deepest impression upon me, for I found it but too well grounded, when beginning to consider the unhappy accident which had befallen me, as the ruin of my love, I was immediately struck with the deepest sensations of grief. My cruel grandfather was overjoy'd to see his tenderness and affection produce so strange an effect; he had then brought me to that frame of mind he desir'd; that is to say, made me almost dead to the hopes of ever enjoying my dear *Fanny*, and the confidence I had in my lord *Axminster*'s friendship. This he perceiv'd, and thereupon was so barbarous as to leave me immediately, on purpose to give the poison time to work, and spread with all its virulence. I conjur'd him at his leaving me, not to forget acquainting my lord *Axminster* with my confinement, which he promised to do; but then the manner he did it in prov'd fatal to me, and was the most dangerous of all his artifices.

I continued alone, oppress'd with inexpressible grief, and figur'd to myself the great astonishment my lord and miss *Fanny* would be in, when they were told the false reasons of his majesty's displeasure, and of my confinement. I must naturally expect they would both hate and despise me. What a disadvantageous idea must they form to themselves with regard to my character! I had been
so

so happy as to persuade them of my innocence in *Bayonne*, but this last accident reviv'd the former, and they would now believe me capable, not only of imposing upon them, but of heightening my knavery with perjury and hypocrisy: I was therefore upon the point of losing what I valued most dear, his lordship's esteem and miss *Fanny's* love. I lost them by a horrid piece of treachery, which at the same time destroy'd my reputation, and to add to my unhappiness, I was not allow'd to defend and clear myself; and indeed, my enemies employ'd all those moments I spent in tears in endeavouring to ruin me. Mr. *Cleveland* waited upon my lord *Axminster* the instant after he left me, but did not inform him of my misfortune, he knowing it before, when finding that he could scarce prevail with himself to think me guilty, he employ'd every argument to destroy those kind inclinations which still pleaded in my favour. He pretended that 'twas with grief he told his lordship, he was but too firmly persuaded I was guilty of the odious cheat that was laid to my charge. He confess'd to his lordship, that he thought himself obliged to make some excuses to him on that head, and that this was the only motive of his waiting upon him. He seem'd astonish'd to think that a man of my years, and with so fair an outside of honour and integrity, could be capable of acting so vile a part. I could never have believ'd it, says he, in opening the instrument which he had got out of the king's hands, were it not sign'd by himself. Here 'tis; and indeed he has not assurance enough to deny his own hand writing. A circumstance which comforts me is, that he seems willing to comply with his majesty's commands, who is determin'd to force him to perform the contract.

My lord was a man of sense and experience, who had reproach'd me a hundred times for my credulity, and had even lessen'd it, by strongly inculcating to me the depravity of mankind, and the suspicion which a prudent man who lives in the world ought to guard himself with. However, he was impos'd upon by my enemies and his own: The accusation appear'd to him so well grounded, that he even did not so much as desire to see me, in order to enquire into it. He knew that Mrs. *Lallin* had complain'd to the king, and had left the contract in his hands;

he

he saw it in Mr. *Cleveland's* possession, and he knew my hand, which alone was more than enough to persuade him fully of my guilt. He now consider'd me only as an ungrateful and perfidious Wretch, and thought that the best Way of revenging himself would be to abandon me entirely, and to enjoin his daughter to forget me for ever. As the sole motive of his stay at *Roan* was in order to see her married to me, he resolv'd to leave it the moment he heard a vessel was ready. For that purpose, he sent immediately to *Havre de Grace*, and a ship happening to lie there, which was to sail in five or six days for *Martinico*, he resolv'd to go on board her. He took but a very short leave, and was invested with the title of governor-general of the *English* colonies in *America*, and having received the last orders from his majesty, he set sail with his daughter and Mrs. *Riding*. His retinue consisted only of his servants, and five or six *English* gentlemen, who had left their native country, and followed his fortune.

Whilst my ill star was thus preparing the most tormenting subjects of anxiety, Mr. *Cleveland* chang'd his behaviour to me, and the place of my confinement; the constancy with which he saw I lov'd my *Fanny* making him apprehensive that I should endeavour to elope, and afterwards find out expedients to clear myself to my lord *Axminster*; he had therefore thought proper to remove me to a stronger place, not only to prevent my escaping, but even to keep me in the dark as to my lord's and his daughter's departure. He had in all probability taken this resolution in concert with Mrs. *Lallin*, since her house was made my prison. He easily prevail'd with the king to leave me entirely to his disposal. A weakness which cleav'd to his majesty so long as he liv'd, was to let himself be almost entirely govern'd by those who had once gain'd an ascendant over him. I was therefore carried that evening to Mrs. *Lallin's* house, and confin'd a close prisoner, and I was convey'd with so much privacy, that 'twas impossible for me to know where I was. There I met with handsome and even splendid treatment; but no person was admitted to me for some days, except Mr. *Cleveland*, who us'd to come and spend part of the afternoons with me. I conjur'd him over and over to tell me what this unaccountable procedure would end in, or

at

at least, to let me know how matters stood with my lord *Axminster* and Miss *Fanny*. To the first question he answer'd, that they only obey'd the king's orders, and he had not yet been able to know directly what the king intended to do in the affair. That with regard to my lord and his daughter he assur'd me, as he had done the first day of my confinement, that I could not justly flatter myself any longer with the hopes of becoming his son-in-law. However, notwithstanding the inexpressible uneasiness which the continual repetition of this answer gave me, I yet had some little hopes left: I was sensible of his lordship's goodness, and relied strongly on his daughter's tenderness. There was no room to suppose that I should be imprison'd for life; and I only wish'd for a moment's liberty, in order to go and undeceive those two persons for whom I had the highest value. I flatter'd myself with the hopes that my innocence would triumph over all Mrs. *Lallin*'s arts; for hitherto I had suspected her only; and was so far from harbouring the least suspicion with regard to Mr. *Cleveland*, and being moreover persuaded that he had the highest value for me, I imagin'd he was very near as much troubled at my confinement as I was myself.

But now the mistake I was under was going to clear up: Mr. *Cleveland* came and told me the day my lord *Axminster* was to leave *France*: A fatal day! whence I ought to date the beginning of my deplorable adventures. I was revolving the most gloomy thoughts in my mind, when Mr. *Cleveland* came in with such an air of satisfaction, as made me flatter myself that he brought good news. You shall, says he, enjoy your liberty whenever you think proper; his majesty consents to it, because he now hopes that, as my lord *Axminster* and his daughter are gone for *America*, you'll no longer scruple to marry Mrs. *Lallin*. He was going to embrace me as usual, but did not perceive that this dreadful relation depriv'd me of all my faculties, and that I was hardly able to support myself. Alas! says I, in a quite different tone, let me alone; don't you perceive that you've cruelly kill'd me, and that I can scarce breathe! and indeed I turn'd so pale, that he thought I was going to faint away: However, I refus'd the assistance he offer'd me, and cry'd, as I push'd him from me, let me alone; I hate every thing that would keep me from

from dying. If my lord and *Fanny* are gone, I've then quite lost their esteem and affection, two blessings I cannot possibly outlive, upon which, I sat down, and would neither look upon, nor hear him speak.

His tenderness for me, which was beyond all expression, was truly alarm'd, when he found me obstinately silent, and in such a posture as made him doubt whether my life were not in danger. He call'd the servants immediately to my assistance, when Mrs. *Lallin* came running in before any of them appear'd. If all my faculties were before suspended, I recover'd them the instant I saw her, when I broke into the most injurious reproaches, and call'd her by all the odious names I could think of. She had a real affection for me, and I am obliged to own, that tho' she had been so weak as to second Mr. *Cleveland's* design, she nevertheless was generous and equitable. She was so strongly affected with my reproaches, that bursting into a flood of tears, she turn'd about to my grandfather, and exclaim'd bitterly at the scandalous affair he had engag'd her in. Her complaints, and the excuses she made me, let me into the whole artifice; and 'twas here that being then more certain than ever of my ruin, of my being betray'd and despis'd by my lord *Axminster*, and abandon'd by my dear *Fanny*, that I fainted away at Mrs. *Lallin's* feet.

This shock'd her so much, that after having used all her endeavours to revive me, she desir'd Mr. *Cleveland* to leave her house, and never to set his foot in it any more. He thought himself obliged to submit for a moment, and accordingly went away, and left me alone with her: But now the tears which stream'd from her eyes, and her tender excuses, persuaded me that she repented of what she had done. Alas! said I, I forgive you, and I see but too plainly that you were seduc'd to be instrumental to my ruin; but if you have really done this, there is yet a way left for you to make me forget the injury I have received at your hands, which is, to procure me the liberty of leaving this city. I am now in your house, as I may easily judge by the words you just now spoke to Mr. *Cleveland*: Open the door to me, and then, so far from considering you as my enemy, I shall think I owe my life to your goodness. She might naturally suppose that I wish-
ed

ed to be releas'd, only that I might be at liberty to follow my lord *Axminster* and his daughter. But as my flight interfer'd so much with the passion she had for me; she answer'd with downcast eyes, that she expected I should have made a quite different return for the great regret she had shewn for giving me so much uneasiness; that indeed she had been made to act a part quite opposite to her character and inclination, in being drawn into the cruel plot which had occasioned my confinement; however, that she could not repent she had torn me from a rival who had never lov'd me so tenderly as her self; that as neither her person nor her fortune were contemptible, she offer'd me both of them, and was persuaded, that when once I should be acquainted with the inward recesses of her heart, I should not repent of my conquest over it. She heighten'd these words with a thousand tender glances, and with all that a modest woman can employ to move the breast of the man she loves. My temper was such, that this ingenuous freedom was more capable of making an impression on my heart than all the arts of cunning and deceit. I told her this without the least disguise; assur'd her that I would again esteem her, and that were I free, I should very probably have been sensible to emotions of a more tender nature. But, said I, I idolize this rival you would supplant: I had the happiness of being dear to her, and 'tis you have torn me from her heart; nothing shall prevent my flying after her, to justify myself to the dear creature, and die at her feet. If you, said I again, are tender and generous, indulge me that liberty; this is the only testimony I desire of your affection; or that I can be sensible of. After reflecting a moment on this proposal, I cannot, says she, let you go away in the condition you are now in; you are in want of every thing, and I love you too well to see you set out without those things which will be necessary for your voyage. Give me leave, says she, now to make you an offer: Let me go along with you; I'll sell my estate and thence raise a sum that will make you happy, in what part soever of the world you may happen to be cast. Struck with so extraordinary a proposal, I discover'd the utmost astonishment at it: Alas! says I, what hopes would you thence feed yourself with? Do you, madam, con-

consider that 'twill be impossible for me ever to be yours, and that you'd certainly undertake the voyage to no purpose? She protested that she only desir'd to go along with me: However, don't think, says she, but that I have some reasons to make you this odd offer. There are two very strong ones, abstracted from the love I have for you; one is, the loss of my reputation, which it will be impossible for me ever to recover, except I marry you; for notwithstanding the solemn promises which Mr. *Cleveland* made me, the whole city is inform'd of the steps I have taken (by his persuation) to break off your marriage with my lord *Axminster's* daughter; and 'tis known that you are now actually confin'd in my house, tho' I took the utmost care to prevent it. I am now become the jest of all companies; but this I look'd upon as a trifle so long as I had hopes of being yours; marriage would have wip'd off the stain; but if you absolutely refuse to consent to it, it will be impossible for me to live any longer in this city, where I am certainly dishonour'd to all intents and purposes. Another reason, says she, which is equally strong, is, my brother's continual threats; he is highly exasperated against me, ever since he suspected I betray'd him, and would have quite dispatch'd me, had he not thought the wound he gave me before his setting out mortal: He has heard of my recovery, and the close correspondence I have since carried on with his enemies. I receive letters every post from him, full of the most cutting reproaches, and the most dreadful oaths, by which he protests he'll one day or other kill me with his own hand. I know his temper, and that he is capable of perpetrating so cruel an action; and I don't doubt but he'll be doubly enrag'd when he hears of this last adventure: I am therefore, says she, equally oblig'd, for the sake of my honour, and the safety of my own life, to leave *Roan*. With whom then can I fly with greater pleasure than with you? In case my tenderness and assiduity should be able to gain me your heart, 'twill be happy for me that I followed you, and you will then grant me what you refuse me here. On the other side, if you still continue constant to my lord *Axminster's* daughter, let me yet go with you to her; I'll prove your innocence to that happy woman, and then I hope the service I shall have done
you

you will engage her father to protect me. After saying this, she desir'd me to give her my opinion of the matter.

'Tis certain, that how extravagant soever this proposal seem'd at first, it now appear'd in a quite different light: My own interest seem'd to require I should consent to it; for she had reason to observe that I was unprovided with every thing: Mr. *Cleveland* was the only person from whom I could expect the several things necessary for this voyage, and 'tis plain I could not hope for any assistance from him on this occasion. However, the view of furnishing myself with necessaries, was not barely sufficient to prompt me to accept of Mrs. *Lallin's* offer; for I foresaw that the advantage I might reap, with regard to her clearing me to my lord and Miss *Fanny*, would not perhaps balance the ill effect her presence might occasion, as it would make them think she had follow'd me purely out of love. I made this objection to her, but she answer'd it only by her tears, and by representing to me that so weak a reason should not make me refuse to indulge her a favour which would at once secure both her happiness and her life. I granted her request, and heaven is witness that I was not prompted to consent to it from any other motives than those of humanity and tenderness, which melted me at the sight of her misfortunes, and made me wish I could assist all the unfortunate.

The only thing now to be done was, to raise a sum of money, and to keep our departure a secret. Mrs. *Lallin* told me, that in a city like *Rouen* she could in an hour's time turn all her estate into ready money. And indeed, she went out that moment, and got bills to the value of an hundred thousand crowns. She did not wrong any person by this, since she made over to them lands of a much greater value. She spent the rest of the day in privately getting a coach for us, in order to go to the port, where we flatter'd ourselves we should find a vessel just ready to set sail. She entrusted no one with this secret but a man and maid-servant of her's; and we propos'd to set out the next night. Mr. *Cleveland* came and visited me that day, tho' Mrs. *Lallin* had desir'd never to see him more: He was surpriz'd to see me more chearful than usual; and as he had left me a few hours before alone with Mrs. *Lallin*, he imputed this alteration to the conversation I had had with her;

her; when imagining that she possibly had made some conquest over my heart, it pleas'd him so much, that he promis'd to procure me my liberty the next morning. Before he left me, I artfully enquir'd of him the course my lord *Axminster* had taken, and where the king had order'd him to make the first attempt. He told me, that his lordship was gone directly for *Martinico*, he not meeting with a vessel that could carry him to any place nearer our colonies; from thence he was to go to *Jamaica*, or *New-England*, as opportunity might offer for his making for either of those places with ease and expedition.

Night being come, and Mrs. *Lallin* being equally free with myself, we left the house, bringing away several trunks, and our two servants, and went on foot to the city gate, where the coach was waiting for us. We arriv'd happily at the port by four in the morning: I immediately enquir'd for a vessel that was ready to sail for the *American* islands, and was told that the last which was to make the voyage that year had set sail some days before, which was that my lord *Axminster* was gone a-board of. We consider'd whether we should go to *Rochel*, when some *English* people, who happen'd to be in the port, advis'd us, as the safest and most expeditious way, to go for *England*, and told us we should not fail meeting with a vessel for our purpose, ships being continually going out of the *Thames* for those parts. Mrs. *Lallin* was afraid lest her brother should discover her, and I too had my own apprehensions. However, as we had the greatest danger to fear from *France*, we embark'd on board the first ship that sail'd for *England*, where we arriv'd in less than eight and forty hours; and, by the most happy turn of fortune, as we thought, met, just as we were going to land, with a man of war that was then setting sail for *Jamaica*, and accordingly we went on board without going ashore. The captain was mightily pleas'd to take us in, as we appear'd to be persons of some distinction. In four days we lost sight of *Europe*.

I must confess, that in the midst of my anxiety, 'twas yet a great pleasure to me to think that I was daily coming nearer to my dear miss *Fanny*, and did not for some time reflect that both my lord and his amiable daughter were exasperated against me to such a degree, that they had left

Europe

Europe without taking the least notice of me. So far from considering this circumstance, I fancied that we should be equally delighted to see each other, and that the pleasure of finding me follow them to *America*, would restore me to their love and esteem. I mention this short-liv'd joy, and which too was purely ideal, because 'tis the last I ever tasted that was unembitter'd with sorrow; for now my misfortunes were begun, and if heaven was to change them, 'twas only to make them still more grievous: If it had yet any pleasure in store for me, it was to be turn'd to sorrow; and from an odd turn of fate, so unaccountable a felicity awaited me as was destin'd to plunge me into the deepest distresses; a felicity that could not be extreme without being accompanied with insupportable torments.

The first days on board the ship were spent in getting acquaintance. I became very intimate with the captain, whose name was Mr. *John Wills*, who appear'd to be a man of great honour and generosity, two circumstances which above all others were most capable of making me esteem him. I studied him before I admitted him to an intimate familiarity, and was persuaded, after I had followed all the maxims that prudence suggested on this occasion, that I might chuse him for my friend. I never could be brought to believe, even after he had acted a most vile part; that I was mistaken in my judgment, and that he was naturally a villain. When I first became acquainted with him he was an upright and sincere man, and this I am still persuaded of; but into what iniquity will not our passions lead us when we abandon ourselves blindly to their conduct! He betray'd me, he expos'd me to inexpressible misfortunes, and yet I have such an ascendant over my resentments, that I forgive him. He abus'd my confidence, to ruin the most amiable man living; a man who was my dearest friend. I have left heaven to revenge the injury that was done me, but cannot forbear wishing to see its vengeance break forth.

We had soon contracted so strict an intimacy, that all the time I did not employ in reading or conversing with Mrs. *Lallin*, I spent with him. He reveal'd to me the most hidden recesses of his heart: All his affairs, not excepting those of his family concerns, his pleasures and his pains,

pains, were lodg'd in my bosom, as in the sanctuary of friendship. I did not at first open myself to him with so little reserve, not having forgot my lord *Axminster's* precepts, nor the things I had lately experienc'd. However, finding him to be of a serious and solid turn of mind, I did not scruple, after we had been on board a few weeks, to inform him who I was, and to let him into part of my story. He received the secrets I entrusted him with as I had done his, that is, in seeming strongly affected with what I told him, and in repeating his assurance of loving me as long as he liv'd. Hitherto I had let him into those particulars of my life in which I myself only was concern'd, but had not once open'd my lips either about my lord *Axminster* or Mrs. *Lallin*, well knowing that a man of honour is to make a wide difference between his own secrets and those of his friends. But as it was impossible but my father must sometimes be mention'd in conversation, he was so far from appearing a zealous stickler for the *Protector*, that he on the contrary seem'd to deplore, with all good *Englishmen*, the miseries of our unhappy country. I was pleased to find in him these sentiments; and after a greater familiarity had confirm'd me in the good opinion I had entertain'd of him, I imagin'd it might be possible for me to win him over to king *Charles's* interest, and consequently those of my lord *Axminster*; and my first overtures prov'd so successful, that I did not doubt but I had made an entire conquest. I told him the secret of my lord's voyage, upon his giving me his word and oath that he would never reveal it, and he engag'd to get into his lordship's acquaintance as soon as he should meet with an opportunity: His person, his ship, in short, every thing he had in the world should be at my lord's service, and he even wish'd he could go and take him in at *Martinico*; and said he would have done it, had he not been afraid 'twould prejudice the king's affairs, which he now began to consider as his own. But having no pretence to go so far out of his course, he resolv'd, in concert with me, that in case the viscount did not go immediately for *Jamaica*, we then would fit out a vessel from that island under a shew of trade, which should take his lordship in, and bring him to us. I again repeat, that captain *Wills* was sincere in his resolutions, and therefore,

tho' the confidence I plac'd in him prov'd unlucky, it yet was neither light or imprudent.

All this time Mrs. *Lallin* seem'd very easy, and my esteem for her was very much increased, from the time of our becoming associates in distress. I admir'd her wit, her complacency and politeness; and notwithstanding she lov'd me as dearly as ever, she now thought the utmost she cou'd hope for from me was my friendship and respect. I had so often assur'd her that I shou'd for ever love my lord *Axminster's* daughter, that she seem'd to have resign'd all her pretensions to me, and discover'd her passion no otherwise, than by her continual assiduity and complaisance; in a word, she observ'd the promise she had made me at *Roan* to a tittle. She had appear'd lovely in the eyes of captain *Wills*; and indeed, she was too beautiful for a mariner. Perhaps he thought so at first; for he had hitherto behav'd in the most respectful manner, and we united our endeavours to teach Mrs. *Lallin* *English*, which she wou'd absolutely want in *Jamaica*. But now his familiarity growing insensibly into passion, his behaviour, with regard to her, was so chang'd, that she one day was forced to complain to me about it. I had now so high a value for Mrs. *Lallin* that I wou'd have run all hazards to secure her from an insult, and therefore mention'd the affair very seriously to captain *Wills*, who did not seem to take umbrage at what I said, but turn'd certain not altogether decent expressions he made use of, in to raillery; and assuring me that he had the highest esteem for her, he behav'd for some days with greater reserve. However, at the same time that he seem'd to act more cautiously with regard to her, he grew more cool to me. Mrs. *Lallin* told me one day, with tears in her eyes, that captain *Wills* had been very inquisitive with regard to the strict intimacy he observ'd to be between us; and that she having told him I was her nephew, as had been agreed upon between us at our going on board, he shook his head, and told her that he knew a great many relations, who, in reality, were as little so as Mrs. *Lallin* and I; and that in case she were my aunt in that sense, he hoped she wou'd at least be so good as to become his cousin. He has, says she, since repeated his insolence, and gave me to understand that every woman who ventures her self

on board a ship, ought to indulge some favours to the captain.

I cou'd not comprehend how it was possible for a man who appear'd so generous and polite, to forget himself so far, and therefore hinted it to him a second time. He had scarce patience to hear me out, but bluntly told me, that I had for some time given my self such airs as though I were master of the ship, but that I shou'd do well to remember that he was mine. My master! says I to him, no, captain *Wills*, you are my friend; you are a man of honour, whom I sincerely love and respect; but then I must desire you to consider, that you have no authority over either my aunt or me. I had no sooner spoke these words, but he left me, without once opening his lips. As for my self, I behaved towards him as before; but it was easy to be perceiv'd by his sullenness and continual musing, that he was meditating upon something very particular.

We had now been about six weeks at sea, and so far from meeting with tempestuous weather, we had been becalm'd for near a fortnight, which had retarded our course very much. One morning we spy'd a sail, crossing just by us, within cannon shot. She bore *English* colours, and our captain seeing her veer'd the sails, in order to go on board her. Coming up with her that instant, he order'd the long-boat to be put out; upon which I offer'd to wait upon him, but he refus'd. I imagin'd that he only wanted to enquire how things stood in those seas, and whither the other captain was bound. He did not stay above a quarter of an hour on board, when I saw him return with some persons from the other ship; and these I suppos'd to be some of his countrymen, whom he was bringing on board his own vessel by way of compliment. They got into the ship, and the first thing captain *Wills* did, was to take me by the collar, and cry, that he arrested me in the protector's name, and that of the parliament. Immediately he gave orders for my being bound, at which I was so surpriz'd that I cou'd not speak a single word. And this being done, I was that instant put into the long-boat, and carried on board the other ship. This was done so suddenly, that I had scarce time to see Mrs. *Lallin*, who held out her hands to me, and

broke into the most lamentable cries at the sight, and at the same time to think of what would become of her.

I was immediately put down into the hold, where I was left bound. I continued alone till the two ships had weigh'd anchor. 'Twas manifest that captain *Wills* was a villain; who had deliver'd me up as an enemy to the protector; and that his love for Mrs. *Lallin* had prompted him to this vile action. The first emotions of my compassion arose for that unhappy lady. How unhappy, said I, must she be, to see herself under the absolute command of a wretch who has perpetrated so black an action! I invoc'd heaven, which alone was able to protect her. I had not voluntarily contributed to her misfortunes; but then I was forced to confess that I was the first cause of them. She wou'd have lived peaceably in *Roan*, had she never known me; or at least, she wou'd not have expos'd herself to dangers upon the sea, which probably were now impending. My obligations to her gave me as much uneasiness as cou'd have rose from remorse, had I really been the cause of her ruin.

But now what must I, whose thoughts were thus employ'd in bewailing the ill fate of others, think of myself? I was betray'd by a perfidious wretch; into whose hands he had deliver'd me. My chains plainly shew'd I was look'd upon as a traitor; and I had reason to believe that I was to be carried to *England*. I suppos'd that the ship I was on board of was bound for those parts, and that the perfidious *Wills*, had given the captain such instructions as would complete my ruin. I expected death, and what was much more grievous, that I should never be able to recover my lord *Axminster's* esteem, and my ever dear Miss *Fanny's* love, before that fatal day happen'd. They'll never, said I, hear of this sad catastrophe, and in case they do, they won't pity me. How can I flatter myself so far as to think they'll ever be inform'd of my innocence! How cruel soever these reflections might be, they yet were infinitely less grievous than that which arose a moment after in my mind. I consider'd, that *Wills's* treachery wou'd not extend barely to me; and that a villain being always completely so, he would certainly involve my lord *Axminster* in my ruin. This thought rush'd in so suddenly upon my mind, and in so dreadful a shape,
that

that it caused a kind of silence in my soul, and damp'd all my faculties. I was fix'd in such deep astonishment that I was altogether immoveable. O abominable crime! O deep affliction! cry'd I; I've betray'd my dear patron, my father, my benefactor; I've betray'd my adorable *Fanny*, Mrs. *Riding*; the only persons upon earth I ought to love and respect. My indiscreet conduct will cost them their lives. Alas! 'tis I only who now deserve death; if it be not to atone for my guilt, at least let me die to remove my shame and infamy from my own eyes. I continued above a quarter of an hour in this dreadful anxiety, and even hated my self. I wished to be at *London*, and that the executioner was putting an end to all my misfortunes. Nor indeed was it possible for any man's fate to be more wretched than mine: I was expos'd a third time to be accused of perfidy, a thing my very nature abhor'd. My false or involuntary crimes produced the same effect as tho' they were real ones, and had been perpetrated design'dly. The most inveterate enemy the viscount and his daughter had in the world cou'd not have ruin'd them more effectually than I had done. And yet what in the world cou'd be more dear and valuable to me than those two amiable persons? For whom cou'd I with so much pleasure have laid down my life as for them? The one had us'd me with the tenderness of a father, and the other was the idol of my heart. Alas! there once was a time when I was allowed to think I was dear to them.

I know not whither those dreadful reflections wou'd have carried me, had not the captain visit'd me about an hour after they had weigh'd anchor, and the ship was steering her course. At his coming down, he told me he had been very impatient to hear from my own mouth whether those things which captain *Wills* accused me of were true or no. Don't be dejected, says he, you've fallen into better hands than you imagine; but here I desire you to be sincere in what I wou'd know from you. A request made with so much warmth, put me into a fresh dilemma. I was afraid he wou'd be angry in case I did not inform him of every particular which the treacherous captain *Wills* might have let him into; and I was still more perplex'd, lest in my endeavours to gratify him I should discover several circumstances with regard to my lord *Ax-*

minster and my self, which *Wills* might possibly not have told him. I observ'd indeed in his countenance, and the tone of his voice, something vastly engaging, which seem'd to speak him a man of honour; but how cou'd I hence-forwards rely on outside and shew, after having been so vilely betray'd by captain *Wills*? I reflected on those circumstances almost at one and the same time, when I resolv'd to be sincere even in the most minute circumstances which related to myself, and not once to mention my lord *Axminster* or his designs, unless the questions he ask'd me might force me to it. I begun by telling him plainly, that I was *Oliver's* son, but an unhappy one, whom my father had refus'd to own, and even abandoned before my birth. I set his cruelty in the strongest light, to justify an aversion which was as natural in me as tenderness is in other sons. I related my mother's misfortunes to him, and her melancholy end; and as my heart had not been able to recover from the grief with which it was seiz'd a moment before, the remembrance of my dear mother melted me so much that I burst into tears. I interrupted my relation to wipe them away, and afterwards raising my eyes to the captain, I was surpriz'd to perceive that he himself cry'd as he look'd at me. I ascrib'd his tears to his compassion. May heaven, says I, reward that generous pity which makes you take so great a share in my pains! I was going to resume my story; stop, amiable young man, says he, with a voice interrupted by sighs, stop. Let me first take off these manacles which suit ill with your hands; I'm heartily sorry you have worn them so long. Saying this, he himself took them off, and taking me by the hand, he led me into his own cabbin, and when he shut the door, set me down by him.

He appear'd absent in thought, and fix'd his eyes stedfastly upon me for some moments. His sighs plainly reveal'd his inward anxiety. Acquaint me, says he, more fully with your story, and by what caprice of fortune the first stages of your life happen'd to bear so great a resemblance to those of mine. You are *Oliver's* son, you say, but what was the name of your mother, who suffer'd so much from your father's cruelty and injustice? I answer'd that her name was *Cleveland*. Alas! says he, I never heard of it. You won't wonder at it when I in-

form

form you in what manner I was brought up. But surely you cannot but have heard of *Molly Bridge* and her unhappy son. My astonishment, and the answer I made, gave him immediately to understand that I was inform'd both of his name and misfortunes. *Molly Bridge*, says I, that lived in *Runney-marsh*, and was brought up by Mrs. *Riding*! you see him before you, says he, embracing me tenderly; I am he. I took him in my arms, dear captain *Bridge* said I, how good is heaven to me, in making me find a friend in the very man to whom I was deliver'd as an enemy! How are the black designs of that villain *Wills* now frustrated! But I must beg you to inform me how it is possible for you to be alive, since Mrs. *Riding* believ'd you dead, and so often told me your sad story? He promis'd to inform me how heaven had wrought a miracle in his favour; but rejoice at it, says he, only as I am this day so happy as to be of service to you, for life is now so great a burden to me, that I cannot look upon my being preserv'd as a happiness.

He then press'd me to acquaint him with the present state of my affairs, and the reason why captain *Wills* had put me into his hands, in order to be carried to *England*, and deliver'd up to *Oliver*. I related in few words my strict intimacy with my lord *Axminster*, and the motives which had engaged me to follow him to *America*. I told him that the nobleman abovemention'd had orders from the king to engage the colonies, if possible, to return to their allegiance; that as I was a true royalist, I had endeavour'd to gain over captain *Wills* to that party, and had met with success; but that his violent affection for a lady who was under my protection had drawn upon me his utmost hatred, and prompted him to treachery. I afterwards let him into Mrs. *Lallin*'s character, and the numberless obligations I ow'd her; which inspir'd him with such an aversion for captain *Wills*, that he immediately told me he was very sorry his ship was not in a condition to attack a man of war. This declaration gave me the utmost pain, for my only aim in telling him this circumstance, was in order to engage him to rescue Mrs. *Lallin*. I even was again urgent with him to attempt something for her sake; but telling me that he had no cannon on board, tho' his vessel was intended for a thirty gun ship, and had

but few small arms, all I cou'd then do was to bewail the fate of that unfortunate woman, and pray to heaven for her deliverance. Providence was so good as to indulge in some measure my request. The bad condition of my brother's ship made me still more curious to know his adventures, and whither he was bound; which he related as follows.

I shall not repeat the particulars of my first misfortunes, and those of my mother, since Mrs. *Riding* has inform'd you of them; but shall date my relation from the last visit I made our father, or rather tyrant. I was so silly as to persuade myself, notwithstanding what Mrs. *Riding* inculcated to the contrary, that it was impossible for a parent to suppress all the tender sensations of nature. I thought he cou'd not be justly accused of my mother's unfortunate death; and supposing he had had any share in it, I did not think this cou'd dispense me sufficiently from paying him the duties which as a son I ow'd him; nor hinder me from expecting to be treated by him with a paternal indulgence. I even expected, that the resolution I had taken of visiting him privately, before I told publickly how nearly I was related to him, wou'd prejudice him in my favour. Upon this supposition, I waited on him; and pretending that I had a secret to communicate, I was immediately introduced. He was alone, and I was going to throw myself at his feet, when my eagerness to do it made him fancy that I had a design upon his life; upon which he call'd for his guards, and commanded them to seize me. He made them search me in his presence, to see whether I had any arms about me; a ceremony I had submitted to before I was admitted into his apartment. Finding all was safe, he order'd the guards to withdraw; and I went up to him a second time, in order to throw myself at his feet, when I told him with a modest assurance, the motives which had prompted me to address him. No sooner had I mention'd my mother's name, but I plainly perceiv'd by his countenance that it gave him great uneasiness. He threw his eyes round to see if no one had heard me; when coming up to me, and taking me by the arm, Wretch! says he, thou deservest death for presuming to act so villainous a part. As thou art young I forgive thee, but will know who has seduc'd thee.

In

In the mean time, beware how thou informest any person of the affront thou hast put upon me, as thou wishest not to die in the midst of torments. He call'd his guards a second time, and commanded a party of them to carry me to the strongest prison in the city. I trembled when I left the apartments, for his eyes, and the tone of his voice terrified me no less than his threats.

At my first coming into goal, I was left in one of the common rooms of it; but scarce had I been there an hour, when a fresh order came for my being confin'd in one of its darkest dungeons, where I was left some hours without seeing one human creature. The little sustenance that was allowed me was let down by a rope through a hole in the ceiling. I expected death every moment, tho' I was conscious of my innocence, and had certainly nothing to reproach myself with. Brute creatures, said I to myself, in the bitterness of my soul; savage beasts are tender to their young, and I am son to a man who condemns me cruelly to die, because I dare presume to call him father! I recollected Mrs. *Riding's* advice, and reproach'd myself for being so presumptuously silly as to neglect it. I invok'd my mother's ghost to my assistance, and with tears begg'd her to pardon me for not taking warning by her untimely end. In fine, after having spent a week in this miserable place, I was taken out of it, and carried into a large room, where two persons, who appear'd to be men of distinction, were waiting for me. They enquir'd very artfully where I had been brought up, and the persons who had taken care of my education. I had too great a soul to betray Mrs. *Riding*. They judg'd by my obstinate silence, and my resolution when they threaten'd me, that 'twould be but lost labour to urge me farther. I suppose they had orders only to frighten me: One of them told me that I should immediately be set at liberty, and that the protector was so gracious as to give me life; but that in case I presum'd to repeat the insult to his highness, I might expect the most dreadful punishment that could possibly be inflicted; but they neither told me my crime, nor the outrage I had committed in regard to the lord protector.

But now I was taken out of prison: The liberty with which I had been flatter'd was, my being carried immedi-

ately on board a ship which was going to sail forthwith for *Nevis*, where a colony was then raising. I was indeed neither manacled nor fetter'd, but then I was put among a company of miserable wretches, the greatest part whereof had been condemned for different crimes to the same punishment with myself. I was now obliged to change my dress, and put on one suitable to my present condition. Words can never express how greatly I was dejected. I was wholly unacquainted with my fate; I heard the companions of my ill fortune speak of *Nevis* as a small island that was barren and uninhabited, where we were to be used as slaves, and to plough the ground. So mean an employment made me wish for death, as the sole remedy for all my evils. I spent day after day in sighing in some corner of the ship; and I seldom join'd in conversation with those fellows, tho' it was impossible for me to avoid their company.

I cannot say whether 'twas in a natural way, or by the miraculous assistance of heaven, that I suddenly perceived a glimpse of hopes in the midst of my distress. What I am now going to relate is so surprising, that you'll hardly believe me on my bare word: Nothing but your meeting my ship in this vast ocean, and the testimony of the sailors, will be able to remove your incredulity at first; afterwards, in case you continue a considerable time with me, and we are so happy as to find out what I have been three months in search of, the sight of the wonders you will then see, will fully justify me in every particular.

In the mean time I grew so melancholy, that it would have been impossible for me to live had it continued. One day as I was alone, and easing my sorrows by shedding tears, an old woman I had hitherto taken no notice of, came up to me in a very civil manner. She was not drest after the *English* fashion, and tho' she spoke our language with propriety, one could nevertheless perceive that she was a foreigner. There was something amiable in her face tho' time had made deep furrows in it; and her eyes discover'd some remains of that sprightly fire which seems to be of the same substance with the soul, or at least of that which comes nearest to it. I was so struck with her, that tho' she was in a mean dress, I rose up
out

out of civility when she spoke to me. She then ask'd me why I cry'd, when I answer'd in the most moving manner, that I was an unfortunate young man, the sport of fortune, and the refuse of nature; and that tho' I were to shed never so many tears, my misfortunes would require more. I have observed you, says she, for some days with the utmost attention, and was surprized to see you so greatly dejected. The company, and the dress you are in seem very unsuitable to you: Reveal your woes to me, and I possibly may be of service to you, in case I am not mistaken in the opinion I have of you. Alas! says I, my misfortunes are not of such a nature as to force a blush from me: Wou'd to heaven they did not give me so much anxiety! But the barbarous wretches who sentenc'd me to banishment, threaten to kill me in case I dare reveal their injustice. Thus am I oblig'd to suffer evils undeserv'd, and be even denied the consolation of bewailing them. What you now tell me, says the old woman, only heightens my curiosity: If you were not born, as one would imagine you were not by your outward appearance, to this miserable condition, and have not committed any action for which you justly deserve to be sentenced to it, I look upon you to be worthy of the utmost compassion.

These words sooth'd my sorrows so agreeably, that I resolv'd to suppress those fears which prompted me to conceal my sad story, and accordingly I related to this charitable comforter my several misfortunes, and even those of my mother. She discover'd the strongest emotions of pity and astonishment as she listen'd, and when I had done, only exhorted me to arm my breast with courage and resolution, and that I might depend upon receiving unexpected relief from her. She then left me without saying more. I was very curious to know who she was; and enquiring, all I could learn was, that she was a foreigner, who had agreed with the captain of the ship to carry her to the island of *St. Helena*, where the vessel was to touch. I discours'd with her the next and the following days, and she came regularly to the place where I us'd to stand. Her conversation was always prudent and modest, and she made me often repeat my story, and took a pleasure in hearing the most minute particulars of it.

The

The circumstance she listen'd to with the greatest pleasure was, my long retirement in *Romney-Marsh*. She ask'd me whether I could again like to lead a solitary life, and whether the commerce I had since carried on with mankind had not depraved my mind. Sometimes she would change the discourse to the most sublime subjects; and whether it were that she was desirous to examine my talents, or exercise her own, she seem'd vastly pleased with those exalted discourses.

We had spent about two months in this manner, and the only consolation she hitherto had administer'd to me was, her visiting and conversing with me. She repeated from time to time the promise she had made of assisting me, but did not acquaint me in what manner. As I did not perceive the least likelihood that my fortune would mend, I was far from feeding myself with empty hopes, and suppos'd I should never receive any other favours from her than her good-will. However, when we were come pretty near *St. Helena*, she put a question to me which surpriz'd me very much: You seem, says she, to be prudent and virtuous, but then are you a man of spirit and resolution? The business is now not only to save your life, but to make you instantly happy, beyond the utmost bounds of your wishes. I answer'd, that I would willingly attempt any thing to prevent my being carried to the island of *Nevis*. Listen, says she, to what I am now going to tell you: We are to cast anchor before *St. Helena*: I will go ashore, and be absent three days; but in the night of the fourth I'll come and deliver you: You'll first see a large pleasure-boat at some distance from the ship: There shall be a lanthorn in it by way of signal, which will also serve to guide you: A little after it shall be put out; but the difficulty will be to get you into the boat, for a constant watch is kept on board the ship all night, and much more strictly now she lies so near the shore. I have thought of several expedients to get you ashore, but cannot think of any one that's feasible. There would be too much danger were I to come near the ladders, besides, they are drawn up in the night, and it would be impossible for you to let them down unperceived. I will throw myself, said I, into the sea, you must only be near enough to take me in. 'Twas this

this very thing, says she, I intended to propose to you; which yet I was afraid to do, tho' it must absolutely be done. I will go towards that part where you will see the lanthorn, and in case you have courage enough to throw yourself into the waves, you may depend upon being taken up immediately. And if the watch should happen to spy my boat, we will row off to such a distance; that as it will be in the dark, it will be impossible for them to pursue us to any purpose.

This appear'd to me not only feasible but easy. The only thing to be dreaded was, lest I should be drown'd; but even that would have been a happiness to me, if I had slip't this opportunity of making my escape. I gave the old gentlewoman ten thousand thanks; and without once thinking what would become of me after I had got into the boat, I promis'd to put my life into her hands. We arriv'd at *St. Helena* a few days after, and cast anchor. The passengers went on shore in the long-boat, and my guardian angel with them, and the captain also left the ship, with part of the crew; so that the company of miserable wretches, of which I was one, were left on board, with just men sufficient to guard them, and prevent any tumult. I waited with the utmost impatience for the happy night which was to be the period of my life or the beginning of my liberty. 'Twas now come when the only uneasiness I felt was, that I had forgot to ask my protectress how I was to be taken out of the sea: However, this gave me but little pain; a man cannot be so very exact in examining the various methods of safety which are offer'd him, when he proposes death to himself as his last refuge. I perceiv'd the lanthorn in the dead of night; and I saw it disappear a moment after. I pretended to fall asleep on that side of the ship which lay towards it, and not long after I heard the waves dash under me. I suppos'd that this was made by the motion of the boat; but it being so dark that I could not see my hand, I was uncertain for a moment when to plunge into the sea: Besides, I was afraid of falling into the boat, in which case I should certainly have beat myself to pieces, and three or four sailors standing just by me, I did not dare to speak. However, having consider'd that whatever might be their thoughts in hearing me

say

say some few words, they yet would never imagine I was going to jump into the water, and very probably would not be near enough to hear me; I therefore put my head down, and cried out, Are you there, Madam? Yes, says she, but I'm vex'd I did not consider how dark it would be; observe whence you hear the voice, and throw yourself boldly into the sea. The sailors, who heard these words as plain as I did, rose up. I don't know what their design was; however, hearing them come towards me, I call'd upon heaven to assist me, and flung myself into the waves.

My spirits being strongly agitated by my plunging with so much violence, they bore me up so vigorously, that I did not once faint, tho' I drank large draughts of salt water. I was so sensible, that rising again upon the surface, I heard several voices in the boat. However, as I could not swim, I should certainly have been in danger, had not my deliverers provided an expedient I had never thought of, which at once sav'd me. I was surprized, and even frightened to find myself above water, without knowing what it was that kept me up; and a moment after I found myself in the boat, in the arms of four men, who congratulated me on my courage and success. They then thought only of getting off as fast as possible: Whilst they were making all the sail they could, and plying their oars with the utmost diligence, the old lady, who was at the head of this affair, discover'd the greatest joy for my deliverance. I first ask'd her how it was possible for me to be convey'd so suddenly into the boat. She answer'd, that after having consulted with the four persons whom she had let into the design, and communicated to them the expedient we had thought upon, they consider'd that a large fishing-net might be of service to break my fall when I jump'd out of the ship; that having got close to the ship with great difficulty, the night being very dark, they were afraid it would be impossible for me to see them; that however she had assur'd them I waited for them, and that the smallest signal from them would be answer'd by me; that they thought it would be proper to spread the net as it was so dark; that they had fix'd a great part of it to the ship, and held the other part in their hands, when they row'd at a little distance, in order

der to catch me, in case I had the good fortune to fall into the water; that to keep the net from breaking with my weight, they had let it down as low as the water, in order to break my fall; that they were thinking how to give me notice of their being come, just as I spoke to them; that as I happen'd to fall in the net, the only trouble they then had was, to draw it to them as they row'd nearer the ship, by which means I was borne up in the midst of the waves, and was afterwards taken into the boat.

Tho' I thought myself greatly indebted to their ingenuity and care, 'tis manifest that my success was owing immediately to providence, which I thank'd from the bottom of my soul. My companions lighted their lantern when we got at some distance from the ship; and judging that we were safe, they laid by their oars, and only us'd the sail. The men came up to me, whom I hitherto had taken for common sailors; but tho' they did not seem to be any better by their habit, their air and politeness seem'd to speak them of a superior rank. They survey'd me attentively, and asked me several questions, by which I found that the lady had acquainted them with part of my story. They afterwards reflected upon my answers with an air of satisfaction. I did not understand the language they convers'd in, but they spoke to me in very proper *English*. At last, after making me great promises of their friendship, one of them said to me, that he was surprized I had not yet been so curious as to enquire who they were, and whither they were going to carry me. I answer'd, that as they had rescued me from the most miserable of all conditions, it was indifferent to me where I went: That with regard to them, I said in the most civil terms, that I could not but have the highest idea of their goodness, since they had done me so signal a piece of service, without being prompted to it from any other motives than those of tenderness and humanity. We hope, says the stranger, that you will not be long indifferent with regard to the place whither we are now going to carry you; 'twill prove so delightful, that you will not desire to remove from it; neither will you look upon your escape from the ship as your greatest happiness, unless you give it that name, as the means

means which heaven has made use of to pave the way to that blessing it has in store for you : We advise you only, says he, to be prudent and virtuous, and are persuaded, from your air and discourse, and the particulars which Mrs. *Eliot* has told us, that you have always been, and will ever be so ; leave to heaven and us the care of making you happy.

They talked to me upon this subject the remaining part of the night, and all I did was, to thank them in general, in the most civil terms, for their great goodness, but was unable to guess the meaning of what they had just hinted to me in such obscure terms. Mrs. *Eliot* (for that was the name of my good friend, which I had never heard of before) was continually praising my modesty and good nature, and telling them in what manner she got acquainted with me on board the ship. In a word, she said to them, I'm fully satisfied with the success of my undertaking, and am persuaded all my brethren will be so. I have brought but a few of them, but they are to be valued rather by weight than number ; but all this was a riddle to me. Day now began to break in upon us, and I discover'd, after we had sail'd four or five hours, a very rocky coast, which I judg'd it would be impossible for us to land upon. My deliverers said to me, you may now thank heaven we are all safe. They seem'd however to advance with great caution, for fear of running upon the rocks which appear'd just above water. We came happily to shore : They drew the boat out of the sea, and drawing it along the sand, they hid it under an arch, which seem'd to be made on purpose to shut it up. I cast my eyes on all sides, to see which way we should get up into the country ; for I did not perceive any path, and the rocks which lay round the shore were of such a prodigious height that they seem'd insurmountable. Mrs. *Eliot*, observing my surprize, took me by the hand, and leading me a little way over the sand along the coast, she carried me to an arch like to that in which our companions had hid their boat. We went into it : 'Twas a kind of door, after which we came to an opening which reach'd from the bottom to the top of the rock, and winded about. It let in the light at top. We advanc'd for five or six minutes through these various windings, but the way was so narrow we could scarce walk three abreast. You seem

seem surpriz'd, says Mrs. *Eliot* to me, but have patience, and you'll be satisfied presently. At last, the way we walk'd growing wider by degrees, we soon came to the mouth, which brought us upon the main land: The prospect I then saw struck me at once with admiration, when Mrs. *Eliot* carried me to an eminence, from whence I might take a more extensive view of it. 'Twas a plain about five or six leagues long, and about four leagues broad. It seemed to be surrounded with rocks like that we had gone through, and they were vastly craggy and steep, but not very high. The prospect was thus bounded on all sides, but then no spot in the world could be more beautiful. The whole country look'd like an enchanted garden, for the embellishment of which both art and nature seem'd to have united their endeavours. There one beheld vistas of trees which extended out of sight, small woods, a beautiful mixture of meadows and cultivated lands, houses on each side with exact symmetry, which seemed built equally for conveniency and the delight of the eye. In the midst of the plain was a vast edifice, which indeed was not magnificent, but then 'twas a great ornament to the landscape, it appearing to be built in the center of the rest of the houses, and consequently was equidistant from them. The sun, which now begun to diffuse its rays, gave so smiling an air to every part of this rural scene, that I fancied myself convey'd into another world, and could not enough satisfy my eye. You see, says Mrs. *Eliot*, our habitation and your own, and this is the happy spot heaven has indulg'd you for your residence. I now, says she, again setting forward, will inform you with whom you are going to live, and what kind of happiness you are to expect in this place.

You must undoubtedly have heard of the famous siege of *Rochelle*, and the dreadful calamities the citizens suffer'd. Most of the persons you will see here were once inhabitants of it. You know that a zeal for religion prompted us to take up arms. The severity of the court, cardinal *Richlieu*'s treachery, the violation of all our privileges and rights which had been granted us by the most solemn promises, our miseries and the injustice of our tyrants, which encreas'd daily, had brought us to the brink
of

of despair. We resolv'd to exert our selves to the utmost for the sake of our religion and liberties; but our defence and endeavours were more just than successful, and ended with the entire loss of all the advantages, for the preservation whereof we had taken up arms. After having stood out a long siege, which will be for ever memorable, because of the terrible circumstances with which it was attended, famine forced us to yield. Our conquerors triumph'd with so much barbarity over us, that we cou'd not bear the pride with which they insulted our miseries; upon which, about four-score of the most rich and distinguish'd citizens met together: we then held a council about our misfortunes, and concluding that it would be impossible for us to be more wretched, we determin'd to abandon our unhappy country, and to seek out some place where we might at least be allow'd to live, and serve God in our own way. We first thought of retiring into *England*, for most of us had some acquaintance there, not to mention that several of us could speak *English*, the *Rochellers* obliging most of their children to learn it for the convenience of traffick. Immediately we pack'd up our most valuable things, and having agreed upon a place in *London* where we should all meet, we divided our selves into several little companies, in order to leave *France*, as opportunity might offer. Heaven was so propitious to our designs, that we all met in *London* in less than six weeks after. Immediately the principal persons among us presented a petition to the king, by which we humbly begg'd to be indulg'd the liberty of our own worship, and of being allow'd a church. Their petition did not meet with the success they expected, for *England* was almost as much troubled upon the account of religion as *France*. There were two parties who tore one another to pieces by the odious distinction of presbyterians and those for episcopal government; or rather, the archbishop of *Canterbury*, jealous of his authority, and that of the rest of the bishops, persecuted all those unmercifully who adhered to the principles of reformation established in *France*. He had got such an ascendant over king *Charles's* mind that this prince intrusted the government of all spiritual matters to him; and he grew daily more bitter against such as were enemies to the hierarchy. We were told,

that

that a great number of presbyterians, wearied out with persecution, had abandon'd their country in the same manner as we had done; and that some were gone to *Holland*, but the greatest part to *America*. The archbishop hating us as much as he did them, the king, at his request, rejected our petition, and urged us to join in worship with the church of *England*, but not one among us was disposed to acquiesce in this. We had been so short a time in *London*, that there was nothing cou'd induce us to stay in it, whereupon we agreed in concert to venture once more upon the seas, and to seek for an asylum in some other country. Some *English* presbyterians hearing of our design, offer'd to carry off all their effects, and to seek their fortunes with us; accordingly we bought a ship between us, and being unanimously resolv'd to sail for *America*, we freighted it with whatever we thought might be necessary for the colony we intended to found.

We were not above two hundred in all, children and servants included. Our voyage was very happy for the first six weeks; I may even say that it was so entirely, since the unhappy accident that befel us brought us to the felicity we now enjoy. The wind, which had been favourable for above a month, chopp'd about on a sudden, and blew so strong that the sailors told us we were to expect a storm. Figure then to your self the distraction with which the women and children were seiz'd, of whom half our crew was composed. We expected to be certainly buried in the waves; and indeed, our ship was toss'd about in so dreadful a manner for some days, that we could not but give our selves over for lost, but a hard gale of wind threw us upon the coast of this island, where our vessel ran upon the rocks. But by a miracle of providence, the tide which was going down at that instant, left us in such a manner upon the strand, that instead of being drown'd by the water, which rush'd into the ship, we saw it run out of it self thro' the leaks which the points of the rocks had made in it; by which means we easily got out of her, and came up in the sand. And now all hands were employ'd in unloading the most valuable part of our cargo; but we need not have put ourselves to this useless trouble, had we consider'd that the vessel was drove so far up the strand that it was impossible for the strongest

strongest waves to carry her back again, and that the cargo would have fix'd her down more firmly. Be this as it will, the return of the tide did not do us the least prejudice; so that we sav'd not only our cargo, but the ship it self, and all the pieces of the wreck.

'Twas nevertheless a melancholy sight to see all our trunks and other things lying confusedly upon the sand along the rocks, and we and our children sitting upon them, waiting for the resolution our husbands should take. As the coast was craggy, they were obliged to send out a few of their company, in order to trace it, till such time as they should meet with a path, by which we might get up into the country. They brought us but a melancholy account at their return; they told us that the rocks were alike craggy for half a mile, and that they could not possibly advance any farther, because the sea came up close to the coast. Thus were we confined in a small bank of sand, surrounded on one side by the sea, and with inaccessible mountains on the other: so that there now remain'd only two expedients to which our husbands could have recourse. The one was, to invent some way by which we might climb the rocks; but then, had they themselves been able to do so, we and our children must have staid behind. The other was, to take the long-boat, at the hazard of running every instant upon the sharp black rocks, which appear'd every where upon the surface of the water, to search round the island for some place for us to live in. They were going to attempt the latter, when heaven pointed out to one of our *Englishmen* the narrow passage you just now came through. He first went up alone, as far as the opening to the plain, when returning back immediately, he told us, in the utmost transports of joy, the happy discovery he had made. We look'd upon him as our preserver; and this service afterwards entitled him to be one of the first rank in our colony. We came into the plain, as into a kind of *promised land*; and the first thing our people did was to trace the extent of it. At their coming back they told us with astonishment, that we were hemm'd in all round; and that after having examin'd it with the strictest care they had not been able to find one out-let in the vast chain of rocks which surrounded it. Most of the women began to lament at our being excluded

from.

from all correspondence with the rest of the world; but when our husbands assur'd us, that it seem'd to be a very fine soil, and that they had found a thousand kinds of fruits, which the earth yielded spontaneously, we changed our opinion, and began to think that heaven itself must have conducted our steps to a place so proper for us to settle in; and our happy condition has since confirm'd us in the good opinion we then entertain'd. You may judge how dear our solitude is to us, by the labour we have employ'd to embellish it; nature assists us in it, and indeed there is no part of the world where she is more indulgent. During the many years we have been settled here, we have enjoy'd the blessing of a perpetual spring, which at the same time is always improv'd with the abundance of autumn.

I shall not now, says Mrs. Elliot, take notice of the order we establish'd, after we had taken possession of this happy place; but will leave you the pleasure of seeing it your self. All that now remains for me to tell you, is the motive of my going to *England*, and that which prompted me afterwards to offer you my service when we were on board together; this is an article I cannot possibly omit. This country, says she, notwithstanding it is indulged with so many blessings both by heaven and nature, has nevertheless some noxious quality either in the air or the soil, which prevents our colony from increasing. I cannot say that our women are barren; so far from it that most of them are very prolific, but then they bring nothing but girls into the world. Within these twenty years last past there have been born four females to one male child. 'Tis true indeed, that the females are amiable creatures, and one wou'd imagine that nature, in creating them, had employ'd all her graces and charms. But you will naturally suppose, that as most of them cannot meet with husbands, they consequently must lead very melancholy lives, to our no small regret. The poor girls do nothing but sigh continually; so that 'tis but too plain something is wanting to make them happy. We might indeed get them husbands from *St. Helena*, but this we don't think proper, for two reasons; the first is, from our disinclination to introduce men among us of a different persuasion from our selves; the second is, the desire
we

we have to conceal our selves so long as we can from the rest of the world. We are vastly well pleas'd with our solitude, and our being sequestred from mankind. We therefore thought, after mature deliberation, that the best way to prevent the ruin of our colony, would be to get young husbands from *France* and *England* for our daughters; and I was commissioned to do this, our people making me the compliment to say that I have the most insinuating tongue. I set out from our island about fifteen months ago, with one of our men who was nominated to go along with me. I went first to *France*, where I visited all those cities in which our religion flourishes; but tho' I was very assiduous, I met with few young people willing to go with me, upon my bare promises; in short, I found but two for my purpose in *France*, and three in *England*. I might indeed very possibly have brought a greater number, had I been willing to receive them without distinction; but I wanted a set of prudent, religious, virtuous, good-temper'd young men; and God knows we meet with few such in *Europe*! I saw you in the ship, your countenance pleas'd me, and you no sooner discover'd your ill fortune and your inclinations to me, but I thought you a fit person for my design. You may have taken notice of the rest who were on board with me, tho' you did not know the motive of our voyage. They came ashore about three days since, along with me, are here expecting you, and are equally impatient with the rest of the colony to see you.

Mrs. *Eliot*, having now ended her discourse, ask'd me whether I did not approve of the fortune she had allotted me; and whether I was not oblig'd to her for rescuing me from slavery, in order to put me into the arms of a pretty woman, and incorporate me in a society of people so amiable and virtuous. I was so overjoy'd at what she told me, that I could scarce believe it to be true; and therefore asked her a thousand questions, all which she answer'd in the most ingenuous manner. There was only one thing she refus'd to satisfy me in, and that was my surprize to think how it were possible for their colony to be conceal'd from all the world, when *St. Helena* lay so near that one could get to it in five or six hours. I also asked her how she could find the way either to or from *St.*

Helena.

Helena. This, says she, is a secret you must not enquire into, till such time as we shall think proper to discover it; but a circumstance which ought to make you less anxious upon that account is, that a few of the oldest people only are acquainted with it. Hearing her say this, I thought 'twould not be prudent to ask any more questions, and was persuaded that the sole reason why she refus'd to gratify me in this particular was, in order that I might not be able to leave the island in case I should grow weary of it. We walk'd forward, and when the four men who had staid behind to take care of the boat were come to us again, we made greater haste, and about an hour after got into Mrs. *Eliot's* house.

'Twas very neat and commodious, and tho' 'twas furnished in the plainest manner, yet every thing seem'd to speak abundance. You may, says she, form an idea of the rest of the houses from mine, for they are exactly like it. The reason of their being built alike was, in order to prevent any jealousy from arising among us. We all live here in a perfect equality, by which means we have left no room for ambition. Precedency is here regulated by seniority, and few are jealous of it when old age only entitles them to it. She afterwards called her servants to change my cloaths: She had brought a suit for me in the boat, which I put on at my coming ashore; but she would have me cloath'd in a better dress, in order to appear in publick, especially as I was to be seen by so many young women, one of whom I was to make choice of for a wife. God forbid, says she, that I should ever inspire you with a love for that empty ornament, fine cloaths; but on this occasion 'tis lawful to adorn, in a modest manner, the advantages you may have receiv'd from nature; 'tis even a mark of respect which we owe to virtuous persons when we are to appear before them. Saying this, she oblig'd me to put on a plain suit of cloaths, that had been made for me, and which fitted me very well. Observing this dress, and that of the servants walking with us, I could not forbear asking what she meant by the equality she told me was observed in the colony. I suppose, said I, you don't look upon your taylor and servants as your equals. No, says she, we have not chang'd the order of ranks and conditions, and such

as were servants at our leaving *Europe*, are still upon the same foot, and their children also; but then they nevertheless are upon a kind of level with us, which I will now explain to you: First, they share equally with us in all our possessions, which are in common, as you'll know better afterwards. Notwithstanding that my servants eat at a table by themselves, they feed upon the very same diet, and they are allowed the greatest plenty of all necessaries. Secondly, any master or mistress who treat their servants ill, are punish'd severely for it. Have not they as much right to refuse being punish'd by us, as we to use them unkindly? With regard to their rank, 'tis immediately after that of our children, and they observe the same order among themselves as we do. Thus, as one cannot say there is any inequality between a father and a son, there is very little more between us and our servants. Every family is consider'd as an entire body, of which the father is the chief, the children are the next, and after them the servants. They are as nearly related to us as the hands are to the body, and we consider ourselves superior to them no otherwise than as the head is with regard to the rest of the body.

I approv'd very much these prudent regulations, so conformable to the dictates of religion and humanity. Whilst I was discoursing with Mrs. *Eliot*, the four men who had left us at our coming into the house, spread the news of my arrival, a little after which a great number of persons of both sexes came and congratulated me on my arrival in the civillest manner. Most of them were advanced in years, but a flush of health which appear'd in their countenances, and the freshness of their complexions, denoted at one and the same time the excellency of their climate, and the sobriety of their lives. I discover'd some regret at their not having given me an opportunity of visiting them first, when one of the old men answer'd, We have banish'd all modish restrains and idle compliments; we are better pleas'd that we came to see you first, as we think 'tis giving you a pledge of our friendship, than you would have been to prevent us in it, because you would thereby have given us a mark of honour and respect: The advantage is consequently on our side, and therefore you ought not to regret it: Ought not all men to conduct themselves

themselves in this manner with regard to their fellow-creatures? You'll find by that time you know us better, that we put a much higher value on mutual charity and real affection, than on all the outward grimaces which men have complimented with the name of civility.

I must confess, that in hearing them argue after this manner, methought I was so far from being got among protestants, that they seemed rather a community of quakers, who condemn the ordinary customs of mankind, and whose way of life is entirely different from that of the rest of the world: However, the more I talk'd with them the more their conversation pleas'd me, and I even perceiv'd, that as they abhor'd the specious appearances of politeness, so they had the essence of it, I mean the utmost cordiality and complacency. They acquainted me with the laws to which they were all subject, their customs and employments, and promised to do all that lay in their power to make my days happy among them. In this manner I was visited the first day of my arrival by a great part of the colony. Their number, which was at first about two hundred, as was before observed, was now almost doubled, and would have been much greater, could they have got husbands for all their daughters, and this was their greatest pain. I observ'd that they were not satisfied with Mrs. Eliot's voyage; they could not have imagin'd but she would have brought them more than six men, when there were near an hundred women among them who wanted husbands, and thereupon told me that they must be oblig'd to take some new resolution on that head.

After having spent the day in the congratulations they made me upon my arrival, and other testimonies of their friendship, I told Mrs. Eliot in the evening that I should be very glad to have her explain herself, about the wife she intended to provide for me: I hear, said I, you have near an hundred marriageable women, now how can you pretend to provide for them all, since you have brought but six of the other sex? She answer'd, that it had been resolv'd the young women should cast lots, in order that no one might have room to complain of her being postpon'd, we being determin'd never to do any thing that may give room to pre-eminences or distinctions. I was

very much shock'd at this answer, being very unwilling to take up with any wife that chance should allot me: My heart requir'd that I should be permitted to chuse, and I began to fear that I should not meet with the happiness they had flatter'd me with, in case I should be forc'd to live with a woman I could not love. My fear was so much the more just, as I had been told that their women were the most charming creatures in the world: 'Tis scarce possible they should all be so, and what a chance shall I stand, in case fate should allot me a disagreeable woman? How afflicting must it be to me to be thus unhappily wedded, when I should have continually before my eyes so many beautiful objects as they are represented to me? I withdrew in the evening, full of those thoughts, and was disturb'd with them all night long.

The next morning, as soon as I awak'd, I had the pleasure of seeing all the five young men who came in the same vessel with me. They had been carried the day before to the other end of the plain, that they might view the several parts of it, by which means they had heard nothing of my arrival. We embrac'd one another with a tenderness which is reciprocally felt by persons who have one common destiny; but when, after about a quarter of an hour's conversation, we began to be a little acquainted, and to open ourselves to one another without the least reserve, they did not conceal from me, that notwithstanding the many pleasures they tasted in this agreeable place, they nevertheless had the same reluctance with myself, to take any woman at random, as chance should please to determine. We, says one of them, came first ashore, and therefore have a right to chuse first, that is to say, said he with some warmth, that in case fortune does not favour us, some new comer will carry off the prettiest woman of the island before our faces. My dear friends, if I may advise, you'll never suffer this; the person who spoke with so much vivacity was a *Frenchman*. I answer'd that I approv'd his resentments, but that I did not see any possibility of prevailing with the old men to think as we did. I'm sure, says he, I'll defy them ever to prevail with me to consider this in the same light as they do, nor shall they ever force me to marry a woman for whom I have no inclination; saying which, he urg'd us to join with

with him in representing to the old men the injustice of their conduct in this article. I refus'd absolutely to subscribe to their resolution, not that I had less aversion than they to marry after this manner, but was unwilling to interrupt the tranquillity which reign'd in this place; I therefore advis'd him not to discover his resentments till such time as we knew whether fortune would declare against us. He and his companions told me they had been assur'd a little before, that the lots were to be cast that afternoon, at the desire of several young women, who were extremely impatient to know their fate: They had been confin'd to their houses ever since our arrival, and this precaution of keeping them from the sight of us, increas'd their curiosity. Mrs. *Eliot* came and told me that I was to be married that evening. I now ask'd her whether she had any daughters: She answer'd that she had two, and wish'd heartily that one of them might be so happy as to fall to my lot. I spent part of the morning in visiting some of the old people of the colony, who shew'd me every thing that was remarkable in the plain, and carried me to the large edifice before mention'd. I at first took it for a church, but they inform'd me 'twas a common storehouse where all the riches of the island were deposited, and explained the whole to me in the manner following.

We on all occasions consider ourselves, says one of them to me, as one people or a single family; we all lead a calm and unruffled life, as so many children in their father's house. Every year we chuse four governors by lot, whose office is to superintend continually the publick utility. Their private duty is to oblige our servants to cultivate our lands, to carry the product of our harvests into the storehouse, and after to distribute it among us, which is done in an equal proportion, according to the number of persons which inhabit each house: A servant has as great a portion as his master. We did not at first enjoy the abundance we now do. When we came from *Europe* we had a great deal of ready money, and a considerable quantity of provisions and tools; but our money was of no service here, our provisions might subsist us for a certain time, but we were in want of corn to sow our lands, and horses to plough with, and it was proper for us to make provision for time to come. Our ship

was dash'd to pieces against the rocks, and we had only our long-boat; how then could we venture ourselves on unknown seas, in which were innumerable rocks? But whither could we fly? which way? upon what hopes? However, there was an *Englishman* among us who offer'd to hazard his life for the publick good: 'Twas he who so happily discover'd the cleft of the rock, of which I know Mrs. *Eliot* has given you an account. The brave *Englishman* above-mention'd would not suffer any one to accompany him in his enterprize, when he put a good quantity of provisions in the long-boat, and set out with only a little sail and a couple of oars. The whole colony pray'd during his absence that he might meet with success, especially as our preservation had so great a dependance upon it. Two days after his departure some of our young people, who were walking upon the shore, saw him advancing towards it, and immediately came and told us the joyful news, when we all ran to the coast. 'Twas he himself, who brought back his boat loaded with corn, and seeds of several kinds which we wanted. Every one was very urgent to know the circumstances of his voyage, but being as prudent as courageous, he refus'd to explain himself in publick. The most considerable persons of our colony, among whom I was nominated, met together, in order to hear his relation, when he told us such particulars as rais'd our admiration. We thought proper, pursuant to his advice, to conceal part of it for the sake of the colony; but at the same time we divulg'd such particulars as were necessary to be discover'd for the consolation of our people in general. 'Twas publickly told that he had been at *St. Helena*, that we lay at a little distance from it, and were sure of getting from thence whatever we might want in time to come. The name of our generous companion was *Drington*. He died a few years ago; but before he died he did the colony a thousand other important services which claim the gratitude of our latest posterity.

Our plain made quite another figure some time after his return: Every one fell to cultivating the ground with an imaginable diligence, so that in about six months we had built our houses and till'd our lands. We, under heaven, gave our plain the smiling aspect it now wears; and
looking

looking upon ourselves as the founders of a new state, we were not more excited by the consideration that we were labouring for ourselves, than by the desire of giving our posterity an advantageous idea of our care and industry. Mr. Drington was employ'd in going frequently to *St. Helena*, and in bringing from thence whatever necessaries we might want. We appointed three of our companions to assist him in his voyages, who bound themselves by an oath not to discover any of those particulars we had thought proper to conceal from the colony, which method has always been observed since Mr. Drington's decease. There are but four men among us, who are all sworn, that are empower'd to go to sea, and when any one of these die, another is elected. Those have the sole command over the boats, which they keep chain'd up in a grotto you may have observ'd at your arrival. They seldom go for *St. Helena* now, we being in no want of any assistance; for our lands yield more than we have occasion for. Our flocks are so much increas'd, that they are sometimes a burden to us. We might indeed sell part of them to the inhabitants of *St. Helena*; but what should we do with the money? That which we brought from *Europe* is here placed among our useless treasure; we have lodged it by consent in our storehouse, and look upon it as an insignificant dead part of our possessions, of which we cannot make any use. Thus, of the three principal passions which infest the heart of man, we have found out the art of suppressing two of them: The equality which is establish'd among us secures us from ambition, and the uselessness of riches has cur'd us of avarice. Love is the only passion for which we cannot find a remedy. Our young girls pine away, and it is a most melancholy circumstance that we can neither root out this passion from their hearts, nor ease them of their pain. I myself, added the good old man, know but too well how difficult it is at a certain age to curb one's desires, or resist human nature.

After he had ended, I put two questions to him. I easily conceive, said I, that 'tis no difficult matter for you to hinder the inhabitants from going to sea in your boats, and satisfying their curiosity, but how is it possible for you to conceal your abode from the islanders of *St. He-*

lena, since they lie so near you? And what judgment can they form of the four men you sometimes send to them, when they see them arrive at so great a distance from the continent, in a boat, in which they may naturally imagine they did not cross that great expanse of waters? The old man answer'd, that the first time the inhabitants of *St. Helena* saw *Mr. Drington* arrive, they look'd upon him as one come from the clouds; and were very urgent to know whence he came, and what accident had brought him into their island; but that this prudent *Englishman* having consider'd what advantage it would be to the colony not to be discover'd, even by their neighbours, he had made them such ambiguous answers, that they cou'd get nothing to the purpose out of him; that his companions had been as prudent; and the better to divert the curiosity of the *Portuguese*, and some *English* who are settled in *St. Helena*, they never sail from their harbour till dusk, thereby to prevent them from making any discoveries. They are persuaded, says the old man, that we don't live far from them; but tho' they make the strictest search, they will, I believe, scarce ever be able to find us out; and nothing but chance, or the indiscretion of our four mariners, can ever inform them of it. My second question was the same I had before made to *Mrs. Eliot*. What benefit, said I, d'ye think your daughters can reap from mine and my companions arrival? There cannot be above six of them obliged, and the rest will be but the more afflicted to find themselves rejected by the caprice of fortune. He agreed that I was in the right, and made heavy complaints against *Mrs. Eliot* for succeeding so ill in her commission. However, says he, we have this day taken a resolution in the assembly which will give them some consolation; which is, to send again to *Europe*, and, if possible, prevail on a sufficient number of young men to transport themselves to our island. In case this scheme shou'd not succeed, we'll permit our daughters to go (bestowing on each of them a handsome fortune) to any part of the world they themselves shall like best.

The old man was not very prudent in acquainting me with this last circumstance, and indeed he did not see into the consequences of it. The reflections which then suggested

gested themselves, made me think the design they had of bestowing wives upon us by lot, more unjust than ever. I cou'd not forbear discovering this to my five companions; and I had no occasion to add any thing farther to make them sensible how afflicting it must be for us to see all the pretty women leave the island, whilst we, perhaps, should be bound for life to the most disagreeable of them. Mr. *Gelin*, a young *Frenchman* of wit and merit, but whose vivacity seem'd to have the ascendant over his prudence on this occasion, mov'd, that we should immediately complain to the principal old men, and declare that we would never submit to a law so unjust with regard to ourselves. He won over our companions to his opinion; so that as no one oppos'd this resolution but myself, I was oblig'd to use a thousand arguments, before I cou'd make them agree with me that we need not yet carry matters so far; and that in honour, as well as for the sake of peace, we should suspend our complaints till such time as they should attempt to force us. 'Tis not, said I, the same as if we had already contracted an intimacy with some amiable objects, which they would oblige us to break; for we are not yet acquainted with any of the young women we are to see by and by. We have not yet conceiv'd a particular passion for any, and all we desire in general is to be married to a pretty woman; possibly chance may favour us; in which case we should not only have the pleasure of seeing our desires gratify'd, but the satisfaction of having given the whole colony a proof of our wisdom. But if on the contrary, fortune shou'd not be propitious to us, we shall then have the greater liberty of complaining, and our remonstrances must have the greater weight with them, after so ample a testimony of our modesty and submission. We may first request our marriage may be delay'd on pretence that we desire to be a little acquainted with our destin'd brides; this favour can never be refused us; and we'll thence take advantage of breaking off in a civil way, if possible, from the involuntary engagements which they wou'd oblige us to submit to. These arguments made so much impression on Mr. *Gelin* as to make him change his resolution. At our separating we embraced one another like brethren, and promis'd to af-

ford reciprocally all those assistances which might forward the success of our mutual hopes.

The time appointed for the ceremony being come, one of the old men came for me to Mrs. *Eliot's*, where I continued to reside. He told me that the election was to be in the church, and that all the young women were assembled in it. I got there almost at the same time with my companions, to whom several old men had been sent. Curiosity had brought together all the inhabitants of the island, in order to be spectators upon so extraordinary an occasion. We made our way in thro' the crowd; but care had been taken to leave an area clear, in which all the maidens were ranged in a circle. A table stood in the middle, at which the minister was seated, and the four governors of the storehouse on each side of him, when we were order'd to go up to them. All the spectators kept a profound silence, and seem'd to wait with the utmost impatience for the opening of this singular ceremony, which began by a short prayer, in which they begg'd of heaven to bless us. Afterwards the minister, addressing himself to us with a loud voice, made a very eloquent discourse on the subject of our meeting. He told us in few words the history of the colony, and the particular marks of protection which heaven had indulged it during twenty years. He gave us a short exposition of the laws of the country, and the several engagements by which we were going to bind ourselves, at the same time that we were incorporating ourselves with the inhabitants of the island. The laws seem'd to be drawn up with great simplicity, and not difficult to be obey'd. They consisted of a small number of clear and immediate consequences, and general precepts of justice and charity. He congratulated us on our having being chosen by providence to share the blessings of that happy island; and exhorted us to make ourselves worthy of the society whereof we are now becoming members. Notwithstanding that all the young women, from among whom they were going to chuse us wives, had been educated in the principles of virtue and integrity, he said he did not doubt but that God, whose hand directs chance, would allot to each of us that woman, whose temper and qualities should best suit our inclinations. 'Tis for this reason,

reason, says he, as much as to avoid the jealousy which preference creates, that we are determin'd to give you wives by lot; being firmly persuaded, that whatever men call by that name is in reality a secret disposition of heaven, which always turns events to the advantage of those who reverence his holy will.

At the same time that my ears listned to this discourse, my eyes were employ'd on a very different subject. 'Twas not natural I should come into a company of young virgins, who indeed were all charming creatures, without at least taking notice of their air and countenance; my eyes wandered from one to another, and my admiration was so much divided, that had I been left to my choice, it wou'd have been very difficult for me to determine; and therefore was not sorry that chance was to decide it. In what manner soever, said I, it shall happen, 'tis impossible but I must be satisfied with it. I should be in too great a dilemma, were I left to chuse in such a crowd of beauties, and am very glad that trouble is spar'd me. Such was the situation of my mind for a few moments. Mere admiration is a calm and disinterested sensation; I was not as yet sensible to any other, but a glance soon gave me a stronger idea of it. As my eyes were running a second time over this circle of beauties, I observ'd one whose glances were directed to me; but the moment mine met her's, she fix'd them on the ground. This was a random look, and I did not immediately perceive there was any thing more particular in my curiosity, than in that which had prompted me to contemplate the rest; nevertheless, my glances seem'd to be fix'd on one object; I ran over, with a kind of greediness, all the features of a face which seem'd to have escap'd me the first time. The shape, the air, the least motion of this lovely person seem'd to command my whole attention. Yet would she every now and then lift up her eyes to look upon me, when perceiving that I still kept mine fixed upon her, she at length blush'd, and cast her eyes downwards; at the same time I felt a glow diffuse itself over my cheeks; and this change having recall'd me from my absence of thought, such emotions were rais'd within me, that I don't remember my breast ever felt such tumults before. I recover'd my self, and seem'd to listen to the minister's discourse, but was incessantly

ford reciprocally all those assistances which might forward the success of our mutual hopes.

The time appointed for the ceremony being come, one of the old men came for me to Mrs. *Eliot's*, where I continued to reside. He told me that the election was to be in the church, and that all the young women were assembled in it. I got there almost at the same time with my companions, to whom several old men had been sent. Curiosity had brought together all the inhabitants of the island, in order to be spectators upon so extraordinary an occasion. We made our way in thro' the crowd; but care had been taken to leave an area clear, in which all the maidens were ranged in a circle. A table stood in the middle, at which the minister was seated, and the four governors of the storehouse on each side of him, when we were order'd to go up to them. All the spectators kept a profound silence, and seem'd to wait with the utmost impatience for the opening of this singular ceremony, which began by a short prayer, in which they begg'd of heaven to bless us. Afterwards the minister, addressing himself to us with a loud voice, made a very eloquent discourse on the subject of our meeting. He told us in few words the history of the colony, and the particular marks of protection which heaven had indulged it during twenty years. He gave us a short exposition of the laws of the country, and the several engagements by which we were going to bind ourselves, at the same time that we were incorporating ourselves with the inhabitants of the island. The laws seem'd to be drawn up with great simplicity, and not difficult to be obey'd. They consisted of a small number of clear and immediate consequences, and general precepts of justice and charity. He congratulated us on our having being chosen by providence to share the blessings of that happy island; and exhorted us to make ourselves worthy of the society whereof we are now becoming members. Notwithstanding that all the young women, from among whom they were going to chuse us wives, had been educated in the principles of virtue and integrity, he said he did not doubt but that God, whose hand directs chance, would allot to each of us that woman, whose temper and qualities should best suit our inclinations. 'Tis for this reason,

reason, says he, as much as to avoid the jealousy which preference creates, that we are determin'd to give you wives by lot; being firmly persuaded, that whatever men call by that name is in reality a secret disposition of heaven, which always turns events to the advantage of those who reverence his holy will.

At the same time that my ears listned to this discourse, my eyes were employ'd on a very different subject. 'Twas not natural I should come into a company of young virgins, who indeed were all charming creatures, without at least taking notice of their air and countenance; my eyes wandered from one to another, and my admiration was so much divided, that had I been left to my choice, it wou'd have been very difficult for me to determine; and therefore was not sorry that chance was to decide it. In what manner soever, said I, it shall happen, 'tis impossible but I must be satisfied with it. I should be in too great a dilemma, were I left to chuse in such a crowd of beauties, and am very glad that trouble is spar'd me. Such was the situation of my mind for a few moments. Mere admiration is a calm and disinterested sensation; I was not as yet sensible to any other, but a glance soon gave me a stronger idea of it. As my eyes were running a second time over this circle of beauties, I observ'd one whose glances were directed to me; but the moment mine met her's, she fix'd them on the ground. This was a random look, and I did not immediately perceive there was any thing more particular in my curiosity, than in that which had prompted me to contemplate the rest; nevertheless, my glances seem'd to be fix'd on one object; I ran over, with a kind of greediness, all the features of a face which seem'd to have escap'd me the first time. The shape, the air, the least motion of this lovely person seem'd to command my whole attention. Yet would she every now and then lift up her eyes to look upon me, when perceiving that I still kept mine fixed upon her, she at length blushed, and cast her eyes downwards; at the same time I felt a glow diffuse itself over my cheeks; and this change having recall'd me from my absence of thought, such emotions were raised within me, that I don't remember my breast ever felt such tumults before. I recover'd my self, and seem'd to listen to the minister's discourse, but was incessantly

santly diverted from it by a secret impulse, which call'd me back to the lovely object. I did not any longer find those charms in the rest of the maidens which I had admir'd in them before; their air appear'd to me affected; I read in their eyes the strong desires they had to be married, and the dread they were under lest fortune should prove their enemy; whereas she who had made this conquest over my heart breathed nothing but innocence and modesty. I must confess, I then began to think of the advice I had given Mr. *Gelin*, and wish'd to have a minute's discourse with him, in order to make him change his former resolutions. Cupid caus'd me instantaneously to feel, that he had made my happiness depend on the beautiful object he then presented to me; and that I was not to expect it either from chance or my own choice.

Whilst I was revolving these different thoughts, the minister, having ended his discourse, declared the order which was to be observ'd in the election. Of two methods which might be used, says he to the assembly, the one of making all the young women draw together; and the other, of dividing them into six bands, answerable to the number of young people; the last appears to me the most natural, and will, I believe, be best approv'd. Every band shall consist of nine maidens; chance shall decide which band every young man shall belong to; and they shall afterwards draw, in order to see who that happy person shall be whom heaven shall please to favour with that distinction. This method was universally applauded. The girls were very well pleas'd with it; and indeed, there seem'd to be a nearer proportion between sixteen to one, than between fourscore and sixteen and six; and this reduction seem'd to bring their hopes to near the same level. They were presently divided into bands; our six names were writ on so many pieces of paper, and a girl was called from each band to draw them out of a basket in which the minister had put them. Then a confused sound was heard in the whole assembly, which denoted the impatience they had to see how chance would determine. As for my self, who was excited by emotions different from curiosity, I trembled as I saw the girls put their hands into the basket. My fate was going to be decided at once; for in case chance shou'd remove me
from

from the band in which my lovely charmer was, all hopes wou'd instantly vanish. My passion was already grown to that height, that the fear of my not succeeding rais'd a thousand tortures in my bosom. At last the lots were drawn, and I had the unhappiness to see myself disposed of in the manner I had dreaded. I offer'd up my complaints inwardly to heaven; but what words can express their bitterness! scarce could I refrain from bursting into tears. I suffer'd myself to be led, without once opening my lips, to the band to which I now belong'd; my eyes only express'd my grief to the amiable creature I was forced to abandon; and I perceiv'd by her looks that she had taken notice of my grief, and guess'd the cause of it. I was perpetually turning back, and gazing upon her as I was going away; and to heighten my anguish, I imagined her languishing air told me, that she was as much afflicted at our separation as I could be.

I was now incapable of attending to the rest of the ceremony; but observing that fortune had thrown *Gelin* into the next band to mine, I went up to him to put him in mind of the promise he had made. Don't imagine, says he with some fire, that I shall forget them; I am even sorry that I follow'd your advice, as it possibly may make me unhappy all my life-time: We are treated like so many slaves; but don't fail, says he, of supporting what I have promis'd to undertake for our common interest. The place we were in did not give us an opportunity of explaining our selves farther: I return'd to the band I belong'd to; and the election being over in a moment, such as chance had favour'd were taken from the rest. Joy sparkled in their eyes; and tho' the others did their utmost to conceal their jealousy, it was nevertheless painted on their countenances. The minister said to us, Here are your wives; receive them from the hand of God, who has now declar'd his will; upon which he bid us embrace them. I turn'd my eyes to *Gelin*, to put him in mind that now was the time to put his design in execution; but was very much surpriz'd to see him immediately obey the minister's order. He even gave us to understand by a little nod, that we might imitate him. I understood too well, that what design soever he might have form'd to assist us, 'twas imprudent in him to go those lengths,
and

and that so publick a testimony of consent would form such a tie as would be difficult for us to break; however, his example and that of my companions prevail'd with me to imitate them, when I embrac'd with a sorrowful air the woman I was to look upon as my wife. Tho' my heart had not been inflam'd for another, I yet should have discover'd the same reluctance; for fortune had been so unpropitious, that it seem'd to have reserv'd the most disagreeable woman among them for me.

Tho' *Gelin* thought to do well, yet the sequel will shew that he acted very imprudently, nor was I less silly than he in relying wholly upon him; but his wit and boldness made me fancy him the fittest person to manage our affairs, and knowing his vivacity. I little thought he would have ruin'd our hopes by his ill-tim'd prudence and moderation. But this was the source of all our misfortunes: He imagin'd that in order to be more secure of the suspension of our marriage, which he intended to require, the best way would be to act so as not to occasion the least doubt of our sincerity, and this only had prompted him to embrace the woman who was presented to him for his bride. A fatal reasoning! which might indeed have contributed to gain us what we then desir'd, but which afterwards ruin'd all our happiness, and had like to have cost us our lives.

The minister was going to join us with the usual ceremonies, when *Gelin* raised his voice, in order to publish our request to the whole assembly. I did not hear what he said: He deliver'd himself in *Frensh*, that being much easier to him than our language, which he had learnt only since his leaving *France* with Mrs. *Eliot*. All the colony was compos'd of *English* and *French*; both languages were well understood in it, and the minister had spoke in the *English* tongue, in order to be better understood by me and three of my companions, as we did not understand *French*. I therefore did not understand *Gelin's* discourse, but he spoke very gracefully, and we had no reason to suspect his intentions; besides, I easily discover'd by the countenances of the assistants that they look'd upon his request as reasonable. All the spectators applauded his discourse: The minister himself was the first person that approv'd it; he even gave the name of wisdom to the desire we shew'd of being acquainted with our destin'd brides,

brides, and meriting their affection before we were join'd together for life. Six weeks were allowed us to satisfy so just and modest a desire; and as we appear'd satisfied with the time, every one applauded, as we came out of the church, the conduct we had observ'd with regard to the assembly.

There was not one of my companions but wished as ardently as myself for an opportunity of meeting together, in order that we might consult on our affairs; accordingly we got away from a crowd of importunate people who were got round us, and withdrew to a solitary place. *Gelin* was overjoy'd, and the first question he ask'd us was, what we thought of the service he had done us, and whether we did not approve his artful management? He afterwards confess'd to us, without giving us time to answer, that what obligations soever we might think we ow'd him, he was persuaded that none of us would reap so much benefit from the Success of this action as himself. I should have been undone, says he to us with an air of transport, had the minister and the assembly been as averse to my discourse as fate has been to my wishes. I don't conceal it from you, my friends; I am distractedly in love, but unhappily for me, 'tis not with the woman destiny has allotted me to marry. He added, that he wanted us to advise him in that affair, and stood in need of that friendly assistance he had bound himself by oath to give us. After he had open'd himself in this manner, we gaz'd one upon another; we seem'd to be in equal confusion, and continued silent for some moments. At last we all spoke in our turns, and 'twas only to declare that we all labour'd under the same discontent, and desir'd the same assistance as *Gelin*. This similitude of affection increas'd the friendship which had already united us. The warmth with which each of us express'd himself when he mention'd his passion, plainly shew'd the zeal with which we resolved to serve each other reciprocally; because there was no man among us but would measure the assistance he would afford others by that he himself requir'd of them. Our first debates were how to find out an expedient to see our mistresses: This was the most difficult point; and as for the rest, we relied as much on love and fortune, as on the advice we should receive from one another in the conferences we propos'd.

proposed frequently to hold. One of our companions got over this obstacle, by assuring us that he had heard the man at whose house he liv'd say, that the girls would not be confin'd after the election was over; whence he concluded that we should have the liberty to see and converse with them, and could not but easily find our mistresses, as the country was so little in extent, not to mention that the houses stood almost together round the church and the store-house. We were unanimously agreed, that as prudence and discretion were most necessary to the success of our design, every one should not only be careful of his own conduct, but also watch over his companions. Our interests were so inseparable, that it was impossible but the slips of every single person must prejudice the common cause. With regard to the conduct we were to observe to our intended wives, all we resolved was, that we should behave with decency, and referr'd the improvement of our schemes till such time as our hopes should be a little better grounded, and we should see a little farther into the success of our enterprize. 'Twas necessary for us to meet often, in order to confer together; but as the doing this too frequently might occasion suspicions, we appointed twice a week only, and at the same time the exact day, hour and place.

We then separated, in order to return to our respective habitations, and I still continued at Mrs. *Eliot's*. We had not been acquainted that we were to continue in our several places of abode till such time as we were married, when each of us was to have a house given him, and be made master of a family. I found Mrs. *Eliot* alone, who expected me at supper, but was surprized to see four plates laid on the table, as there never had been but two before. She prevented my asking her any questions about it, by telling me that as the election was over, I should thenceforwards have the liberty of being in company with her daughters, and that they were going to sup with us. I won't, says she, speak contemptuously of the young woman whom fate has allotted you; but without suffering myself to be blinded by the love I have for my daughters, I believe you would not have come the worst off, had heaven given you one of them. They have pretty well answer'd the care I have taken of their education; and

and as I esteem you so much, says the good woman, what a pleasure would it have been to me could I have call'd you my son! As I was thanking her for this testimony she gave me of her friendship and civility, her daughters, to whom she had given notice of my return, came in and saluted us. But now let the reader conceive, if he can, my joy and astonishment; for I discover'd by the first glance that the youngest of them was the idol of my heart. 'Twas the same sweet creature who had rais'd the emotions of my soul at church, and whom I had sworn to love tenderly as long as I liv'd. I must confess that all the discreet plans I had form'd vanish'd away in an instant, when turning about to Mrs. *Eliot*; and without considering the effects which my transport might produce, Ah! madam, said I, you are mother to the person I love, on whom all my felicity depends. She laugh'd at the exclamation I made; and answer'd as tho' it had been the result of compliment. I then perceiv'd that I had done wrong in explaining myself so openly, and therefore endeavour'd to check my imprudence in the sequel of our conversation. But tho' my expressions were less warm, my glances were so passionate, that Mrs. *Eliot* plainly saw the disposition of my heart. She affected to discourse on indifferent subjects at supper, and afterwards made a sign to her daughters to withdraw. When we were alone she told me with a serious air, that she fancied I had an inclination for her second daughter, and that she could not comprehend where I first form'd it; in short, that the whole was a mystery she desir'd me to clear up. I mus'd a little on what answer I should make, being in doubt whether or no it would be prudent to trust her; but at last, as I relied very much on her goodness, I told her ingenuously in what manner I had been struck at church, and without discovering to her the circumstances which related to my companions, I confess'd that fortune had determin'd so contrary to my inclinations, that I was ready to attempt any thing to avoid submitting to it. She was silent for some time, and the perplexity she seem'd to be in gave me the utmost uneasiness: I was afraid I had open'd myself too much to a woman of her prudence, and expected that she would look upon my affection for her daughter as a crime. I cannot, says she at last, approve your passion, with-

without casting a blemish on my honour, and wounding my conscience. Your love is come too late, and I cannot see how you will be able to succeed in it: I could have wish'd indeed from my soul that it had been possible for you to marry my daughter; but since there's no room to hope for it, I beg you never to mention it more. I am even sorry that you explain'd yourself so far. No, says she, after pausing a moment, I can't do any thing for you; 'tis now too late, and I beg of you never to open your lips about it. Saying this she withdrew, but not seemingly angry, I made numberless reflections on her answer: I first consider'd it as a dreadful sentence, which at once blasted all my wishes. However, when I recollected the manner of her addressing me, and her contemplative air, a plain Indication I thought of her approbation, I persuaded myself that she could not absolutely condemn what she had confess'd would otherwise have been agreeable to her; and tho' she would not do any thing to gratify my passion, yet nothing prevented my supposing that she might possibly approve what I might attempt for myself. I judg'd that decency would not permit a woman of her age, and one so much respected in the colony, to have any hand in the little stratagems of lovers, or to act contrary to the decisions of the old men. She had indeed told me, that she was angry with me for revealing my passion to her; but then I suppos'd she would not be so should I succeed in my addresses, and that her design was only to hint to me that it was proper she should seem to know nothing of the matter. This explanation appear'd so natural to me, and agreed so well with the esteem and friendship Mrs. *Eliot* had hitherto discover'd for me, that I resolv'd to make it a kind of rule for the regulation of my conduct. 'Twill be an easy matter for me, said I, to find out by her behaviour to me hereafter whether I had flatter'd myself too much. In case she does not forbid me the sight of her daughter, I then shall have room to believe that so far from condemning my passion, she approves of it secretly, and wishes it may be successful.

These agreeable reflections made me pass the night very happily; and when morning was come I sought for an opportunity of seeing *Angelica*, for that was the name of Mrs. *Eliot*'s lovely daughter. I was not denied the pleasure of conversing with her, and was so happy as to be some moments alone with her. The impression which her charms had made upon me at a distance was faint in comparison of the new ardour which a moment's conversation with her made me feel. Her whole person seem'd to me a composition of wonders. I continued trembling with love and admiration, and whilst I first contemplated on her features in silence for a few moments, such an image was form'd in my heart as is not in the power of heaven or men ever to efface. Tho' this dumb language was pretty expressive, I nevertheless resolv'd to breathe my passion in words. She listen'd without once interrupting me, and did not discover in her eyes that affected anger or disdain with which hypocrites and coquets endeavour to impose upon their admirers. Her modesty reveal'd itself by an innocent blush, which added new beauty to her countenance, and her sincerity in her answer confirm'd the idea my passion had already form'd of her good sense and tenderness. She told me that so far from being displeased at the inclination I discover'd for her, she thank'd heaven for it; that, more indifferent to marriage than was suppos'd, she had gone to the election with reluctance, but that she confess'd my glances, and an emotion of heart she could not describe, had suspended her indifference for some time; that she wish'd to be the happy person whom fate had design'd for me; that this desire was vastly pleasing, and that 'twas with regret she saw herself lost to all hope; but that as she was no longer allow'd to entertain any, she only reserv'd some small pretension to my esteem and friendship.

Tho' I had not before been conquer'd by her charms, this noble and virtuous freedom would have won me to her for ever; and therefore thought myself not oblig'd to be reserv'd with a person of this character, or to employ the little artifices with which vulgar lovers use to succeed in their amours. I instantly resolv'd to discover to her not only all the secrets of my own heart, but even what my companions had concerted, and did not conceal
either

either their murmurs or machinations. If I have been so fortunate, said I, as to merit a little of your esteem before I was so happy as to converse with and know you, I have some reason to flatter myself that this declaration of my love will not lessen it. I now make to you the oath I have sworn a thousand times internally, never to love any person but you; or in case I am not so happy as to obtain your affection, to abandon the whole sex. But why should I not hope you'll have some regard for me? Are you not entirely the mistress of my destiny? And to what purpose is the decree of fortune, if you do but declare in my favour? In a word, 'tis in your power to grant me all that my heart desires. Let me now see whether the esteem you flatter'd me with is sufficient to make you attempt any thing for my sake? — This lovely woman was as prudent as she was beautiful and modest. She answer'd that she had explain'd herself sufficiently, to shew that she should think it a happiness to be mine; but then she saw so little possibility of it, that there was no room to entertain the least hopes of it; that she was oblig'd to act with the utmost caution, for the sake of her duty and honour, and that after the decision of fortune, and the consent we had given to it, she saw no possibility of reconciling them with love. I easily answer'd this objection: The conduct, said I, of your people, with regard to us, is unjust and tyrannical; and 'tis a thing unprecedented to oblige men that are free to marry women whom they cannot love. Hitherto indeed every thing has seem'd voluntary on our side, but then a false construction has been put on our inclinations, if what was only an effect of our prudence was look'd upon as a mark of our consent. We did not oppose the election, because at the same time that we were afraid of fomenting divisions in the colony, we hop'd that fate would be so propitious to us as to make us satisfied with our lot. Unhappily it has declar'd against us; this is a misfortune that gives us some pain, as it may occasion uneasinesses; but we are so far from resolving to comply with it, that we are all resolv'd to recover that liberty we have been unjustly depriv'd of. What upright man would condemn so equitable and natural a resolution? I therefore don't see any thing in my addresses that any

way interferes with your duty. I am in the same case with a tender and passionate lover who endeavours to gain the affections of a woman he adores; and as all my desires are grounded on honour, you may compleat my felicity without injuring either your honour or innocence. I then told her, in order that what I said might make the greater impression, the reasons I had to think that her mother would not be displeased at my passion, and represented to her that she should not regard the censure of a few old men, and some jealous rivals, if heaven and her mother did but indulge us their approbation. She agreed that what I said was right, and was so delighted with what I told her concerning her mother, that she did not scruple to tell me at once she was ready to acquiesce with my wishes, provided her mother consented to it. As I did not intend to deceive her, I was so frank as to tell her, that what I call'd her mother's approbation was to be received with some restrictions. I made her comprehend, that as her parent was bound by the political considerations of respect, she possibly might scruple to grant us a direct consent; but then, said I, I am certain she approves of it in her heart, and wishes it may be successful. Just as I spoke these words Mrs. *Eliot* happen'd to come into the room. Her presence suggested a little the artifice which was of advantage to me; and this was to get cunningly from her own mouth the confirmation of what I had related with regard to her inclinations; being fully persuaded by the answer her daughter had just before made me, that the least appearance of a direct approbation would remove every obstacle. Alas! madam, said I with a melancholy tone as she came in, what have I done that fate should exclude me from the pleasing hope of calling you mother? 'Tis only since I saw *Angelica* that I have learnt to feel all my sorrows; I never shall be easy. — I am as afflicted as you can be, replied Mrs. *Eliot* frankly: I believe you could have been very well pleased with that little creature, says she, pointing to her daughter: She's a very good-natur'd girl, and I will be so vain as to say, very like myself. You would then, said I, have freely indulg'd her to my wishes; and therefore I am only to accuse fortune, since I should have obtain'd your consent. — Tho' these expressions were wholly

wholly the effect of art, I yet spoke them with as much warmth as tho' they had been suggested by nature, and was even melted to tears. Mrs. *Eliot* perceiving it, could not forbear weeping; when taking me by the hand, she assur'd me she could have hazarded her life with pleasure to obtain me for her daughter's husband. This confession was all I desir'd; upon which I chang'd the conversation, and defer'd to another opportunity the making a proper use of what *Angelica* had heard. I was not long without one; for the enchanting maid saw into my whole design, and as her heart was incapable of harbouring the least dissimulation, she confess'd that the innocent stratagem which love had prompted me to employ, gave her the highest satisfaction. I am, says she, with a most charming frankness, persuaded of two things: the first is, that you have a sincere affection for me; for to what else can I ascribe this preference you give me over the rest of my companions, and what affects me still more, is that ardour, that emotion which I discover in you every time you move towards me? I judge of the impulses of your heart by those I feel in my own. Moreover, says she, I don't doubt, from what my mother said, but she approves your passion in her own mind; and I conceive at the same time that she is oblig'd to observe a certain decorum, and therefore you are not to expect that she will give you a more express consent. But supposing I need only be careful of my honour and duty, tell me, says she, blushing at the same time, what you require me to do, and how you think to make me your wife? This question threw me into the utmost perplexity; for, to confess the truth, I had not yet thought of any expedient to satisfy a virtuous young woman. I depended on *Gelin's* art and vivacity. This was to be debated in our first interview; I therefore was oblig'd to own to my dear mistress that I had not yet fix'd upon the expedient; but I assur'd her that as I had as great a regard for her honour as she herself could have, she might depend upon it I never would propose any thing to her inconsistent with it. My companions, said I, and myself, have the most chaste and innocent views. We are to meet together, in order to take a common resolution on this important article, and whatsoever it be, 'twill be as much the

the result of love as of wisdom and virtue. I indeed waited for the day of our assembly with the utmost impatience. In this interval, decency obliged me to visit sometimes the woman whom chance had appointed for my wife; but then the comparison I made of her every visit with the real object of my affections, made me still fonder of the amiable *Angelica*. I was almost continually in her company; and as it was natural, since I liv'd with Mrs. *Eliot*, that I should be very familiar with her daughters, no great notice could be taken of my addresses. I daily found, that how violent soever a lover may imagine his flame is, yet this passion is ever increasing; for the last moments I spent with *Angelica* were always the most delightful: I discover'd new charms in her every moment, and what compleated my satisfaction was, that I did not endeavour more assiduously to convince her of my sincerity, than she did to shew me that she had the deepest sense of the obligations she owed me for it.

The time for our conference being come, my companions met as punctually as I did: We had thought proper not to be seen together some days before, in order that our meeting might not be suspected. This caution was very necessary, as we had to do with so many suspicious old men, who had nothing else to do but to watch us; wherefore we were vastly pleas'd at this opportunity we had of meeting together, and discoursing as we should think proper. 'Twould have been an agreeable sight for an indifferent person to have seen the confusion we were in at our first greeting, every one being eager to speak, and to give an account of the posture of his affairs. At last we all told our story: Not one of us had complain'd of love, for all our mistresses prov'd kind, but with this difference perhaps, that some had comply'd less out of esteem for their lovers, than from the strong inclination they had to put on the marriage-fetters. However, we all seem'd to be equally well satisfied, self-love persuading us that we ow'd our conquests to our merit. The business was to give a happy issue to so good a beginning, and several methods were propos'd, all which were a long time debated upon: That of addressing our grievances in a body to the colony, was rejected as too uncertain:

certain : for our misfortune would have been irremediable, had the old men been let into our designs, and refus'd their consent. That of leaving the island, and carrying off our mistresses, was also look'd upon as dangerous, tho' *Gelin* himself made the motion. We should have run great hazards, not only in the methods we should have been oblig'd to employ to elude the vigilance of the inhabitants, and seize upon the barks; but still greater in the flight itself, which we could not pretend to attempt, without a pilot through the wide ocean, as we were wholly ignorant of navigation. However, *Gelin* insisted strongly on this last proposal. 'Twill, says he, be as easy for us to leave the island as to assemble here secretly; we'll meet on the strand in the night-time; and as for the chains by which the barks are held, we may easily force them away. We won't run them into the sea till day-break, and I don't see why we should not find out the island of *St. Helena* as well as *Mr. Drington* did. This argument had no manner of weight with us. To judge by the event, possibly we might better have follow'd it; but we then look'd upon it as a rash undertaking, not to mention that we did not think ourselves so secure of our mistresses as to dare make them so odd a proposal as that of abandoning their parents and friends, and flying away with us. The third proposal was, that we should marry privately. *Gelin*, who also propos'd this, represented to us the necessity of it with so much art and eloquence, that we rejected the two former, and were oblig'd to confess 'twas the only proposal that was feasible. The most fearful among us started some other difficulties; but these were over-rul'd by the strong resolution we had of indulging our passion. How far soever the old men and the slighted maids might carry their resentments, we at least suppos'd that they would never once harbour a thought of taking our mistresses from us, after they had once received our plighted faith, and they themselves should have allowed us the liberty of marrying. This proposal at last prevail'd, so that all now remain'd was, to get our mistresses to consent, and this depended on our management. We scarce doubted of the success of it; for 'twas not probable they would long demur, when their she-companions should set them so good an example.

ple. Numbers give courage, and those who boast the greatest wisdom are incapable of withstanding the attacks of love, when they think they have hit upon reasons to justify themselves.

This important deliberation being ended in this manner, we parted full of the most agreeable hopes. *Angelica* gave me an opportunity the very next day of explaining myself to her, in order that she might hear the result of our conference. I did not disguise any part of it: You are sincere, said I, and therefore your answers must be decisive. Remember that the expedient I propose to you is the only one that can make me yours for ever. 'Tis such an expedient as virtue cannot condemn, and if you listen but ever so little to love, you'll find it a very easy one. What, said I, will be wanting to make our union holy and lawful? You know what it is that the essence of marriage consists in; 'tis not in a vain ceremony, but in the gift of the heart, and the oaths and promises which accompany it. Five couple of lovers shall be witnesses of ours, to whom we'll do the same service they require of us, and who shall be engag'd by self-interest to attest the truth of our vows. The sole reason, said I, of my mentioning these motives is, merely to remove all scruples which honour and the least shadow of fear might suggest; for the chief inducement to engage your consent should owe it self to the tenderness and violence of my flame. She answer'd, that as we had employ'd some time before we had made this resolution, I could not take it ill if she herself also desir'd time to revolve these things in her own mind; that she indeed foresaw that her conclusions would be agreeable to my desires; but that whatever step I might engage her to take, she yet would throw in one condition, without which she believ'd it impossible to gratify both our wishes with convenience; that she desir'd her mother might be inform'd of our marriage, at least as soon as it was concluded, and that she thought it would be proper for me to acquaint her with it first. I promised to comply exactly with all she desir'd. 'Tis, said I, in your happiness only that mine can be found; thus my whole attention will be to make you content and happy, by doing always whatever you shall desire. She was so much affected with my passionate expressions, that she confess'd before

before our conversation ended, that she should come to a speedy resolution.

Love was equally propitious to the rest of my companions. At the third consultation, we found, after each man had given an account of the progress he had made, that we might all rely on our mistresses affections. We were to enjoy our liberty about a month longer; but as we were eager to gratify our wishes, we resolved to make all possible dispatch. 'Twas now the most beautiful season of the year. We pitched upon the night following for the solemnization of our amorous mysteries; and the place being mentioned, we thought none was better adapted to our purpose than that we were then assembled in. 'Twas a beautiful meadow, surrounded with a thicket, about a hundred yards from the town, if I may so call it. We agreed that every one should bring thither about midnight the dear object of his affections. The day before was to be employ'd in our mistresses service, and in assisting them to steal away from their respective habitations. *Angelica* trembled when I told her we were so near the moment which was to crown our felicity. I had now some new struggles to combat with, and a few slight objections to obviate; but love stood my friend on these occasions, and immediately remov'd all the difficulties which my amiable mistress started: so that *Angelica* promised to be ready to follow me at midnight.

And now the wish'd-for hour was come. All was calm and hush in the colony, six couple of happy lovers excepted, whose felicity was just approaching. I waited for *Angelica* at the street-door, which I had open'd softly. She did not make me wait long; but Gods! with what raptures did I see her appear, and look round for me with a fearful and confus'd eye! I discover'd myself, and receiving her for the first time with open arms, I clasp'd her with a rapturous embrace. We flew to the meadow in an instant, where part of our companions were got with their mistresses. The moon seem'd to shine with unusual brightness, and as tho' it was delighted to behold a sight worthy the attention of heaven and earth; and by an effect of the exquisite satisfaction of my heart, which diffus'd itself in some measure over all nature, I never found the air

so soft, or the verdure so beautiful as it was all the rest of that charming night.

As soon as our little company were got together, *Gelin*, who had assum'd some superiority over us, by his decisive air and great volubility of tongue, harangued in a very agreeable manner on the ceremony which was going to begin. He first gave thanks to love and fortune, in the name of the assembly; when, talking more in the Christian style, he expatiated on the duties of the marriage state with as much eloquence as the most able preacher could have done. We all applauded his discourse, when he read a kind of oath which he had drawn up, the terms of which were so very strong and binding, that, abstracted from the great love we had for our fair-ones, made us for ever theirs: it was admirably well adapted to check inconstancy, and prevent distaste, tho' we were to cohabit a thousand years with them. We all repeated it one after another, and our mistresses, or rather brides, did the same after us. The whole ceremony was perform'd with the utmost decency; what therefore was wanting to make this a holy and solemn marriage? Heaven no doubt approv'd of it, for we had taken strict care not to act in opposition to its dictates. Nevertheless, a set of Men were so barbarous and unjust, as to look upon this union as sacrilegious; and dissolved ties which ought to be as immortal by their nature, as they should be by our inclination. I can never reflect on this delicious night, without admiring that my heart, which, was then susceptible of so much joy, could afterwards be oppress'd with grief and despair! Heavens! how unaccountable is the sudden transition from the most exquisite felicity to the extremes of misery!

Every instant of this lovely night was distinguished by a transport; we spent it in the arms of our dear wives. How swift did the moments fly! But alas! 'twas the greatest imprudence in us, not to suspect its being so fleeting. Day-light now broke in upon us, when we found too late, that we had for some time taken the light of the sun for that of the moon. There was no one among us but was sensible of the danger to which we had expos'd ourselves, which was still more to be apprehended upon our wives account; for it was necessary they should all

slip into their houses unperceiv'd; but this was scarcely practicable. We already heard the inhabitants, who were coming out of their houses, and fear made us think they were going to look for their daughters; upon which we held a council for a few moments. Several of my companions were of opinion, that we should all return home together without the least ceremony, and tell all we met with that we were married: this, say they, we shall one day be obliged to do, let us therefore take this opportunity, since we cannot extricate ourselves any other way. Our brides oppos'd this resolution out of fear and bashfulness, fancying that they would inevitably be expos'd to a certain shame, in case it should be known that they had been catch'd in some measure in the fact. Notwithstanding they confess'd that they must be obliged one time or other to reveal their marriage, they yet wish'd it might be done by degrees, and so as not to expose them to raillery, thinking they had nothing else to dread; which was also our opinion. To satisfy them, we agreed that they should go to the village, when in case they could not steal into their houses unperceiv'd, they then should invent some story, in order to excuse their staying abroad all night. I can't conceive what excuse they could have hit upon; but the moment as they were leaving us, after having tenderly embraced, we spy'd the minister of the colony advancing towards us with several old men. They were come only to take the air, but the sight of six of their daughters, whom they saw in our company, and some of them in our arms, struck them with fear and astonishment. They walked on as fast as their age would give them leave. Fear prompted us first to fly, and to run childishly behind the trees; but we consider'd that this was declaring ourselves guilty. *Gelin* again propos'd that we should go and declare our marriage, but in vain; and 'twas also disapprov'd by our wives. Upon this, said I, we are all undone, in case we are disconcerted: listen to me, I'll undertake to manage the affair. The minister must certainly have seen us, but then I don't believe he was able to know how many we were exactly. Two of us, said I, shall squat down, and creep along till they get to the trees. Upon which I made two of them do so, and bid them hide as well as they could. And now, said I to the rest, let us

and

and our wives go up to the minister. We'll tell them, that as we were walking in the air this morning, we happen'd to meet with them by mere chance : he'll not have the least notion that we met in an amorous way, when he sees more men than women. They all applauded my expedient. It happened very luckily that the grass was high enough to hide our two companions, for the minister and his company were not above forty yards from us. We went up to them, and as we were going I desir'd *Gelin*, who expressed himself with greater fluency than I did, to speak as I had advis'd him to do. He accordingly did so, and with so unconcern'd an air, that they seem'd to believe him. Nevertheless, as they were returning to the village with us, they put on such a serious countenance as surpriz'd me very much ; for I did not suppose that they had seen us embrace, or suspected that *Gelin* had told them a story. Several of the inhabitants seem'd to take a particular notice of our coming in a body ; but the minister's being along with us secur'd us from calumny.

We all took leave of him with a pretty indifferent air, when the five wives of my companions went home, and I did not hear whether their absence had been perceiv'd, or what reception they met with. As for my self, who had the same way to go as my wife, I concerted with her what excuse we should employ to satisfy her mother. What occasion, said I, have we to use any scruples ? You know what we agreed upon, and what I promised at your own request. I'll detain your mother whilst you're going to your chamber, when I'll acquaint her at once with our mutual passion and our marriage. We have no occasion to be afraid of her ; she loves us, and therefore her anger will neither last long, nor be violent. I am not afraid, says my dear partner, upon my own account ; but I have a foreboding that something sinister will happen to you. I cou'd wish that I only were to suffer by it. The tone of voice with which she utter'd these words, chill'd the blood in my veins, when I stopt and fix'd my eyes stedfastly upon her. Gods ! said I, what is it you declare to me, and wherefore these words ? She continued for some time without making me any answer, but as I urg'd her to speak, she begg'd me to pardon her for having

conceal'd from me a thing she had heard the night before. Yesterday, says she, after we had talk'd together, my sister told me that the minister had made my mother a visit; that they had discours'd together a long time with great warmth, and that she had an opportunity of listning to part of their conversation. Tho' she did not hear it distinctly, she yet found by certain expressions the minister used, that he complain'd of your indifference for that person whom fate had allotted for your wife; and ascrib'd it to the inclination he fancied you had for my sister or me. My mother protested she knew nothing of the matter: But this imperious and passionate man, who commands the respect of the colony, answer'd, that 'twas a matter which concern'd her highly; when going away he bid her remember what had happen'd to *Guiton*. This, says *Angelica*, is a story capable of terrifying all such husbands as presume to act contrary to their duty. Mr. *Guiton* was one of the chief men of our colony; every one had the utmost esteem for him, because, abstracted from his personal merit, he was son to the mayor of *Rochelle*, who govern'd it during the siege, and signaliz'd himself by an extraordinary love for Religion. But having the ill fortune to be surpriz'd in a love intrigue with another man's wife, he was sentenced to be thrown into the sea with his love, before the whole colony; and it was accordingly executed. All the old men thought themselves obliged to make him an example, in order to make the bands of wedlock inviolable. Tho' this story, says my wife, made the deepest impression on me, I yet did not think proper to acquaint you with it; not only because you have persuaded me, that our engagement is not contrary to justice and consequently, that we are not in the same case with *Guiton*; but from a stronger motive which I am not ashamed to own to you, I mean the great love I have for you. I necessarily must be under some apprehensions that yours will grow colder, by the dread it may fill you with. I am, says she, more fearful to day than I was yesterday. I know not whether 'twas our meeting the minister that makes me so uneasy, or whether, as I am now yours, I am therefore more afraid of losing you; but methinks my heart tells me secretly, that some evil will happen

you. Wou'd to heaven that my uneasiness may be vain, or at least that the evil may light upon me only.

As I was troubled at the beginning of this discourse, the conclusion of it eas'd me. I consider'd only the tender and amiable part of it, and assur'd my wife that I should love her eternally for it. Mr. *Guiton's* story, said I, is very different from ours. If you had told it me yesterday, and the minister's threatening visit, it would have made as little impression upon me then as it does now. You love me, do you not? You don't repent of what you have done for me, and are resolv'd to be true to your engagements so long as life shall last? Let the minister complain and threaten if he will, we are not his slaves. As for the evils you fear, I don't think heaven is preparing any for us, since we have not deserv'd them; and in case men should resolve to injure us, they possibly may not find it an easy matter; and depend upon it, their malice shall not easily reach you. I am indeed much easier, and more resolute since our marriage than I was before. *Angelica* was mine, so that my wishes were indulg'd; nor had I any fears, for besides the strength of our bands, which I thought it would be impossible for the minister or the colony to break, I felt myself inspir'd with so much courage as would enable me to defend mine and my wife's privileges.

We were now come to her mother's, and I did not find any one had taken notice of our absence. Whilst *Angelica* stole softly to her chamber, I went into a room where I found Mrs. *Eliot* alone. She received me in such a manner that I was sure she had not heard of our elopement, which made me almost resolve to take that opportunity of discovering our marriage to her. After many reflections, I fancied it would be better to do so, since it would prevent other people from making any ill impressions on her mind with regard to our proceedings.—I fell on my knees, and told her I was her son.—The fear, said I, of displeasing you, or rather that of exposing you to any danger, prevented me from acquainting you with our marriage before we had solemniz'd it; but I flatter'd my self that you would not be displeas'd with me afterwards, since you wish'd it: The lovely *Angelica* is my wife: I would have sacrific'd the greatest favours of fortune to arrive at this

happiness; the only thing now that is wanting, is your consent to make our felicity perfect; for next to the title of *Angelica's* husband, nothing is so dear to me as that of your son. I might have made a much longer speech, before Mrs. *Eliot* could have been able to answer me, she being in the utmost surprize, and seiz'd with dread. At last, after I had continued silent for some time, she answer'd me with a trembling voice, that she wish'd to heaven we had not acted too rashly; and that it would have been impossible for her to have heard a more strange or a more perplexing piece of news. Explain yourself farther, says she, with an air of confusion; tell me what it is you call your marriage, and in what manner you are become my son. — I then told her our whole adventure. Dear *Bridge*! says she, after I had spoke, I am afraid you have acted imprudently, and plung'd us into difficulties whence we shall never extricate ourselves. I won't conceal from you that I wish'd to see you my daughter's husband, and that even this instant, in the midst of my confusion, I am glad you are so: But listen to what you are to fear, and very possibly myself also: I tremble so much to think of it, that I can scarce reveal it to you. — She then told me the discourse she had had the day before with the minister, whereof her daughter had heard only a part. That haughty and imperious clergyman was exasperated against me for a particular reason, the woman whom chance had allotted for my wife being his brother's daughter. She had told him; and he himself might possibly have taken notice, that I had discover'd very little love when I visited her; and indeed it would have been impossible for me to court a woman who, to my eye, was a very disagreeable creature, tho' I had not been so very fond of the charming *Angelica*. I had visited the former very seldom, and less than I ought to have done for my own sake and that of decency. The minister, who was very fond of his niece, looking upon my indifference as a mark of contempt and aversion, was prodigiously nettled; and as we are always blind to the imperfections of those we love, he had not ascrib'd my coldness so much to the ill qualities of his niece, as to my bad taste. As I us'd to stay whole days together at Mrs. *Eliot's* without stirring out, he suppos'd that nothing but love could be the motive of it, and then calling to mind the

the great testimonies of friendship that good woman had discover'd for me on all occasions, and her civility in offering me her house till such time as one should be provided for me, he was persuaded that she indulg'd the passion I must certainly have for one of her daughters. These were the circumstances which had brought him to her house, and made him so angry. Mrs. *Eliot* at first answer'd his reproaches with great coolness; but he afterwards broke into certain injurious expressions she could not bear, and therefore had answer'd him in a very sharp manner. In a word, Mrs. *Eliot*, to defend the honour of her daughters, told him that she had given them so virtuous an education there was no fear they would ever act as *Guiron's* mistress had done. Now who should this woman be, who had been thrown into the sea with her lover, but the minister's sister-in-law, his niece's mother. An ecclesiastic seldom pardons an outrage of this nature: he had led Mrs. *Eliot*, at his going away, to recollect that he had first given his voice to have his sister-in-law put to death, for an example to the whole colony; and he protested with an oath, that as he had acted with so much severity against his own family, he should employ much greater against those who should swerve never so little from their duty. I don't doubt, says Mrs. *Eliot*, but he hinted at one of my daughters when he threaten'd in this manner. The improbability to me there was yesterday that such a scene would have been acted last night as I find there has been, prevented me from charging my daughters to be more circumspect than ever in their conduct. The *evil* is done, and we are thereby expos'd to the utmost resentment of our minister. — Alas! dear mother, said I interrupting her, what name is that you give to the most sacred ties that ever were made? you call it an *evil*, and I defy the minister ever to prove any thing guilty in it. — I confess, says she, that as you have proceeded in it, it deserves a better name, and I will therefore look upon your marriage as holy and lawful; but you don't know what it is to be the object of an ecclesiastic's hatred, and are unacquainted with the character of our parson in particular. Depend upon't, says she, he'll set every engine at work to destroy us.

I must confess that the hearing her talk in this manner, and recollecting the great obligations by which she had bound me, I could not forbear breaking into a violent passion: He destroy us! said I, he should not live a moment longer could I think he harbour'd the least thought of that kind. Don't be afraid, madam, said I, tho' there are but six of us, I yet believe we are capable of making a greater number dread us: We'll do ourselves justice, since we are forc'd to it; and be assur'd that we won't do any thing that shall prejudice you. — I was going to my companions, in order to encourage them to stand up in their own defence; but Mrs. *Eliot* seeing me in such a passion, desir'd me to stay a little till I was cooler. I then desir'd her to give orders for *Angelica's* being call'd, whom I desir'd to present to her mother. She came in with an air of confusion. Come, dearest creature, said I, come and thank the kindest of mothers, who forgives us for marrying without her consent; 'twas she only we had reason to dread; but her goodness is not to be parallell'd by any thing, except the malice of her enemies. I thank heaven that they are ours at the same time; and methinks I bind myself to you as strongly by the oaths I have made to defend and revenge you, as by that I have taken to love you eternally. Mrs. *Eliot* was extremely kind upon this occasion. She entreated me to calm my transports, and not to discover my resentments till such time as the parson should go about to put his threats in execution. Then, said she, I shall exert myself to the utmost for both your sakes. She then embrac'd her daughter, shedding a few tears at the same time. She said, that indeed she should never have consented to our marriage in case we had ask'd it; but that since providence had order'd matters so happily, she could not but express the satisfaction it now gave her. However, said she, I am far from being easy in my mind; and I apprehend so many dreadful consequences, either from the parson and our old men, who will not fail of condemning the steps you have taken; or from you and your companions, who very possibly will oppose the measures they intend to take, and use you in a cruel manner, that I cannot forbear shuddering when I think of our impending fate. I again assur'd her, that whatever might be the event, she should
not

not be expos'd to the least danger so long as I should be able to defend her.

Whilst I was endeavouring to encourage her in this manner, and dividing my tenderness between my good mother-in-law and my dear wife, word was brought me that a servant of the minister's desir'd to speak with me. I was going to send him back without hearing what he had to say, but Mrs. *Eliot* advis'd me to the contrary. The servant told me that his master wanted to speak with me that instant at his house. Possibly in the passion I was in I should have refus'd to go, had I not consider'd that I might possibly hear something in this visit that might be of advantage to us, and upon that I went thither; and being come, was carried to a parlour, where I was very much surprized to find the rest of my companions. They told me that the minister had sent for them also, and as we were alone, I acquainted them what I had heard from Mrs. *Eliot*, and hinted the consequences they were to draw with regard to themselves, from the circumstances she had inform'd me of. Mrs. *Eliot*, said I, is a woman of great wisdom and experience; she trembles for her daughter and myself, and depend upon't that 'tis not without cause; nor is there any evil can befall us on this occasion but you must be involved in it; when I therefore mention my interest to you, I believe your's must be inseparable from it. They all answer'd, that I need not mention any other motives than those of friendship to engage them to defend both mine and my wife's cause; not to mention, that as we had mutually embark'd in one affair, we must consequently be bound by one common interest. Saying this, we engag'd ourselves that instant, by the most dreadful oaths, to stand by each other to the last drop of our blood. As I had first propos'd this new confederacy, and they called to mind the service I had done them in the meadow, they chose me for their head, and nominated *Gelin* my assistant; and this being done, they took a fresh oath to obey us implicitly, in all things which should relate to our common interest, and that of our wives; and this was done in an instant.

But now the minister came in. I gaz'd upon him with eyes glowing with rage and indignation, for I abhor'd both his person and behaviour. He address'd himself to

me first, thinking that the late scene was of my contriving. The whole colony, said he, is very much disgusted at your behaviour. 'Tis a thing unheard of among us, for people of your age, who are already bound by the most holy promises, to wives whom providence itself has allotted you, to walk out in the night-time with persons of another sex. As this has given the utmost scandal, we are resolv'd not to let it pass uncensur'd. We are not easily impos'd upon by fictitious stories: Where had you been this morning, said he to me with a severe voice; when I met you with a company of young women; women lost to all sense of modesty?

The short but warm conversation I had just before had with my companions, and that I had with Mrs. *Eliot*, left the strongest impression upon me; so that I must confess that I was not cool enough to answer this haughty question with temper and moderation. When we first came into the island, said I to him in a no less angry tone, we justly imagin'd that all the privileges which the inhabitants enjoy, would be indulg'd us, and especially the two principal ones, I mean liberty and equality. In case we do acknowledge any superiority here over us, 'tis not that of a private person, whose only office is to read prayers in church, but that of the general assembly of the colony only. I would therefore, Sir, said I, advise you to lay aside that haughty and imperious air, which becomes you worse than any other person: We'll give an account of our actions to those who are impower'd to enquire into them. These words quite disconcerted the minister's pride; however, after a moment's silence he recover'd. Don't fall into a mistake, said he; tho' I don't assume any authority in this place, I yet declare to you that I speak the sentiments of the whole colony, and in their name I again ask you where you had been this morning? As he was so very urgent, and fearing to prejudice our matters in case I refus'd to answer; I then resolv'd to put an end to the affair, by telling him at once that we were married: upon which I look'd upon my companions, to prepare them for what they were going to hear, in order that they should see I did not do any thing imprudently and without reflection; afterwards turning about to the minister; Learn then, said I to him with an easy and respectful

respectful behaviour, what you seem so very desirous of knowing; We are born free, and therefore nothing seem'd so unjust or so ill-contriv'd as that odious ceremony of casting lots for wives; neither an *Englishman* nor a *Frenchman* can suffer their hearts to be tyranniz'd over in this manner. We have had recourse to our native privileges, and therefore have ourselves made choice of the most tender, the most amiable women for our wives; women who will hereafter divide our pleasures and pains, and administer fresh delights to us in this calm and innocent seat. 'T would have been impossible for us to be happy without them, and as we were assur'd that felicity would attend upon us when we were brought hither, we hope we shall be suffer'd to enjoy what only can make us happy. Having said these words, I made a low bow to him, which my companions did also, but without opening their lips.

It would be to no purpose for me to attempt to describe the first motions of his surprize and indignation: He alternately blush'd and turn'd pale twenty times in a minute; he swell'd, but was unable to open his lips, or to breathe his rage, which seem'd ready to break out. I was asham'd to see him in such transports; upon which I beckon'd to my companions to follow me, and going away, I said to him; You now, Sir, have been let into our secret, which we told you purposely that you might make it public. 'Tis the property of guilt to conceal itself as much as possible, but we cannot reproach ourselves with any crimes. He then answer'd that he'd prove us guilty of more than one, and would find out means to punish us, upon which we left him. My companions thanked me a thousand times for the service I had done them; protested that they were much easier in their minds, and indeed I myself was so. We now did not scruple to acquaint every one we met with what had happen'd: some seem'd to approve it, and others seem'd surpriz'd, and would not tell us what they thought. We then renew'd our mutual engagements before we separated; and the better to pursue our measures in concert, we resolved to continue our assemblies twice a week in the meadow.

I return'd to Mrs. *Eliot*, who waited for me with the utmost impatience: She immediately approv'd the resolution I had taken to divulge the whole to the minister and all the people we met; and she, as well as myself, look'd upon it as a burthen we had thrown off. She then said to me, after all the apprehensions we were under, what had we to fear from the minister's resentments? What harm can he do us? Has he any power over my daughter? I consent to her being your wife, and who has a greater authority over her than me? But notwithstanding these reflections, Mrs. *Eliot* could not forbear being uneasy when she consider'd the minister's implacable temper, and the dispute she had had with him. She desir'd me to repeat to her what had past between the minister and myself. This I did, and thereby increased her pain, as she fancied his anger would be fatal to us. He had mention'd ties and promises, and express'd himself in such a manner, as tho' he look'd upon us as engag'd to our fictitious wives. Heavens! said Mrs. *Eliot*, after musing a moment, how could this reflection slip me? You'll find, said she, that he'll gather all his venom from that quarter, and give it all the force that hatred and malice can inspire.

We spent part of the day in arguing upon this troublesome article, and sent out a servant from time to time, with orders to enquire what was doing in the village, and the construction that was put upon our adventure. He return'd a little after we had sent him out in the evening, and told us, that all the old men had met in the vestry at the minister's desire. We did not doubt but 'twas to debate upon our affair, and this made Mrs. *Eliot* much more anxious; however, my *Angelica* was not in the least uneasy, but told me that love and innocence had calm'd all her fears. As for myself, I was fully persuaded that Mrs. *Eliot* had too much wisdom to be frighted without just grounds; I therefore concluded, notwithstanding I had appear'd so calm and undisturb'd, it would yet be proper for me to take some measures in private for our safety. I thought myself doubly oblig'd to this, as my companions had put me at their head; and accordingly I went out in order to assemble them. This I was oblig'd to do very cunningly; for Mrs. *Eliot* and my wife would not have

have suffer'd me to leave the house till such time as we had heard what had been resolv'd upon in the vestry, had I not invented some excuse. But Gods! how blindly did I run to destruction! I left them purposely to get succour, when my presence was so necessary a little after.

At my leaving the house, I sent a servant to acquaint my faithful friends that I was going to the place of our assembly, and expected them there. We had agreed upon a kind of watch-word, which was given out upon extraordinary occasions, and denoted that it was necessary for us to assemble immediately. They all came a little after, when I found they had also heard that the vestry was met; but they did not seem to be so much affected with it, as I expected they wou'd be; however, I rouz'd them from their dangerous security, by telling them the reflections my mother-in-law had made on the minister's discourse. Let us, said I, be upon our guard, for we are engaged in a very serious affair. Let us tremble for the fate of our dear wives, if we are not concern'd for what may happen to ourselves. Who knows what lengths the angry temper of the minister may engage the old men to go? Most of them are very simple people, who have been long used to follow his determinations, and have them in the utmost veneration. Let us now see what course we shall take in case they pretend to fall upon us publicly.

Several expedients were proposed, some of which were of a violent nature; however, we thought it would be best to try first what could be done in a peaceable way. Accordingly, we resolv'd to go in a body to the vestry, and desire to be admitted into it, hoping that a sincere declaration of our proceedings would make an impression on the old men, and serve, at least for the present, to render all the minister's designs against us abortive. *Gelin* was order'd to speak in our name; upon which we set forward. Every one of us appear'd satisfied with this resolution, which indeed was the wisest we could have taken; but with what prudence soever we had endeavour'd to conduct ourselves hitherto, heaven had decreed it should have an unhappy issue; and injustice and cruelty were to prevail over integrity and virtue. The heads of the
the

the church, the old men, our judges and our fathers, had concerted together to ruin us, and this while we were endeavouring to soften them by our tears.

Alas! how melancholy is it for a person to have been unhappy, when he is sentenced to bear the sad remembrance of his pains, in the midst of never-ending sorrow and despair! It may be justly said of me, that my felicity has scarce lasted above a day. Retrench from my life those days which I spent in the hopes of possessing *Angelica*, and that rapturous night in which I had attain'd the highest point of felicity; whatever preceded or followed that short interval of pleasure, has been one continued series of ill fortune and misery. The reader will now find a most lamentable story.

As we drew near the village, we saw a crowd of people running towards it, who seem'd to be invited thither by something extraordinary. Tho' I was wholly wrapt up in the thoughts of the danger my wife was in, I yet did not think she had any thing to do in the sight before us. However, I ran, in order to gratify my curiosity, and getting thither before my companions, I ask'd what was the matter. I was told that *Angelica*, and some other young women, had been seiz'd by order of the old men, and confin'd together in a close prison. I was struck so prodigiously with what I heard, that I made 'em repeat it to me again. My companions being come up, enquir'd to the same purpose as I had done, and found themselves in pretty near the same condition with myself. They ask'd one another, with an air of the utmost confusion, what we were going to do, and how we were to begin; but as for myself, I was so much oppress'd, that I was not able to open my lips for some moments. At last, embracing him who stood next to me; Heavens! said I, my dear friends! what say you to this fatal stroke? If you love your wives as dearly as I do, won't you lose your lives with me in defending them? Come along; you have appointed me your leader; you shall see me die first, but then don't refuse me your assistance. Notwithstanding this transport, I recollected that we had not a single weapon. I did not know whom we were to fall upon, or where my wife was confin'd. I might have enquir'd, but reflecting that 'tis scarce possi-

ble

ble for a man who is transported with rage to take a prudent resolution, I thought proper to return to Mrs. Elliot's, and advise with her before I attempted any thing farther. Thereupon I advised my friends to return to their several quarters; and as it drew towards evening, I made them promise to meet in the meadow that night, in order to a fresh consultation. We then separated, when I ran till I was out of breath. Alas! said I, as I was going, I am undone; my ruin is but too sure; but my enemies shall not long triumph over me: The perfidious minister shall die; he shall be the first object of my revenge. As I drew near to the house, I observ'd three men walking up and down before it, who, as soon as they saw me, came upon me. I had not the least suspicion of what they intended. They were three of the minister's agents, who waited to seize me; a like number were waiting for each of my companions. They surrounded me, and tho' I made a vigorous resistance, they held me so fast that it was impossible for me to escape out of their hands. So unworthy a treatment threw me into the highest transports of rage, for I was dragg'd, rather than led to prison. As I made a great struggle to get out of their hands, a great many people flock'd about us; I begg'd them to succour me, by representing to them the minister's tyranny and injustice; they heard me, but did not say a word; so that I did not know whether they were touch'd with my calamity or not. At last, they forced me into one of the inner rooms of the storehouse, where I found two of my companions. Having done this, they lock'd the door upon us and withdrew, without saying a word.

The companions of my imprisonment were *Gelin*, and an *Englishman* whose name was *Johnson*; and the three others were also confin'd together. *Gelin* seem'd to be in as great a rage as myself. The first thing he utter'd was a dreadful oath, by which he swore to be revenged in a signal manner for the injury which had been done him, and afterwards to leave the island with his wife, tho' he should expose himself to a thousand dangers on the sea. I was for the present in too great a passion to condemn his resentments; but after having eased ourselves by complaints and threats, I bid him reflect how difficult it would

would be to execute his design ; and that 'twould be acting much more wisely to consider of expedients with coolness. In the first place, said I, we must enquire the reasons why the minister and vestry caused us to be seiz'd. Let each of us ruminate a little upon this matter. *Gelin* having a very quick thought ; I am sure, says he immediately, that having design'd to break off our marriage, as the minister hinted to us, they thought it wou'd be proper to seize us, in order to prevent our consummating it ; for they little imagine we have been beforehand with them. If 'tis so, said I, we may soon put an end to it, by declaring they are our wives : but I don't see that this reason, which indeed is a very natural one why we should be imprison'd, has any relation to our wives confinement. *Gelin* cou'd not answer this objection, tho' he had argued justly enough with regard to us ; so that as our conjectures extended but to half the truth, it was impossible for us to take exact measures. The only resolution we adhered to was, to send word to the old men, or the minister himself, that we had several particulars of the highest importance to communicate ; and then to reveal the whole of our marriage to them, and in what manner we had compleated it so as to render it indissoluble.

This was a necessary step, and would undoubtedly have been successful, had we been opposed by less subtle adversaries, or our wives been more courageous ; but the minister, when he drew up his scheme, had weigh'd every thing that made for or against it. He perceiv'd, that *Gelin* had imagin'd that the consummation of our marriage would ruin all his measures ; and indeed, 'twas purely to prevent it, that he had prevail'd with the vestry to give orders for our being seiz'd ; but as he was afraid he had deferr'd it too long, it being natural to think that a company of young persons who had spent the night together, would have satiated their utmost wishes ; his first care had been to get a complete confession of the whole from our wives. This he had done in so artful and malicious a manner, that instead of engaging them to give a faithful account of the whole, he had on the contrary forced them in some measure to make such a deposition as favour'd his vile views. A moment after they were carried to prison he went thither with some old men,

who

who were to serve as witnesses; when he began to reproach them in the most injurious terms, with their boldness in daring to dispose of themselves without their parents consent, and the approbation of the vestry. He gave them to understand, that such an union as ours, so far from meriting the name of marriage, was an unpardonable crime. At last, after using his utmost endeavours to frighten them, he added, that he hoped, however, they had not done any thing which clash'd with modesty; nor so far abandon'd virtue, as to consent to any thing indecent in the meadow. Having thus prepar'd their minds by this specious discourse, he then enquir'd with an air of authority, what had pass'd between us the night before. The tender creatures were so much puzzled at the question, that partly thro' fear, partly out of modesty, they disguised an essential part of the truth; and the minister having taken down all their words, he got it sign'd immediately by the old men who accompanied him. He came from thence to the store-house, and as he knew *Gelin* and I were more resolute than the rest, he resolv'd to visit us last. This increas'd our misfortunes; for our three companions whom he went to first, being as irresolute as our wives, he intimidated them as easily, and extorted answers from them, that greatly prejudiced the common cause.

He came into our room, at a time when we least expected him, and just as we were talking about sending for him. 'Twas with the utmost constraint that we prevail'd with ourselves to salute him civilly, and listen with temper to what he said. He was accompanied with four old men. The prejudice he had to me in particular, and the answer I had made him some hours before, prompted him undoubtedly to speak to me first. I was sure, says he to me with a sneering air, that the crime you have been guilty of would not be judg'd so innocent by the vestry as you would fain have persuaded me it wou'd. Young people are generally rash and presumptuous, and I see but too evidently, that you have all the defects which are incident to youth. I had so much temper as not to make any answer to this discourse. He then told me that he was come, in the name of the vestry, to hear more
distinct-

distinctly than he had done in his own house, the several circumstances of our nocturnal assembly, and the particulars of an attempt equally repugnant to religion and good manners. *Gelin* was going to speak, but the fear I was under lest his vivacity should spoil all, made me hasten to prevent him. Your reproaches, Sir, said I, don't in the least affect the justice of our cause; I hope that what we have done will be found less criminal by the vestry, when they shall be told it by a man of greater impartiality and temper than you are master of. However, we shall not scruple to acquaint you with the circumstances of our marriage, since you desire it in the name of the vestry; and what we have done is so far from interfering either with religion or virtue, that 'tis our glory we have not done any thing repugnant to either. I then gave him a complete and faithful account of our engagements; and above all, did not omit expatiating upon the most tender part of the ceremony.

He blush'd as I spoke, and when I had ceased speaking, he turn'd about to the old men, and ask'd them with a malicious smile, whether he had not reason to tell them by the way, that he was now going to the most cunning and most dangerous persons of the company? I see plainly, says he, thro' all your arts, but they'll be of little advantage to you. Let me advise you not to aggravate your ill conduct by fraud and imposture, but imitate the rest of your companions, who, if they have acted as imprudently as yourself, are at least more sincere. As I did not understand well what he meant, I only protested to him that I would be sincere in my answers. 'Tis all a jest, says he to me with an air of contempt; when taking up a pen, he writ something, and got it sign'd by the four old men. As he was writing, I asked my two companions whether they understood the meaning of what he had said to us. We concluded, that either our companions must have been over-reach'd, in case they had made a declaration different from ours; or that they had betray'd us, in case they had done it voluntarily. We intreated the minister to explain himself more clearly to us, but in vain; and he only read to us our declaration, which he had taken down. He told us that it agreed with that which our wives and the rest of our companions

had

had made; except that being more artful than they were, we had pretended, in opposition to their testimony, that we had consummated our marriage. These words letting me at once into his intention; Sir, said I to him, take care what you're about; you certainly have an ill design, and are going to take a very imprudent step. Depend upon it I've told you nothing but the truth; and that what views soever our wives and companions may have had in explaining themselves after a different manner, they yet will confess the whole truth in my presence. Yes, says he, that's after you've had an opportunity to teach them their parts, and to be as insincere in their answers as you've been. Saying this he left us, without speaking a word more.

'Tis now, says I to *Gelin*, but too manifest that they are endeavouring our ruin; and if we are to believe the minister, our wives and companions turn our own weapons against us. Heaven only can extricate us out of this calamity; for force will here be of no effect, and truth and justice will hardly be attended to in the vestry. The only hopes we have left, is to appeal to a general assembly of the whole colony. In case the vestry opposes so reasonable a desire, our complaints will thereby be more just, and more capable of exciting the pity of the people; and in case they indulge our request, as you are master of so much eloquence, I don't doubt but that if you declare the truth of our story, and discover the malicious designs of the minister, but you'll win over the majority to our interest. Tho' *Gelin* seem'd to listen to me, I yet perceiv'd that his mind was distracted, which surprized me very much, in a person of his vivacity. I reproach'd him for it, but he still continued silent, and discover'd such an absence of thought as plainly shew'd he was in a deep *rêverie*. At last, having urg'd him to answer me: Yes, says he, I'll follow your advice with pleasure, and we'll appeal to a general assembly; but then in case we don't meet with success here, I've a project in view, which will be of much greater service than my eloquence. 'Tis going too far, says he, growing still warmer; the unworthy treatment we meet with is unparallel'd. 'Twas with the utmost struggle that I imitated your temper when the minister came in to us, and insulted us so vilely;

ly; but I have thought of an expedient that will humble his pride, and make the colony stand in greater awe of us than they have hitherto done. I begg'd him to speak plainer; but he told me that would be soon enough, when the remedy he meditated was necessary to be applied; but then he assur'd us 'twas an infallible one, and that we might depend on having our wives in our arms, and our enemies at our feet. Whatever design he might have, I desir'd him to lay the thoughts of it aside for some time, and prepare to defend our cause in the general assembly. The next morning we sent our keeper to the minister and the principal old men, to signify to them that we acknowledg'd no other tribunal than that of the whole body of the colony, and therefore desir'd they might be summoned together immediately. They answer'd that our request should be consider'd; but we were so fully perswaded they could not refuse us, that it made us much easier. *Gelin* spent some days in composing his speech, during which I was either reflecting on our case, or discoursing with *Johnson* on the uneasiness our wives were under, and the great tenderness we ow'd the dear creatures for their generous affection. They had denied the favours which love had prevail'd with them to bestow, but then we were sensible it was out of love and modesty. We even suspected that the minister had prompted them to do this by his artful insinuations. As for my own part, I relied so much upon *Angelica's* affection, that I did not fear a change; but my greatest anguish was her absence, and the fix'd persuasion I entertain'd, that mine gave her the greatest pain.

We spent four days in this manner, without being visited by any person, and in the delusive opinion, that we should be indulg'd the liberty of justifying ourselves to the whole colony. The fifth day in the morning the minister came in to us, attended by the same old men who were with him before. He now spoke to us with an obliging tone of voice. I am, says he, come to bring you better news than you could have expected: How exasperated soever the vestry and I were at your indecent behaviour, we now consider it as a frailty which your youth occasion'd you to fall into. We are sensible, that the most virtuous dispositions, the most solid
and

and uniform wisdom, is some times the fruit of the greatest errors: A man who has deviated from virtue is more delighted with her when he returns to his duty; we therefore forget your foibles, which we impute to heedlessness and imprudence. You appeal to a general assembly; but you are vastly mistaken in your conjectures, for depend upon it they'd have treated you worse than we shall do: But your crime is of such a nature that it may be judg'd by the vestry only, and you may thank heaven that we have reserv'd to ourselves the cognizance of it. Hearken, says he gravely, to the sentence which has been pronounc'd in your favour. He then read a paper, the substance whereof was as follows: That tho' *Guison* had been put to death for committing a crime of almost the same nature with ours, yet the vestry had thought proper to treat us with greater indulgence, not only in consideration of our youth, but chiefly because we were so lately arriv'd in the island, and consequently could not be thoroughly acquainted with the laws and customs of it. That he therefore only sentenc'd us to receive with humility the gentle and charitable correction which the minister would inflict upon us publickly in the church, and atone by three weeks confinement for the scandal we had given to our brethren: That after this we should be at liberty to cohabit with our lawful wives, with those which God had been pleas'd to appoint us by lot, and whom we had solemnly accepted in the presence of heaven and earth, and promised to live with them in the strictest union, to behave as tender husbands, good protestants, and peaceable citizens: That with regard to the six immodest young women, who had abus'd some advantages they had received from nature, to make us swerve from our duty, and engage us to form with them the most abominable ties, which they had presum'd to call by the name of marriage, in prejudice to those we had contracted with our only lawful wives, the vestry would defer pronouncing their punishment till the next assembly, till when they should continue in close confinement, without being allowed the liberty of speaking to their friends and relations. Such was the favourable decree which the minister pronounc'd in the name of the vestry. Minister, vestry, venerable names, sacred masks, which

which injustice, treachery and cruelty abus'd to our destruction.

I have given very near the whole particulars of this fatal decree: However, we were not immediately sensible of the most dreadful circumstances of it, with regard to our wives and ourselves; but no sooner did *Gelin* understand that they look'd upon the chance marriage as a lawful one, which disannul'd the true one, but he broke out into such a lamentation as oblig'd the minister to leave off. He immediately flew into a dreadful passion, and surely never was man in greater rage and indignation. In vain I conjur'd him to calm his transports, since it could not be of any service; he was all in a flame, so that I might as well have spoke to the winds. He broke into a thousand injurious expressions against the minister, and reproach'd him openly with his malice and hypocrisy, nor was he more tender of the vestry and the whole colony; and adding threats to reproaches, he swore he would employ fire and sword to defend our wives and us. The minister, whom this fury had at first disconcerted a little, recover'd himself, and calling to mind undoubtedly that we were his prisoner's, and therefore could more easily employ threats than put them in execution: 'Twas undoubtedly this reflection, I say, that made him so bold as to insult us with the poignant raillery, which threw *Gelin* into such a rage that he was going to rush upon him, had I not stopp'd him. Leave us, says I to the minister, if you have any wisdom left, and don't force us to punish your treachery and insults. He left us, and at the same time advis'd us with the most malicious air to obey the will of heaven, and the order of our superiors.

Gelin was now very angry with me for checking his rage, but I represented to him that 'twas very happy for us I had kept myself from breaking out. D'ye think, says I, I am not as much affected as yourself with the indignities we have received? I was as much exasperated as you could be at the minister's discourse, and had I thereby expos'd my own life only, I should have vented my passion in as furious a manner as you did; but then are we not to consider our wives, who wait for our succour? What will become of them in case we by our imprudence put it out of our power to defend them? They

tremble

tremble undoubtedly at the danger they are in, but how greatly will their terrors increase when they come to hear the sentence which the consistory has pass'd upon them? The only refuge those innocent creatures have is, our love and promises we made them. They without doubt are thinking on us now, are discoursing upon us; and in case they have any hopes left, 'tis ground'd on our tenderness, our fidelity, prudence and courage. Ah! dear *Gelin*, said I, embracing him, what resentments will not motives like these suppress! and can anger pretend to dispute with love? — Notwithstanding he for some time heard me with pain, I yet observ'd that my arguments had calm'd the violence of his transports. He own'd his imprudence; and as he lov'd his wife tenderly, the reflections he made on the danger to which she was expos'd, melted him into tears, when he assur'd me that even his anger proceeded from the violence of his love. But now beginning to perceive that his rage against the minister would infallibly make our affair worse; he then told me 'twould be time enough to employ the expedient he had before hinted to me. His design, as we shall find, corresponded with his daring and enterprizing genius.

He had had the curiosity, a few days after his arrival in the island, to view the storehouse all over, when he made nice observations on the order and disposition of this vast edifice, and had taken notice that the arms which the inhabitants brought out of *Europe* were stor'd carefully in a room at the top of the storehouse, though they were seldom made use of. There were fifty or threescore muskets, several pistols, a great number of swords, and some barrels of powder. The door of the room where they were stor'd was never shut, and that of our apartment was not so strong but we might break it open. *Gelin*, after he had made these observations, fancied that as we might very easily seize upon the arms and the powder, it would give us an opportunity not only of triumphing over the minister and the vestry, and defending ourselves against their machinations, but of making ourselves masters of the island. He had objected to himself, that as there was but three of us we should scarce be able to go through so signal an attempt; but his fruitful invention

vention soon hit upon an expedient for this. In the first place, we saw 'twas an easy matter for us to force our way to our companions, who were confin'd in another part of the storehouse. What reasons soever we had to complain of their fearfulness, there was no doubt but they'd be more couragious when they should be animated by our exhortations and example; but *Gelin's* chief hope was grounded on circumstances of a quite different nature, and these he set in so plausible a light, that I was highly delighted with his project, and found it concerted with much more judgment than I had thought him capable of. Notwithstanding the boasted severity of the manners of the inhabitants, and their zeal with regard to the observation of the laws and the decisions of their old men, we are to lay it down as a principle that we have to do with men, and as such they can never be able to suppress the sensations of nature. Our wives have relations who love them very tenderly, and therefore cannot but sympathize in their misfortunes. These relations have friends and servants: If we suppose that the six families of our wives have each four friends, and each of those friends a servant, here are above fifty persons on whose succour we may depend, or at least we may be sure they won't oppose us. But why may we not flatter ourselves that we, by using arguments and entreaties, may bring them over to our interests, and perhaps assist us to recover our freedom? This, says *Gelin*, I shall undertake to do, and I rely so much on the eloquence you are pleased to compliment me with, that I don't despair of success. I shall represent to them that so far from designing to do any thing in opposition to religion and the laws, no persons shall pay a greater regard to them than us; that our only design is to defend ourselves against the minister's tyranny, and observe inviolably our plighted oath to their daughters; that it affects their honour no less than our happiness and repose; in fine, that we are their children, their daughters husbands, and that we ought to have the second place in their hearts. I have no notion, says he, of the human mind, if these considerations don't make some impressions on them. I then will reveal my design to them, and my opinion is, that so far from condemning it, they'll declare openly in our favour; and when this

is done, we'll seize upon the island, the minister and the elders, and establish such an order as we shall think proper.

Every thing appear'd not only feasible but easy in this project. *Johnson* approv'd it no less than I did; however, we look'd upon it as our last refuge, and therefore were not to have recourse to it but in the last extremity. *Gelin* was for putting it in execution that very evening; or at least, that we should attempt to break out of prison in the night, go to our wives relations, and persuade them to take up arms in our favour. We all consented to this. But tho' it were possible for us to break our door open, yet this could not be done without our keeper's perceiving it the next day. This wou'd occasion us to be confin'd more strictly, and consequently ruin all our hopes. *Gelin* was forced to confess, that the several parts of his enterprize must be executed at the same time; that is, we must seize upon the powder and arms the very night we break out of prison. This we promised to do very soon, and only intreated him to delay it till such time as we were sure the vestry were resolv'd to put their sentence in execution.

The next day the minister made us another visit, when I whisper'd *Gelin* to keep his temper. We waited in silence to hear what our enemy had to say. He made but a very short harangue, in which he said with great mildness, that as the morrow was a day of publick prayer, on which all the colony were to meet at church, he thought we wou'd not refuse to suffer ourselves to be conducted to it, to hear the sentence which the vestry should pronounce upon us. We were so far from disapproving this order, that we were overjoy'd to hear him mention a public assembly of the colony, and that we were allow'd to go to it. This was our greatest desire; upon which he went out, highly satisfied at the promise we had made him of going to it with joy; and indeed, we congratulated one another upon this event, which reviv'd our former hopes. *Gelin* had prepared a very pathetick discourse, which he propos'd to pronounce to the people. We did not at all doubt but it would occasion a happy change, were surpriz'd that the minister did not make that reflection himself, and thank'd heaven for it, looking upon it as an omen of our better

fortune. But in the evening we receiv'd a piece of news which damp'd these transient sensations of joy; for the keeper coming in to us, took me aside, when he told me, that for Mrs. *Eliot's* sake he had undertaken to put a letter from her into my hands. Here it is, says he; but you shall promise me never to reveal what I have now done, to the minister. This I promis'd to do; and was persuaded by the fear he discover'd, that this fiery ecclesiastick had usurp'd a great power over the inhabitants, at the same time that he seem'd desirous of establishing a perfect equality. I open'd Mrs. *Eliot's* letter, and sure every line was a dagger to my heart. She began by calling herself the most unhappy mother that ever liv'd, and then reproached me with having broke the vows I had made to her daughter. Such a report indeed had been spread, by the minister, who had put that construction on our complying so readily to go the next day to church. But notwithstanding the distracting opinion Mrs. *Eliot* entertain'd, she yet discover'd some tenderness even in her reproaches. Cruel *Bridge!* did she say, do you thus abuse the tenderness of a mother, and a daughter's weakness! What harm had either of us done you? Alas! can we reproach our selves with any thing but loving you too well? She ended her letter with a circumstance that was still more cutting, by informing me in the most melancholy terms, that the vestry had sentenced their daughters to be expos'd at their going out of the church with different marks of ignominy; and to stand an hour publicly to be scoff'd at by all the inhabitants. O *Gelin!* said I, trembling, after I had read these fatal words; O *Johnson!* now we must die, or save our wretched wives. I gave them the letter to read, during which I did nothing but weep and complain, in which they soon sympathized with me. *Gelin* was in such a furious transport, that he tore his hair from his head; when butting his head against the door, in order to break it open, he cry'd out, To arms! my dear friends, let's not lose a moment. Alas! we shall certainly be too late. The rage he was in brought me a little to myself; upon which I desir'd him to be cool for a moment: We are now, said I, at the crisis of our fate, and possibly our lives are at stake: for heaven's sake, dear *Gelin*, don't let us ruin all by our imprudent transports. I'm as much concern'd in this affair as you.

yourself, and would attempt any thing to second, or lead you, in whatever you shall think proper to attempt; but let us endeavour to cool ourselves, and take a judicious resolution; *Gelin* cried that the only sure expedient was to take up arms, and revenge our selves by the blood of our enemies. I at last prevail'd with him to stay till night; that we should certainly be discover'd, in case we attempted any thing in the day-time; and that 'twas a wonder the keeper, who was but just gone from us, had not been alarm'd at the noise we made. I thus prevail'd with him to deliberate on matters with greater coolness, and to consent that each of us should take some time to digest our thoughts, before we communicated them to one another.

Accordingly we all three retir'd to different parts of the room, and spent about a quarter of an hour in deep meditation, the silence being interrupted only by our sighs. At last, *Gelin* being uneasy under this constraint, cried out, that we shou'd never hit upon so good an expedient as that of taking up arms, and that he wou'd not have recourse to any other. I am, says I, of the same opinion; but as we must be obliged to go thro' with it when once we have attempted it; and must never expect to be reconciled to the minister and the old men, when once we have thrown off the mask; it will be of the highest consequence to us to act cautiously in this affair. Cou'd not we, for instance, arm our selves, and at the same time conceal our weapons? Thus shall we be ready to use them, in case we are forced to come to that extremity; and if your speech should happen to make an impression on the people, no body will suspect that we are privately arm'd. *Gelin* at first rejected this proposal; Talk not to me, says he, of speeches or measures; all these lenitives will be of more fatal consequence than my violent expedients. To arms! To arms! I'll explain myself tomorrow by fire and sword. I let his fury take time to spend it self, when, knowing his temper, I represented to him, as I really thought, that it would be infinitely more glorious for us to succeed by eloquence and the justice of our cause, rather than by dint of arms. The people, says I, will be easily stir'd up. Our youth, that of our wives, our civility, and the modesty of our behaviour since we have been here, all plead in our favour. I am

persuaded we shall triumph over all the minister's artifices; but 'twould be a melancholy reflection, as we have so much reason to hope we shall succeed by gentle methods, to think we should make use of one which will infallibly set the whole colony in a flame, and prevent our ever being able to live in peace in it. I added several arguments of the same nature, which at last made a wish'd-for impression on *Gelin*.

I was persuaded that they were justly ground, when I revolv'd them so much in my mind. Had the vestry certainly pass'd such a sentence on our wives, it would have been impossible for us to have prevented it, so that all we had to do was to hinder its being put in execution. I flatter'd myself that great things wou'd be achiev'd by *Gelin's* speech, and the kind disposition of the assembly, part whereof were our wives relations and friends. As the sovereign authority resided in the body of the colony, all the sentences of the vestry might be annull'd in a moment. If *Gelin's* eloquence and the justice of our cause were not able to make us triumph over our enemies, I was resolv'd to be the first who shou'd take up arms; and I did not doubt but one man with his pistol cock'd, wou'd drive away a crowd of defenceless people, who for twenty years had not heard the report of a gun. My scheme therefore was, that we shou'd force the door of our prison in the night, and each of us arm ourselves with two pistols. I no longer fear'd that the keeper wou'd discover in the morning that we had broke the door open; but was persuaded I was safe with regard to him, since he had undertaken to put a letter into my hands, and had conjur'd me so earnestly not to let it come to the minister's ears, that I not to mention that he wou'd never guess the reason which had engaged us to break our door open. I therefore communicated my plan to my companions, who approv'd it, so that we waited impatiently for night, in order that we might put it in execution.

'Twas come. We had candles to light us, when we began to force the door, which immediately flew open. We broke it so artfully, that there appear'd but very few marks of our violence. We now went up to the room where the arms were stow'd, when we met with pistols that were no ways rusty; made choice of such as

could easily put into our pockets, and took three pair for our companions. As I was viewing the muskets and other fire-arms, which we shou'd be forc'd to leave behind us, I was thinking, the better to execute our design, that 'twou'd be necessary to find out some method, by which we might render all these arms useles to those who shou'd attempt to employ them against us. My opinion was, that we should spend the night in taking them to pieces, and afterwards hide them in some place where they might not be easily found; but *Gelin* spar'd us that labour. The instant, says he, that we shall be forced to have recourse to arms, one of us need only fly to the storehouse, and keep the door of it till such time as he shall see us advance forward. We'll certainly retire to it, as to a fortress, since there is no place where our wives can be so secure. We then shall have, not only the arms and the powder, but likewise all the provisions of the island; and consequently we shall oblige our enemies to submit to whatever we shall think proper to prescribe. This hint seem'd of such use, that we applauded *Gelin* highly for it. And now having prepar'd our pistols, and taken a sufficient quantity of powder, the only thing to be done was, how to find out an opportunity of speaking with our companions. We were not only to give them their pistols, but also to reproach and animate them. 'Twas an easy matter for us to find out the place where they were confin'd, and to speak to them thro' the key-hole; but the difficulty was, how to give them their pistols. We fir'd them to such a pitch by our discourses, that being no longer able to deprive themselves of the pleasure of embracing us, they did not stay till we advis'd them to force their door, as we had done ours, but they burst it open at once. They then flew to our arms, and shed tears for joy. I then assum'd the authority of leader, with which they had invested me, when I reproach'd them with their meekness, in suffering themselves to be over-reach'd by the minister's artifices. They excus'd themselves by saying, that 'twas from the fear they had of revealing too much, by making such a confession as might be of dangerous consequence. I then made them sensible how prejudicial their unhappy fear had been to us, when they acknowledg'd their guilt, and begg'd us to impute their faults to their good intention.

tion. I did not doubt but they were really sincere, and intended well; but then they were of so heavy a disposition; that I always had some suspicion of them. This will appear but too evident in the sequel. We left them, after having acquainted them with the particulars of our design, and assur'd ourselves of their constancy and resolution, by the promises they again made to that purpose. I advis'd them to tell the keeper plainly, when he should find their door broke open, that the only reason why they had done it, was in order to obtain the satisfaction of seeing and discoursing with us.

The day which we suppos'd would determine our fate, beginning to dawn, we conjur'd *Gelin* to call to mind that he was not only to defend his own interests, but those of five dear friends, who put their happiness and life in his hands. He did not want this advice to animate him. But now the hour for going to church was come, some of the old men being met at our door, in order to guard and conduct us to church, we followed them without the least ceremony, and assum'd a chearful air, in order to prevent the least suspicion. I nevertheless was deeply afflicted in mind, not so much from the uncertainty of our wives and our own fate, which was now at its crisis, but from the grief I felt when I thought of Mrs. *Eliot's* uneasiness. I had been tempted the night before to answer her letter, in which I intended to complain of her for harbouring such an unjust opinion of me, and to assure her of my constancy; but *Gelin* and *Johnson* had dissuaded me from it, through the fear they were under lest the keeper should betray us. The instant I came into the church my eyes wander'd about for my wife, but I could not see her, and was afterwards told that she was so much out of order that they could not bring her to church. We were carried into the middle of the church, where the greatest part of the Inhabitants were already assembled. A form had been set for us opposite to which those odious creatures were to sit that were design'd for our wives. They were conducted in a moment after us; we saluted them in a courteous manner; Our civility was taken notice of by all the assembly, and we could easily judge by the discontent or satisfaction which appear'd in their countenances, the disposition of each person with regard to the ceremony.

The

The minister appear'd soon after, but we were uncertain whether our dear wives were to bear a part in this odd spectacle, and did not dare to enquire after them. How eager soever I might be to see mine again, I did not know whether I ought to wish she might appear in public, and before her proud rival, till such time as our fate was pronounc'd; but as the minister began his prayer without taking any notice of them, I suppos'd he intended not to take them out of their confinement till the time appointed for their ignominy. The minister, as soon as he had said the usual prayers, went up into the pulpit; and now the decisive moment was at hand. My companions were no doubt in as great emotion as my self, and the whole assembly seem'd to be not a little mov'd. We had agreed, that in order that our caution might seem to be the effect of prudence and a calm resolution, *Gelin* should not begin to speak till the minister had made an end. We were under very little apprehensions from his discourse, being perswaded that *Gelin* would easily destroy all the arguments he might advance, and suppos'd that our reasons would be approv'd as soon as they should be laid open.

The subject of the sermon was on the duties of the married state. These the minister explain'd with great eloquence, but without making any particular application, the conclusion excepted, which was drawn up directly for us. He first recalled to our memories, in the most pompous expressions, the day when we, as he pretended, had plighted our faith in the same place, and call'd it an ever-memorable day, made so by the most august, most holy ceremony. What fruits did not the whole colony expect to reap from it? But a wicked spirit, who employs its seducing arts, and exercises its tyranny over young minds, had interrupted the course of so delusive a hope; this spirit had breathed an irregular passion into our hearts, which might have the very same effects as hatred, that is to say, disorder, division, and the ruin of that happy peace which till then had made their island so delightful. Thanks to heaven, says he, the evil was check'd in the beginning; but they had run the greatest danger, and 'twas owing to Providence that it had been suppress'd in its infancy, and brought us so speedily back to our duty, that 'twould scarce be imagin'd we had ever swerved from it.

I should have excus'd the minister, had he only mention'd our marriage as a fault, and our silence as a mark of repentance; but he did not stop here; for upon pretence of treating us with gentleness, and to be tender of our welfare by extenuating our fault, he found means to satisfy the hatred he bore to Mrs. *Eliot* in the most artful manner. He observ'd, that one might easily perceive by our air and behaviour that Providence had indulg'd us a most excellent nature, and that we should not have struck into the paths of error, had we either had no guides at all, or such only as were virtuous and faithful. But what man, tho' ever so prudent, can resist the artifices and insinuations of a woman, lost to all virtue, who makes it her whole study to seduce him? Dangerous sex! capable of running into excess of every kind when once they deviate from modesty and virtue! Tho' he did not name Mrs. *Eliot* after this zealous declamation, he yet hinted at her so plainly in speaking of those weak mothers who share in the frailties of their daughters by a criminal indulgence, and too often by their advice, when their age does not permit them to do it any longer by example; that the whole assembly discover'd, by a murmuring sound, that they understood the drift of his satyr, and disapprov'd it. Mrs. *Eliot* possess'd a thousand good qualities: Such an accusation as that the minister had brought against her, made at random, and without the least grounds, produc'd an effect quite different from what he expected; for it mov'd the whole assembly to compassion for a woman of so much virtue, who was so vilely us'd in her absence, and possibly dispos'd the people in our favour. Tho' I easily perceiv'd that things were turning for our advantage, and look'd upon it as a happy omen, I yet had a great struggle before I could prevail with my self to hear this injurious discourse out before I discover'd my resentments. In the first emotions of my indignation I put my hand to one of my pistols, and should very possibly have forgot that I was in a church, had I not recollected that I ought, for Mrs. *Eliot's* sake, to calm my transports.

When the minister had done speaking, and seem'd ready to come down, in order to conclude the ceremony, which he suppos'd us ready to comply with, *Gelin* began to speak with great modesty; You'll be so good, Sir, says he, as to
give

give me leave to add a word or two to your excellent harangue, and that I myself may acquaint the assembly with my sentiments, and those of my companions. So new and unexpected a scene occasion'd a confus'd murmur, every one endeavouring to draw near, and discovering a surprize equal to their curiosity. *Gelin* so far from being disconcerted at it, was the more encourag'd; and his voice and gestures were so adapted to his discourse as agreeably captivated his hearers. I advis'd him to get upon the bench we sat upon, in order that he might be the better heard. His preamble was very plain and simple, but this simplicity was very artful: He first declared, that his design was to lay before the colony the several circumstances of our behaviour ever since we had been in the island, persuaded, says he, that in case we happen to have been guilty of any indecorum or frailty, our age and innocence will procure us the favour of the inhabitants rather than their ill-will. This ambiguous manner of preparing his auditors had the wish'd-for effect: it prevented the minister's putting a stop to his discourse, because as it concealed from him our real intentions, he fancied it would second his design, and that nothing but repentance could have extorted from us a confession of our faults; nor was it less successful with regard to the inhabitants, for as it left them in doubt whether we were going to oppose or submit to the sentence of the consistory, it prevented their forming those prejudices which generally arise for or against a person accus'd, when he professes himself to be innocent, or acknowledges himself guilty; and *Gelin* was persuaded, that by making an impression afterwards on their hearts, he should interest them in our behalf by an artful and pathetic declaration of the justice of our cause, and the malice of our enemies. He then related in the most sincere manner the reflections we had first made on the ceremony of casting lots, the first time it was propos'd to us, the conferences we had afterwards held on that important article, the disinclination we had to obey it, and at the same time the resolution with which we thought ourselves oblig'd to conceal our inclinations, purely to give the colony a proof of our docility, and the respect we had for it. He confess'd, that to this motive was added some hopes that heaven would reward our submission; and direct the chance in such a manner as was agreeable to our de-

fires; that this reflection had supported us till the instant the ceremony began, and that our sincerity was apparent by the easy and undisturb'd air with which we came into the church; but that those who examin'd our countenances diligently, might easily perceive a great damp upon our spirits; that as the designs of Providence never declare themselves more sensibly, than by those involuntary emotions, we had interpreted them in the most natural sense, that is to say, as a token that heaven allotted us those women, for whom it had suddenly inspir'd us with the strongest affection; that we had flatter'd ourselves for some moments that fortune would confirm this disposition, but that having found it contrary to our wishes, it was not in our power to suppress the impressions chance had first made on our hearts; that we had attended to the rest of the ceremony against our inclinations; that so far from once thinking to form any engagement with those women whom fate had allotted us, had it not been for the great respect we had to the assembly, we never could have prevail'd with ourselves to salute them, which was the only mark we resolv'd ever to give them of our esteem; that we had sufficiently declar'd our sentiments by the delay we had so much insist'd upon, and with which we seem'd to be so much pleas'd when it was granted us. To this *Gelin* added, that as marriage supposes the consent of the will, we therefore might look upon ourselves as free at our coming out of the church; that we had always argued on that hypothesis, and that having met immediately after the ceremony was over, in order to deliberate on the common cause, we had so little notion that it could be suppos'd we were engag'd, that this article had not so much as once been debated upon; that we had been check'd only through the fear we were under of displeasing the inhabitants, in case we should dispose of ourselves otherwise than they intended; but that fear was soon overbalanced by hope, when we considered that we had not been brought out of *Europe* to be made wretched; and that as religion, mildness, and equity were characteristics peculiar to the whole colony, he hoped they would never force us to do any thing against our inclinations. Our orator assur'd the assembly that it was on this foundation we had form'd the plan of an innocent artifice, by which we did

not

not so much intend to impose upon the inhabitants, as to spare both themselves and us a multitude of useless arguments, which would only have suspended the completion of our desires. He then related what each of us had done in order to succeed in them; the difficulties we had been oblig'd to surmount before we could make our wives listen to our passion; the arguments we employ'd to prove they might indulge it without offending modesty; the order, and the prudent and virtuous measures we had taken the night we solemniz'd our marriage; and lastly, he repeated the very words of the oath by which we had bound ourselves to them, which I before acquainted you was express'd in the strongest and most binding expressions. I observ'd that his speech began to work upon the audience in our favour; and as he was now entering upon the most affecting part of the discourse, I did not doubt but he would at last win over the whole assembly.

And indeed changing the simple and irresolute voice in which he had hitherto spoke, he soon made his auditors sensible that eloquence is the gift of nature, independent on age or profession. His gestures, his attitude, his eyes, every part of him was expressive: He was griev'd, he was melted, in short, he seem'd to feel alternately the several passions he endeavour'd to inspire. He did not break into invectives against the minister, but then he represented his malice in very lively colours, and strongly oppos'd to it our sincerity and innocence; he gave so moving a description of the beauty of our wives, their virtue, their modesty, and the violent passion we had for them; in a word, he gave so odious a turn to the violence which had been employ'd against us, and above all, to the shocking sentence which had pass'd upon our dear unhappy wives, that the most barbarous savage must have been touch'd with his discourse. Lastly, as tho' he were recover'd from his transport, Alas! dear brethren, says he, with a tender and pathetic air, you who seem touch'd with our calamity, and the anguish we feel, shall we not merit your compassion! To you our innocence flies for refuge; to your tribunal it appeals: We have not here either tender fathers or affectionate brothers, whose succour we may invoke. we have abandon'd them purposely for the sake of living with you: if we have any refuge left, 'tis in those who
are

are friends to justice and virtue. Alas! were we not assur'd that every good quality prevailed here? Is not this the peaceable seat where we were promis'd so much happiness? What other motive had we to leave our country than the hopes of leading a calm and virtuous life among you, and of being incessantly prompted to laudable actions by your example? Are the sweets we were flatter'd with the hopes of enjoying, reproach, imprisonment, violence, and the deep anguish of seeing what we love dearest torn from our arms? Alas! d'ye think the forcing them from us was not a mortal blow? D'ye believe we could see this and not resolve to spend the last drop of blood in their defence? No, no, don't imagine they shall be ravish'd from us, or we tamely submit to the ignominy that is prepar'd for them: This barbarous sentence shall never be put in execution till the last drop of blood trickles from our veins. Be not ashamed to kill us, if you do not blush to dishonour our dear wives: by that action the malice of our enemies would be triumphant. But why should you dip your hands in our blood? What prejudice, what injury have we done you? In case our integrity, and the lasting affection we have for our wives, give you umbrage, give us leave to depart from your island, we'll fly away with the companions of our fortune; we'll seek some climate where constancy and fidelity are not look'd upon as criminal. Give us only a little bark; we don't desire either sails or a rudder: love and virtue will chear our souls in the midst of the wide-extended ocean; we don't want any other guides. Dear brethren, do not reject our entreaties or tears: You now have heard what we request, we either desire death, or the liberty of going to seek it, in company with our wives, in the vast sea which surrounds your island.

'Twas high time that *Gelin* should end his discourse; for the murmurs which were now arising in the assembly would not have suffer'd him to be heard, and every one seem'd to be griev'd for some person who was dear to him. Every one began to speak with great warmth, and tho' no one could be heard distinctly, 'twas very evident the assembly were for us. I still kept near *Gelin*, when I said to him, your discourse has made a happy impression;

but

bat in case you don't say something to prompt the people to speak openly for us, I'm afraid no one will dare to do it. *Gelin*, who could express himself upon any subject without premeditation, immediately cry'd; I see, dear brethren, that heaven does not abandon our innocence, since it inspires you in our favour, as is evident from your countenances: But remember 'tis not enough to pity us, unless you indulge us your succour. You are sensible that the supreme authority resides in your assembly; won't you annul the cruel sentence which has been past upon our wives, and restore them to their liberty? Scarce had he utter'd these words, when the words *liberty, liberty, the sentence is null*, were heard in every part of the church. The inexpressible joy we felt on a sudden made us for some time so lost to reflection; that it occasion'd our committing an irreparable oversight. Wholly wrapt up in the reflection on the happy deliverance of our dear wives, we forgot to take the advantage of the favourable disposition of the people with regard to us; and intreat them to confirm the validity of our marriage that instant. The minister observed our oversight sooner than we did, and made it subservient to his malice. He was very much disturb'd all the time *Gelin* was pronouncing the latter part of his harangue, and when the people were for having our wives restor'd to us. As every individual seem'd to favour us, he did not dare to open his mouth, or even discover the least discontent; but when he observ'd we had overlook'd that article of our happiness, which he had the greatest desire to destroy, I mean our marriage, he immediately put it out of our power to mention any thing on that head; by dismissing the assembly. Go, says he to the people, let not those poor young women continue any longer in prison, since you have thought proper to give them their liberty. Every one was eager to run and take them out of their confinement; and we were so inconsiderate, that we did not then attend, as we ought to have done, to the circumstances and the necessity of our affairs.

All the people were now gone out of the church, except the minister and the members of the vestry, when we perceiv'd, but too late, the oversight we had committed, and were bewailing it whilst the minister was dis-

discouraging with the old men. As he had kept us back from going with the rest, we suppos'd he had something to say to us; but we were far from thinking he intended to commit us again to prison. Had we been unarm'd, we undoubtedly should have been the strongest, since we had not to do with above a dozen or fifteen old men. 'Twas this very reflection prompted us not to oppose the order the minister gave, for our being remanded back to prison. I only desir'd to speak one word to my companions: We have acted, says I, very ridiculously, in forgetting the article which was most essential to our happiness; but as matters now stand we should be much more so, did we refuse to return to the store-house. We must hope that we shall one day recover the opportunity we have now lost; and since we have obtain'd our wives liberty, and got their sentence abolish'd, we ought to consider our return to prison as a trifle. *Gelin* cou'd hardly be of my opinion. I can't, says he, think what views the vestry can have in committing this fresh piece of injustice. The same, said I, they had before; that is, to prevent our having the least correspondence with our wives. 'Tis plain that their first sentence, which relates to our marriage, continues still in force, and that they intend to put it in execution. But come, said I, taking him by the hand, and follow me on the word I give you, that our confinement will not be of the least prejudice to us. *Gelin* rely'd so much upon what I said, that he came forward; the old men seem'd very well pleas'd with our easy compliance, and some of them guarded us to the store house.

We were confin'd in the same rooms. The keeper had that morning found we had forced our doors open, and being satisfy'd with the excuse we made him, he had got it mended. Tho' we might easily have procur'd our liberty in the same manner we had done before, whenever we should think proper; I yet suppos'd the old men would not refuse us leave to see our companions, in case we desired it in a civil way. They indeed granted our request, and accordingly order'd the keeper to give us that satisfaction once a day for a certain time which they limited. I was very impatient to tell them the reason why they were not to look upon our return to prison as an
evil.

evil. You must know, said I as soon as I had an opportunity of speaking to them, that I have thought of a new project; I flatter myself that you'll approve of it, because tho' it be slow in executing, the success of it will be certain, and may easily be obtain'd. The minister affects to believe that we have not consummated our marriage; and 'tis probably by his communicating this circumstance to the vestry, that he so easily prevail'd with them to pronounce our divorce. Why should we take so much pains to undeceive them in this article? Won't this truth soon discover itself? Let us constrain ourselves so far as to suffer three or four months imprisonment; 'tis scarce possible but one of us should produce such fruits as will exhibit themselves before six months come about. If one of our wives should be with child, this will undoubtedly sufficiently persuade the minister that we have really had a correspondence together; and he must be the most wicked wretch breathing, should he after this pretend to separate us. Thus, said I, let us set our hearts at ease, and rest assured that things will soon change to our advantage. The pangs of absence will be more cutting to me than to any of you; but then will not hope soften the deepest anguish? You may indeed make one objection, which is, that we shall be urged to put the sentence which the vestry has pass'd, in execution; but hear we need not fear they will employ violence. They may prevent our cohabiting with our dear wives, but they will never pretend to force us to live with women whom they know we detest. In case they should enquire into the reasons of this, we will wave giving them in a civil manner, and then let 'em put what construction they please upon the matter.

My companions were so pleas'd with this hint, that they thank'd me a thousand times for it. *Gelin*, tho' of a fiery temper, applauded it, notwithstanding he was already tormented at his wife's being kept so long from him. In reality, the notions I declar'd above were just, and seem'd to promise success; but the same evil star which had hitherto oppos'd my happiness, was preparing to complete my ruin. The advice which I had given my friends for the common cause, prov'd so fatal, that

heaven

heaven seems to have punished it as a crime, in causing all the sad effects it produced to fall upon me.

Nevertheless, the little probability there was of its proving so inauspicious, having made our companions receive it with joy, we began to put it in execution that very day. We mention'd our confinement to some of the old men who came to visit us, as a circumstance which was so far from putting us to any pain, that we assur'd them we should willingly spend several months in it. They enquir'd the reason of this, but we wou'd not satisfy them, and answer'd only in a ludicrous way. We acted the same part with regard to the minister, and all those who were allow'd to visit us. Not a week pass'd but some person or other of the consistory came to teize us about submitting to the sentence which the vestry had pass'd, but they all return'd with the same answers. The perplexity this gave them was a great satisfaction to us; however, they could not pry into our design; and as most of them were old men, who boasted great wisdom and experience, they cou'd not conceal the uneasiness they felt, to see all their cunning baffled by a few young fellows. We were not so reserv'd with regard to our wives; our first care was to acquaint them privately with our intentions, both to prevent their entertaining any suspicion with respect to our fidelity, as well as to desire them to act in concert with us, and not omit acquainting us immediately, so soon as they should have the symptoms we wish'd might appear. The keeper, who differ'd very much from the generality of his brethren, consented to do us that favour. I writ every day to Mrs. *Eliot* and my dear wife, and my heart was at ease when it breath'd its pangs upon paper. I also used to receive their answers. The most tender, the most passionate expressions of love and friendship were employ'd in this delicious correspondence, which for five months was my only consolation! Our keeper indulg'd my companions the same favour. We always shew'd one another the letters we sent, and the answers we receiv'd; for the friendship which united us was so sincere, that we disguis'd our thoughts as little as we did our actions. Every one of us laid open his heart, and saw into those of his companions, whom he consider'd as his dear brethren and faithful

faithful friends. They did not let us want books, or any thing that might divert us. The *English* employ'd themselves chiefly in learning the *French* tongue; and the *French* in improving themselves in ours. In this manner did we draw a considerable advantage from our captivity; but alas! I was never allow'd to apply it to the use I intended. My chief view in studying the *French*, was in order that I might be better able to breathe in words, the passion I had for my dear, dear wife; but alas! I was doomed never to set eyes upon her more.

Scarce were three months past, when Mrs. *Eliot* sent me the joyful news that *Angelica* was with child, which she assur'd me was certainly so. We celebrated a kind of festival upon that account in our confinement. My companions congratulated me upon the likelihood there was that I should first become a father; and they looked upon this indulgence of Providence as a confirmation of the little authority they had given me over them. We debated whether it wou'd not be proper to acquaint the vestry with it; and they were all unanimous that we shou'd. I only differ'd in opinion from them; I begg'd them so earnestly to acquiesce with it that at last they did, but 'twas purely out of complaisance, for I had not one good reason to give them, nor even myself; but I was actuated by a blind instinct, or a secret foresight which I myself cou'd not account for. I thought it wou'd be dangerous for my wife to be a mother before her companions. I was yet uneasy only upon her account; I fancied that 'twas merely owing to a regard I had for her modesty and virtue, that made me willing to defer publishing her being with child, till such time as her companions were in the same case with herself. What reason soever we had to believe that the people favour'd us, I know that a glance, a mark of surprize, the most innocent and inoffensive raillery, strongly affect a virtuous woman, who happens to be in a condition which she is told people did not expect to find her in; and my design, so far as I was capable of judging of it myself, was to secure my dear *Angelica* from every subject of uneasiness and confusion. The reader will perhaps think that this reason, tho' so random a one, might alone have prompted me to the resolution I fix'd upon; but 'tis certain, 'twas.

'twas a little better grounded. This I felt, tho' I was not able to express it; 'twas some remains of the happy influence of my star, which presaged some impending ills, tho' I could not guess what they were to be. How indeed wou'd it have been possible for me to foresee them, since nothing but the most detestable malice could have given them birth; and that I myself, tho' I felt them, cou'd scarce persuade myself that they were real?

I therefore told Mrs. *Eliot*, in my answer, that I believ'd it wou'd be proper to conceal my wife's pregnancy, till such time as those of my companions had discover'd something of the same nature. Several weeks past in this expectation, but without hearing the news I so earnestly desir'd. In the mean time, the minister and vestry, who were more and more puzzled how to find out the motives of our conduct, and had done their utmost to force the secret from our breasts, were again extremely urgent with us. Sometimes they wou'd employ the most gentle persuasives, to incline us to obey their injunctions; but generally made use of menaces and reproaches. The minister especially, who frequently visited us, never left us without using the opprobrious names of silly and rebellious creatures; and telling us we might justly fear some severe chastisement both from heaven and the colony, which would force us to our duty in spite of our selves. 'Twas one day after he had vented himself in the most injurious terms, that losing all patience to hear him run on in this manner, I inconsiderately resolv'd to tell him plainly, that 'twas to no purpose for him to talk to us. Wou'd you, said I to him, have me marry two wives? This I'll consent to, in case it be for the advantage of the colony; but if you cannot object any crime to me, don't talk to me any more of quitting *Angelica*, who is so truly my wife, that she's now far advanced with the fruits of our marriage. He was so much struck at these words, that he oblig'd me to repeat them thrice before he could understand my meaning. I explain'd it so far as he desir'd. And have your companions, says he to me, after being silent a moment, have they been guilty of the same crime? I answer'd with a sneer, that we were associates in virtues and vices, and that we all expected the same rewards or punishments. Upon which

he

he withdrew, without declaring his thoughts. Tho' I had made this confession inconsiderately, I yet did not find any room to repent of it; and my companions, who wish'd earnestly that this might happen, were overjoy'd at it. We were now in the fifth month of our confinement, and were no longer to depend upon their wives being with child, since they had not yet had any tokens of it. The hopes we had entertain'd for five months, were now confin'd wholly to *Angelica* and myself; and we were impatient to know what turn the vestry and the rest of the colony would give to so indisputable a proof as I had now given the minister of my marriage with *Angelica*. I wrote immediately to Mrs. *Eliot*, to prepare her in this matter, and she sent me an answer to it the same evening. It gave me some pleasure, she informing me that she had been visited by the minister, who had desir'd to see my wife; that he had enquir'd into the truth of her pregnancy, and having been convinced of it, he had left her with an apparent air of satisfaction.

But the next day we were surpriz'd to find ourselves guarded by another keeper, and that greater care was taken of the prison-gate than before. We enquir'd the reasons of this of our new goalor, but to no purpose; and the only answer he made us was, that 'twas done by order of the vestry. We then did not doubt but the other was suspected of carrying letters to and from our wives; but this first hardship was no more than a prelude to what was to follow. The hour being come which we used to be allowed to visit our companions, the keeper told us it would no longer be allowed us, and he obstinately refus'd to tell us why we were treated with so much severity. This could not but make us very uneasy, and we held a consultation thereupon, but were not able to unfold the mystery: That 'twas not out of indulgence we were so ill us'd was manifest; but then what could they pretend by this fresh insult? Admit that my wife's being with child was made a handle, how were we become more guilty since the minister's having certified himself of the truth of it by his own eyes, than when I had assur'd him of it five months before? 'Tis true, indeed, that he had always pretended to suspect my
since-

sincerity, but 'twas that very reflection removed all the suspicions I might have harbour'd of his cruel designs, and had even hitherto made me consider his injustice as inexcusable. He perhaps, said I, is persuaded that we intend to impose upon him; the only thing wanting is, to assure him that our marriage is consummated; for the greater love he bears to his niece, the less probable it is he would force such a husband upon her as would be a dishonour for her to accept of, supposing it will be possible for me to prove the favours I received from my *Angelica*. They are now prov'd beyond dispute; after this he will never admit me for his niece's husband, and consequently he will no longer be prompted to break those engagements which bind me to my wife. This reasoning would have been just, had the minister acted the part of a tender uncle, and a virtuous and charitable pastor; but his only vices were, like the most cruel and insidious enemy, to satisfy his resentments against Mrs. *Eliot*, her daughter, and myself; and this was the sole motive of all his outrage. My companions had not shar'd with me in them, had it been possible for him to have destroy'd me without involving them in it: Revenge was his only passion, or at least all the rest were made subservient to it. Mrs. *Eliot* was well acquainted with his character when she gave me so just a description of it; and 'twas with reason she said he had been so active in putting his sister-in-law to death, purely that he might revenge himself of *Guiton*, whom he could not ruin without making her share in it. This villainous action is worthy of his injurious treatment afterwards; for I don't relate any thing of this odious ecclesiastic which the sequel will not evidently confirm.

The difficulty we had to dive into his designs oblig'd us to have recourse to the usual consolation of the wretched, I mean patience, and the invoking heaven. Tho' I had no manner of notion of the danger which threaten'd me, I yet could not forbear being very uneasy upon *Angelica's* account: The dear creature was ever present to my imagination: What a wretched fruit was this of so tender, so innocent an affection! She undoubtedly, said I, feels great anxiety upon my account, whilst I am trembling lest any evil should have befallen her! Which of

us is most worthy of pity? Alas! I am sensible that the deepest pangs I feel are not my own; but I am tortur'd for those of *Angelica*. We continued a month more in this close confinement, and received three or four visits from one of the old men, who exhorted us in general to hope for the best; but we could never prevail on him to tell us why we were so barbarously treated, he refusing to answer the questions we made him with regard to our wives. *Gelin*, who was most enrag'd at this usage, propos'd to me more than once that we should employ our pistols as the only remedy left to put an end to all the insults we had received. We had not only our own pistols, but those of our companions, which we had thought proper to take from them; because as our room was larger and more commodious, we consequently could conceal them better. I answer'd *Gelin*, that we were not absolutely to neglect this resource, but that I did not yet see there was any necessity for having recourse to it; that we ought at least to stay till such time as our fate was pronounc'd, and not act the part of men in despair till we had lost all hopes.

We had now been confin'd near six months, when one morning the minister and several of the old men came into our apartment in a seeming perplexity. Withdraw, says the minister to *Gelin* and *Johnson*, and leave me alone with Mr. *Bridge*. My dear companions went out, attended by the old men, and indeed left me alone with my enemy: He bid me sit down, with a very haughty air, and seating himself, he put two questions to me at one and the same time: Who are you, says he? and with what views are you come into this island? Surpriz'd at the contemptuous tone in which he spoke to me, I gaz'd upon him for some time without being able to utter a syllable; upon which he again ask'd me the same questions. I was determin'd to satisfy him in a civil manner, but to let him know at the same time that I was capable of some resolution. Tho' I know not, said I, with what design and by whose order you ask me these questions, if you don't know yet whom I am, I shall inform you: Know then that I am son to the *Lord Protector* of the commonwealth of *England*. As to the motive which brought me into this island, 'twas in hopes of meeting with just and virtuous

tuous men; grant heavens I may not be deceived in my expectations! This was far from being an uncivil answer, but nevertheless he reproach'd me for it, as tho' it shew'd a want of respect. His hatred vented itself at first only in opprobrious words, but afterwards assuming a less angry air, I can hardly, says he, believe that man who has been guilty of such crimes as you have committed, can be the son of so great a man, or that you have the least spark of honour and virtue, since you've violated all the laws of it; but if, says he, you really believ'd that the inhabitants of this island love order and justice, I now come to assure you of it, by informing you that guilt is here punish'd with the utmost severity, and that you yourself will be an example of it. We don't suffer either adulterers or seducers to live among us: A husband who breaks his vows with his wife deserves death, and you stand already condemn'd by the laws. However, as the colony only have the power of sentencing a man to death, you yet may entertain hopes that they'll perhaps mitigate it; but then don't depend too much upon this, says he, with a disdainful air, but think of making your peace with heaven; for the people have prosecuted, with the utmost vigour, persons who were less criminal than you are. I was for justifying myself, or rather I was in such confusion, that when I attempted it, I scarce knew what I was going to say; but he stopt me, and desir'd I would suspend my justification till such time as persons were nominated to examine me. He added, as he rose up, that he had been sent to visit me merely in his ministerial function, that is, to exhort me to repent, and to make a Christian use of chastisement, saying which he left me. My companions did not return again; but in a moment the keeper and two men came in, who throwing themselves upon me, fetter'd and handcuff'd me, as tho' I had been the vilest criminal.

I must confess that my courage and resolution could not bear me up against the violent impressions which so unexpected an accident made upon me. I saw 'twas all the minister's doings: Immediately *Guison's* tragical end presented itself to my imagination: I thought myself doom'd to certain death, and spent above an hour in bewailing my fate, and exclaiming against Providence. But

when

when this first anguish of my soul somewhat abated, I began to reflect that *Angelica* would infallibly be involv'd in my ruin, and undergo the same punishment. This lost me the little resolution I till then was master of, and I had like to have died with grief, and thereby have disappointed my enemies of the cruel pleasure they flatter'd themselves with, viz. of making me suffer still longer. My soul was in such distraction that I scarce had the power of uttering a word; yet 'twas impossible to keep my despair from breaking out: I attempted to speak, to cry aloud, and vent my woes in words; some indeed broke from me, but they were interrupted with sighs: I address'd them to *Angelica*, to Mrs. *Eliot*, and my companions, and I call'd heaven and earth to bear witness to the torments I felt.

My amiable wife, whose name, notwithstanding my rage, melted me whenever I repeated it, was at this time in as deplorable a condition as myself, but this I was not inform'd of till several months afterwards. How afflicting soever the uncertainty of my fate might be to me, it yet would have been very much aggravated, had I then known the pangs she suffer'd. My generous friend *Gelin* was the first that inform'd me of it, who at the same time told me the treatment my companions had met with, and every thing that had happen'd to them from the time we had been separated; but this I shall relate afterwards.

By the character I have given of the minister, and his thirst for revenge, one may easily guess who occasioned my being treated so barbarously, and the misery into which I was suddenly plunged. Now listen to the horrid scheme he had form'd. I had no sooner inform'd him of *Angelica*'s being with child, but he went immediately to Mrs. *Eliot*'s, as was before related, in order that my wife herself might confirm the truth of it. After this he went to all my companions wives, and manag'd so artfully as to prevail on them to confess indirectly they were not in the same case with *Angelica*. He now thought he had completed his utmost wishes, and was at liberty to satiate his revenge. His victims had given themselves up into his power, and he now resolv'd not to meddle any farther with my companions, but to point all his malice at *Angelica* and me. By the sentence of the vestry, the ceremony

mony of casting lots was to be look'd upon as a holy and solemn marriage; now since then I had carried on a criminal correspondence with another woman, I was therefore in *Guiton's* case; that is, I had committed adultery, and consequently deserved death. Such were his arguments. He foresaw that my companions, especially *Gelin*, might prove an obstacle in his way, by confessing themselves guilty of the same crime; but as he had already found means to persuade the old men, that this confession was a mere trick; he imagined he might easily confirm them in the same opinion, by making them observe, that 'twas not probable when six young fellows had had a criminal correspondence with as many young girls, that one of 'em only should prove with child. This indeed was so peculiar a circumstance that I myself cou'd scarce account for it; and I still look upon it as an undoubted proof that some malicious power directs my fate, and even changes the usual course of nature to make my destruction certain.

How infallible soever this project might appear to the minister, he yet conceal'd it in his bosom till the sixth month of our confinement. His only aim in this delay was to verify more strongly that *Angelica* and I were the only guilty persons. The only caution he took was to make our confinement stricter, in order that I might not suspect his designs, or attempt, in concert with my companions, to frustrate them. During a month that he kept us in this confinement, he affected, in public, not to believe that *Angelica* was with child. God forbid! would he say, that such wicked scenes should again be acted in the colony! The fatal end of *Guiton* and my sister-in-law will I hope for ever keep our maidens within the bounds of modesty and virtue. He assumed this hypocritical behaviour for some weeks, but at last my wife's pregnancy being visible to all the world, he threw off the mask on a sudden, and assembled the vestry, when he made an artful speech, which exasperated the members of it so much against me, that there was scarce one of them but was willing to vote for my being put to death. His envenom'd eloquence had chiefly two articles for its object; first, to prove our pretended marriage by lot, and the justice of the vestry in confirming it by their sentence: secondly, to destroy the belief which some of the vestry might

might entertain that my companions were as criminal as myself, supposing I were so; and to persuade them that I only was guilty of adultery. The consequence of the first article was, that I was guilty, and deserved to be punished; and the second took from me all hopes of pardon; for when many are accomplices in guilt, mercy is often shewn them, but when one person only is impeach'd of a crime, he generally is made an example of; and 'twas natural to think, after the treatment *Guiton* had met with, a young fellow like myself, without friends, and unpatroniz'd, cou'd little expect favour. The minister observ'd, that besides the clear and evident proof which might be drawn in favour of my companions from *Angelica's* only being with child, there were other testimonies of their wisdom and innocence; that those who had been confin'd apart from me, had first denied their having committed the least indecency with the women they pretended they had married in the meadow; that they had made this first deposition voluntarily, and without being constrain'd to it; that as they had changed their note after they had spoke to me in the church, 'twas manifest I had solicited them to it; that 'twas equally plain those who had been confin'd with me had follow'd my directions in every thing; that foreseeing the ill consequences of the criminal correspondence I had carried on with *Angelica*, I had found 'twou'd be impossible for me to extricate myself, but by endeavouring to increase the number of the guilty; and that I had been so cunning as to persuade my companions that our interests were inseparable; that the young women had also differ'd in their depositions; that in their confinement they protested they had never once swerv'd from their duty; but that the instant they were free, that is, so soon as I by letter had taught them what to say, they had talk'd after a quite different manner; that he had intercepted some of mine or my companions letters; and that they were written in such malicious and dangerous terms, that he therefore prevailed with the vestry to change our keeper. In a word, the minister employ'd on this occasion all that the most inveterate hatred cou'd inspire, in order to make us odious to the people; and indeed, his discourse had all the success he propos'd. From that moment the old men

consider'd me not only as a wretch who was convicted of adultery, but also as the contriver of all that I and my companions had acted; and blaming me wholly for the resistance they met with from them, they look'd upon me only as guilty.

We may now suppose that they thought me unworthy of life; and indeed, they were unanimous in this opinion; and tho' several persons in the assembly, who had a friendship for Mrs. *Eliot*, wish'd that her daughter might meet with some indulgence, yet her cause was so strongly interwoven with mine, that 'twas impossible but she must undergo the same fate with me. Besides, no one would have dared to solicit for her in presence of the minister, since he had been so active in prosecuting his unhappy sister in the same circumstances. Her destruction and mine were therefore resolved upon; but as the vestry were not impower'd to pass sentence of death, they contented themselves, according to the establish'd custom, to reduce the several articles of the minister's charge under different heads, and expose them to public view. 'Twas the custom, on those occasions, to fix a kind of declaration on the church door, containing the crimes with which the prisoners were charg'd. These every man examin'd, that after full information he might be enabled to give his opinion; and this being done, all the inhabitants of the island used to meet, proclamation being first made for that purpose, when they proceeded regularly to pronounce sentence. From that day, my wife and I were look'd upon, if not as criminals already convicted, at least as persons impeach'd, whose guilt was so notorious and certain that our condemnation seem'd inevitable, and were both of us treated accordingly. *Angelica* was forced away from her mother's, and confin'd in a gloomy place; and as for myself, I was loaded with chains, and order'd by the minister to prepare for death. As for my companions, who were justified in some measure by the pretended crimes which were laid to my charge, they were set at liberty. The minister was answerable for their behaviour; and as he was resolv'd to ruin me, he told the vestry that as they would now no longer be depraved by my counsels, they might depend upon their prudence and

docility.

docility. Such were the preludes to the fatal scene that was preparing.

When *Gelin* and *Johnson* were set at liberty, they cou'd not conceive the reason why I was still confin'd. These two friends, who lov'd me dearly because we had so long been companions in ill fortune, cou'd not conceal the uneasiness they felt, when I was excepted out of the pardon which was indulged them; and indeed they discover'd it publicly the very same day; but how were they exasperated when they heard that my wife had been seiz'd! and that, both of us having been pronounced capitally guilty by the vestry, they waited only for the assembling of the colony, in order to put their sentence in execution! Upon this, *Gelin* ran immediately to the minister, when he spoke to him in so resolute a tone as quite disconcerted him; and giving him to understand, that what veneration soever he might have for the vestry and the colony, yet nothing in the world should ever make him abandon me in my distress; he told him plainly, that before he attempted to take away my life, he must put it out of his power, to sacrifice his in my defence. The minister who fancied that my companions would be so overjoy'd to find themselves set at liberty, that they would value but very little what became of me, was forced to employ all his rhetoric to soften *Gelin*. He own'd to him, that the vestry had come to resolutions, with regard to me, which were not very favourable; but added, that it would be a considerable time before they wou'd be put in execution; and that what turn soever things might take, he might be sure that sentence would not pass upon *Angelica* till after she was deliver'd; that the vestry and colony might very probably change their resolutions before the time came; in a word, that my cause was not desperate. This answer was true in part; for they cou'd not pretend to condemn *Angelica* to die, nor me consequently, before she was brought to bed; but all the minister's aim in this was, to soften *Gelin*'s anger just for a time, thinking that it wou'd be a very easy matter for him afterwards to win over him and his companions, by a pretended shew of kindness, or impose upon them by his artifices: and finding that what he last said had made some impression on *Gelin*, he thence took

occasion to let him know, that his own and his companions good behaviour wou'd contribute more than any thing else to the recovery of my liberty.

Gelin had a fault which is common to all sincere and generous men, I mean a mind incapable of harbouring distrust and suspicion. He had just been set at liberty, and the minister had not forgot to assure him, that he was obliged to him for it. This circumstance, heightned by a specious appearance of goodness and moderation with regard to me, made *Gelin* think that he was not our enemy; that he had given him the best advice, and consequently that his following it wou'd be of the highest service to me. *Gelin* won *Johnson* and the rest of our companions to his opinion; upon which they all resolv'd to constrain themselves so far, as not to complain of being debarr'd seeing their wives; or in case they shou'd be again urged to marry the women they abhorr'd. They afterwards declared from time to time, but in the mildest terms, that they cou'd not yet resolve upon marrying them; and they waited continually on the minister and the vestry, in order to procure my release. I can't say whether it had been better for me, had they acted in a quite different manner; but 'tis certain that the minister was not to be wrought upon by mildness and civility; and it only gave him an opportunity of abusing their credulity, by winning them insensibly as he had propos'd, and at last making them to be perjured with regard to their wives, and unfaithful to their friend. I speak only of three among them, for *Gelin* and *Johnson* might be impos'd upon, but they had souls equally abhorrent with mine to falshood and infidelity.

'Twas my three other companions, whom I have not yet nam'd, that my subtile enemy was now resolv'd to sound: Two of them were *Englishmen*, whose names were *Blackmore* and *Green*, and the third a *Frenchman*, call'd *Roussel*. I never knew directly by what arts he impos'd upon them; however, I don't doubt but that 'twas rather from fickleness of temper than for the sake of interest that they were alienated from us. They were compelled to visit continually the women they intended for their wives, and at the same time were forbid the sight of those who were really such: they were for ever exhorting them to have the fear of God before their eyes, and endeavour-

ing to prove that they could not break their first ties. A new passion, a weak scruple, and the minister's continual solicitations, made them forget what they ow'd to their honour and their oaths. They at last yielded to what they had so long been prompted to in vain, and growing fond of the wives that were given them, they no longer had any regard for their companions. This was what the minister chiefly aim'd at, as was plain from the caution he employ'd when he married them; for being afraid of *Gelin* and *Johnson*, whom he had always found inflexible, he perform'd the ceremony in private, for fear they should put a stop to it by their complaints, and the reproaches they might cast on their weak friends. For this reason they did not hear a word of their marriage till several days after it was concluded; or rather till they discover'd it by the confus'd air and behaviour of our three false friends. *Gelin* could not forbear reproaching them for it in the severest terms, and treating them with the utmost contempt and indignation; but this had no other effect but to exasperate them to join with our enemies against us.

Whata triumph was this for the minister! and indeed he was not long before he reaped the fruits of it. Having found that nothing could stagger *Gelin* and *Johnson's* constancy, he thought that as he now had set them at variance with their companions, they were too inconsiderable to have any regard shewn them; and accordingly, instead of using them with gentleness, as he had done before, he resolv'd to treat them with severity. Upon his being told that *Gelin* had broke into several injurious expressions when he heard of the marriage of our companions, he took an occasion from thence to talk to him in the sharpest terms, which plainly shew'd what he was to expect afterwards, and that they were resolved not to spare him. However, his great love and affection for me made him submit patiently to this insult. He has since told me, that he himself had wonder'd how it were possible for him to bridle his temper so much, for he never had so strong an inclination to use the minister as he deserv'd: But the friendship of this generous *Frenchman* had soon a more just, but a more unhappy subject to exercise itself upon, and which engaged him to venture his life, in the boldest manner, to defend mine. As I was more

struck with his generosity than the service he did me, I must confess that the obligations by which he has bound me are so great that tho' I were to shed the last drop of my blood, I yet could never repay them sufficiently.

But now *Angelica* was deliver'd, while unhappy I was languishing in prison, and groaning in chains! Alas! I was not told till now of her being imprison'd; but scarce were her throws over, when the minister, who believed he might now throw off all restraint, assembled the vestry, and prest them to execute their first resolutions. I have already observed, that my wife's being with child had served as a pretence to suspend it. Tho' *Gelin* and *Johnson* did all that lay in their power to soften the old men, they were still inflexible, and accordingly they resolved to fix the next day, on the church-door a paper containing the crimes I was accus'd of, and the judgment of the vestry. *Gelin* heard nothing of it till he read the fatal writing above-mention'd: The moment he read that it was levell'd at my wife and I, he tore it down, which being immediately told the minister, the vestry met upon it. After some debates, they thought it would be best not to punish it, and make as tho' they knew nothing of the matter. An assembly of the whole colony was appointed, who accordingly met a few days after in the church; but as the minister stood in great fear of *Gelin's* eloquence, and was persuaded that he would use all his endeavours to procure my release, he therefore got the vestry to draw up an order, by which my companions were forbid appearing at church on the day sentence was to pass upon me, and gave particular orders to the wardens not to let them in. In the mean time *Gelin* and *Johnson* did their utmost to gain me the people's favour, and to excite their wives friends and relations to exert themselves in my defence. Their endeavours were fruitless, and the only answer which was made them was, that the law was express, that my crime was fully prov'd, and that as *Guiton* had been made so severe an example, it was not fitting I should be spar'd. As to the objection which might naturally be made in my favour, viz. that I thought myself truly married to *Angelica*; and that even supposing the validity of the marriage which was made by lot, I yet was guilty of

of but one error, since I had never look'd upon it as valid: to this objection I say they answer'd, that 'twas a trifling excuse, since three of my companions had just before shewn, by marrying the women who were destin'd for them, that they were not insensible to their former engagements, and that 'twas probable I must have as deep a sense of it myself, tho' I acted so differently. Thus did the vile conduct of these three false men contribute more than any thing else to my ruin. *Gelin* has nevertheless told me since, that they might easily perceive by the manner in which the people refus'd to hear his earnest entreaties, that the minister had prejudiced them against me, and that he had for three months endeavour'd underhand to erase out of their minds all the sensations of pity they might entertain in my favour.

At last, the day of meeting being come, my trial was brought on regularly: My wife's confession and mine were read, the depositions of the witnesses taken, and my case was laid open by one of the old men, when the people declaring that they had heard enough, they afterwards gave their voices, according to the usual method. Above two thirds were against me and my unhappy wife, for we were both comprehended in the same sad sentence, and accordingly we were declared guilty of *Guiton's* crime, and condemn'd to die the same death. Execution was order'd next day, and in order that this dreadful ceremony might end in a manner worthy the whole procedure, the minister made a pathetick discourse, in which he protested he had the utmost compassion for me, and exhorted the assembly to take warning by my sad fate.

Now what do you imagine were my thoughts, while my life and that of my dear *Angelica* were conspir'd against? Alas! I flatter'd myself with the hopes of meeting with a milder fate: My delusive hopes were grounded on my having been so long confin'd, and the humanity of the inhabitants, whom I did not yet take for a set of barbarous and merciless people. I hardly had been visited by any person except the minister during my three months imprisonment. When he first visited me he behav'd in a most haughty and severe manner, but he assum'd a placid behaviour latterly: His cruel joy arose undoubtedly from the reflection that I should shortly be condemn'd

demn'd to die; and I, on the contrary, suppos'd it to be an omen of my happy deliverance. This opinion made so strong an impression on my mind, that I had refrain'd for some days from abandoning myself to groans and wailings, which hitherto had prey'd continually upon me, and even the thoughts of my dear, dear wife, whose idea, which was for ever in my mind, had made me shed so many tears, now presented itself to my imagination under a less mournful form. I shall see her again, says I to myself; I shall be permitted to see her again, and love her tenderly. Dearest *Angelica*! fate will no longer oppose the most tender, the most innocent passion that ever warm'd a lover's breast: I shall enjoy thee in peace, and spend the rest of my time in thy arms. Thus, while they were sentencing me to a cruel death, I fed myself with fond notions of fantastick happiness: I was the sport of that malicious power which doom'd me to be unhappy from my birth, and has preserv'd my life purely to make me a sad example of wretchedness and woe.

The ideal satisfaction which this gave me was more than balanc'd by the sorrows I suffer'd before the day was ended. It was now about dusk, when I heard a dreadful thundering at my door; upon which I ran towards it to listen, when methought I heard *Gelin* crying, with a furious and melancholy tone of voice, open the door, or I'll murder you. The great noise I heard made me suppose that there were several persons along with him; and I wondered very much how it would end. The door flew open, when I saw *Gelin* and *Johnson*, my dear friends and faithful companions, come in, who immediately embrac'd me in the most tender and affectionate manner. They were followed by fifteen men, so that the room was full: Their presence, and the marks they gave me of their friendship, agreed so well with the agreeable ideas I had entertain'd myself all the day with, that I was persuaded for a moment that they brought in the news of my release. Tell me, says I, clasping them fast, am I free? Are you so? How does my dear wife do? A sigh or two which fell from *Gelin* before he answer'd me, denoted but too plain that he had no good news to tell me. Alas! my good friend *Bridge*, said he with a melancholy voice, I'm going to pierce thy heart. I know thee, and

am going to strike thee dead; and then, without giving me time to answer, he added, that my condition was so wretched, he was forc'd to acquaint me with it. You are, says he, shedding some tears, sentenc'd to die to-morrow, you and your dear *Angelica*. All I can do for you is, to defend you to the last drop of my blood, assisted by our worthy friend *Johnson*, and these fifteen brave men. We have not one moment to lose, and at least let us die like men of honour.

'Tis impossible for these words to strike you as they did me: *Gelin* would have knock'd off my fetters, and carried me out along with him: No, no, said I, pushing him from me with a trembling hand; no, dear *Gelin*, I'll be speedily inform'd of all the misfortunes which have befall'n me. For heaven's sake don't conceal any part of them from me: If *Angelica* is to die; alas! But don't hide one circumstance, says I, interrupting myself; in case she be already dead, I need go little farther to die. He then told me in few words part of my wretched condition, and the little hopes I had left if I did not immediately follow his instructions. He inform'd me that my wife had been happily deliver'd of a son, and that my enemies were so barbarous, as scarcely to defer sentencing her to die with me till she was deliver'd. This reflection, added to the horrors of her condemnation and mine, fill'd me with such deep pangs as surely never mortal felt before. My heart was at one and the same time a prey to tenderness and rage: I was tore to pieces by one, and so much melted by the other, that I burst into a flood of tears as I embrac'd my dear friends. These transports were so violent that they struck me dumb; rage would not suffer my tenderness to express itself, and tenderness seem'd to check all the expressions of my rage.

Johnson and *Gelin* melted with compassion to see the excess of my grief and despair: They forc'd off my chains, and told me their design, which was, that we should furnish ourselves with weapons out of the storehouse, that we should rescue *Angelica*, and then go to our wives houses, and take them along with us. After this, we were to go back to the storehouse, which we should keep as a fortress, and not lay down our arms till the colony should grant us a free pardon. When I first thought of

the project, says *Gelin* to me privately, I did not intend to treat our enemies with so much moderation, but had I not promis'd it, these persons wou'd not have afforded us their succour. Let us go, my dear friends, says I, now beginning to take a little breath; let's go, and secure all we hold dear in the world. As for our enemies, says I in *Gelin's* ear, we'll revenge ourselves in some manner or other upon them. I indeed had form'd a scheme, by which I should have punish'd the minister sufficiently, in humbling his pride and haughtiness; for notwithstanding I was so highly exasperated, I yet cou'd not think of revenging myself any other way on an ecclesiastick. My design was, to force him out of his habitation, carry him to the storehouse, and there oblige him, for several days together, to kneel down before us, and be a spectator while we indulged in tenderness to our wives. As I was very well acquainted with his temper, I knew that he wou'd rather have chosen death, than submit to this punishment.

We immediately arm'd ourselves, and took each of us a pistol, a musket, and a sword, when marching out in good order, we left three men to guard the storehouse. Scarce were we come out, when we heard a confused noise, as though the people were assembled. We did not doubt but 'twas upon our account. My companions call'd to mind that they omitted one particular, which might be very prejudicial to us; and that was, they had forgot to secure the goaler at their coming into the storehouse. We therefore supposed that he had told the minister and old men the forcible manner in which *Gelin* and his company had entred the prison; and that the inhabitants having been inform'd of it, were in the utmost fear and surprize. However, as this was no reason for us to lay aside our design, we advanced forward. Being got about twenty yards farther, we saw the minister coming towards us with a torch in his hand, with about an hundred men at his heels; and that which surpriz'd us most, was, that most of them were arm'd with sticks, shovels, and such like instruments. I must confess, that upon the first sight of my enemy, I had a great mind to shoot him, and thereby put an end to his villainy and treachery; and I question whether heaven wou'd have punished

punished me for this crime, since it wou'd in all probability prevent this wicked man from committing many more. I nevertheless suffer'd him to live, and thereby expos'd myself again to his perfidy. Tho' he advanced in the boldest manner, he nevertheless was in a fright when he saw himself oppos'd by so many men armed with swords and muskets. The people who were along with him were as much terrify'd as himself. *Gelin*, just as I was going to vent my reproaches, began to mortify him, which he did in the severest manner. Stand, wicked wretch, says he, presenting the end of his piece towards him, and thank heaven that thou art fallen into the hands of people who are honestier than thy self. Thou deservest to be put to that death which thou hadst determined to make my friend suffer. We will let thee live, in order that thou may'st be thy own tormentor; for life must be a burden to a wretch who has so many crimes to reproach himself with. However, if thou art fond of it, thou may'st begin this moment to atone for thy guilt. This discourse, which one would have imagin'd must either terrify or exasperate him still more, did not produce either of these effects. He had time to recover himself as *Gelin* spoke; and being persuaded, from what he said, that we had no design upon his life, he had so much presence of mind as not to discover any emotions either of fear or anger; upon which he answer'd *Gelin*, that he could not conceive why he was treated in that cruel manner. I did my endeavour, says he to him, to procure your liberty, and was successful; and the reason why I did not indulge your friend the same favour, was because justice, our laws, and the sentence of the vestry and colony wou'd not permit it. But there's a considerable distance between condemnation and execution; and tho' it be appointed to-morrow, that's only a matter of mere form, and it may very possibly be suspended. In a word, tho' there was no avoiding our condemning your friend to die, he yet may be pardon'd now sentence is past upon him. I must confess, says he, that I was very much surpriz'd you did not sue for a pardon; and so far from being displeased at the attempt you have made to get him releas'd, I myself assure you, that I'll join with your endeavours to obtain it. As for your companions, I mean
such

such of our inhabitants as are now arm'd with you, I confess that it will be difficult to excuse them. This is such an unparallel'd attempt as can never be pardon'd; and as for my own part, I declare, that by virtue of my ministerial function I cut them off from our communion, in case they don't this moment lay down their arms. I foresee, says he, what will be the consequence of this, directing himself to them; we're going to pardon *Bridge*, and you may probably be punish'd in his stead. Tho' you should escape punishment, you plainly see that your reputation wou'd be blasted for ever; but there is still room left for repentance, so let me advise you to carry back your arms to the storehouse.

This subtle speech was the cause of our ruin; it indeed brought the minister to condign punishment; but what advantage cou'd the punishment of a wicked man be to a set of unfortunate wretches? Our irresolute companions having consulted together for a moment or two, resolv'd to return to the storehouse, in spite of all our entreaties to the contrary. This threw *Gelin* into the utmost transports of grief: We must not now, says he, suffer ourselves to be deluded by new artifices; we must either die, or be victorious in our enterprize. I approv'd of the motion; when *Johnson*, he and I, standing close together, and shewing by our posture that we were resolv'd no one shou'd come near us, we went on towards the place where my wife was imprison'd. The minister used all his endeavours to stop us, by repeating his treacherous promises, but to no purpose. We answer'd as we were going on, that nothing but death cou'd put a stop to our design; and that before this could be done, more blood would be spilt than ours.

This was our fixt resolution, in which we were more and more confirm'd as we advanced forward. We were now come within forty yards of the place where my wife was confin'd. In our way we met with a great many people who were running up and down, as in a publick alarm, but as no one oppos'd us, our hopes of success still increased. We had now gone about three fourths of the way, when we heard a great many people running behind us. Halt, says I to *Gelin*, we are pursu'd. Tho' we had no other light than that of a few candles, which
some

some women who were in a great fright held out at their doors, we yet could see fifteen or twenty men, who came up to us in a moment. We easily imagin'd that their arms were those our deserters had carried, which the minister had bid them seize upon: They now bid us halt, and lay down our arms. We'll sooner, says *Gelin*, die a thousand deaths. The first that advances a step farther is a dead man. Our pieces were indeed cock'd, which made them afraid of coming any nearer; whereupon they advis'd us to yield, and to consider that they wou'd overpower us with numbers. But we were as regardless of their exhortations as of their menaces, so that we kept our ground in the same posture, till the minister came, who soon appear'd at the head of his men. He still held his torch in his hand, and as most of his followers had taken some in their way, 'twas in an instant as light as day. The minister, whom numbers had now emboldned, and exasperated to find us still in a posture of defence, call'd his followers a pack of cowards, in being afraid of three young fellows. This reproach made them advance boldly. Since 'tis so, cries *Gelin*, stepping forward towards the minister, have at thee. Upon which he fir'd at him, and wounded him mortally, he dropt. *Johnson* and I fir'd also, and wounded several men, and thereupon drawing our swords, our enemies rush'd upon us, and tho' notwithstanding we made a furious resistance, they yet seiz'd and disarm'd us; which being done, some of the old men who were then present, order'd us to be carried immediately to the storehouse, where we were imprison'd in different apartments. I had time to speak only a word to my companions as they were forcing them away: Farewel, says I aloud, brave *Gelin*; fearwel, dear *Johnson*, may your generosity and friendship be fatal to me only! 'Twill however be a great consolation to me in my dying moments, to think that I had two such faithful, such generous friends.

And indeed I cou'd expect nothing but a speedy death, not seeing any possibility of avoiding it. Accordingly I prepar'd myself for it, with all the resolution I was now capable of. But with what difficulty did I obey the orders of heaven! Sure never were emotions so like those of the deepest despair! but was sure I merited pardon.

Was

Was it possible for a wretch to be more unfortunate than I? Whence can a man draw any arguments for patience to support himself against the most cruel of all evils, when he has reason to accuse heaven no less than men? Such was my dreadful condition. I consider'd that providence had refused me the advantages which it grants to all, except a very few, such as those of birth, a father's tenderness, and the smiles of fortune; and life, in the manner it was granted me, was not so much a favour, as a fatal and poisonous gift. Had men used me with less severity! Alas! call back all the sad circumstances of my life. Torn from a mother's arms in my infant years; depriv'd of her endearing care, by an accident, the bare reflection of which fills me with shame and horror; brought up afterwards in a dreadful cave, where all the objects round me were mournful, and rais'd the most gloomy reflections in my mind. I was eager to see my father; I was in raptures at the thoughts of it; when alas! he became my deadly enemy, who was forced to commit a violence upon himself before he could be induced to spare my life; and who when he allow'd it me, was resolv'd to make it as miserable as possible. At last I escaped from his cruelty, and have some hopes of a change in my wretched fortune. But what is the effect of the promise which was made me, of meeting with happier days? Only to multiply the cause of my sorrows, and make me find the most cruel torments in those very things which create the felicity of others. Love, friendship, and all things are converted to poison and tortures, when I am the object. A whole colony, that profess'd virtue, become barbarous and inhuman, when I am to be made unhappy. A tender and innocent passion is look'd upon as a crime; a holy marriage is considered as adultery; I am sentenced to die; and the only two friends who indulge me their assistance in my distress, are involv'd in my ruin.

What man had resolution enough to bear up against such dreadful reflections! But hitherto my complaints were only against the cruelty of fortune; faint sorrows when I compar'd them to those of love! I was to lose my enchanting *Angelica*; the thoughts of which by my death was a more cruel torment than all those my enemies

mies were preparing for me; but when I reflected that she was sentenced also to die, to see her perhaps expire before my eyes; my *Angelica*! my dear, dear wife! all that my soul held dear! Oh! my torments were inexpressible, and sure no one ever felt such before! I figur'd to myself the dear creature in chains alone and inconsolable, and expecting death, which she look'd upon as unavoidable; and as I was sensible that she had a most tender heart, I was fully persuaded that she did not so much bewail her own misfortunes as mine. She then, would I say to myself, is weeping for me; she deploras my death, and perhaps dreads it more than her own; and I am denied telling her the deep anguish I feel, telling her that I adore her only, and that since she is sentenced to die, I would despise the most glorious fortune that should keep me from dying with her. I again represented her to my imagination, languishing, weak, and not recover'd from the pangs of delivery: When these dreadful ideas presented themselves to my fancy, neither the dictates of religion, nor the approach of death, could endue me with resolution sufficient to resist them. Cruel minister! barbarous people! What would I say? Does not a sweet creature of sixteen, a tender and innocent creature, whose only crime is the loving me, and being lovely, inspire you with some compassion for her numberless sorrows? Are you men? Are you fierce wolves or tygers, that thirst for blood? Cruel protestants! Is this the tenderness and humanity your religion inspires? Go back to your respective countries, which you pretend to have abandon'd for the sake of truth; be there Turks, Idolaters, and don't violate the holy laws of nature, which are the most sacred and inviolable.

Thus did I spend the night in these heart-breaking reflections, in which the unhappy Mrs. *Eliot* was not forgot. She lov'd me with a mother's tenderness before I could claim it in quality of her son, and I was certain that my death would afflict her almost as much as that of her daughter. Could I at least but thank her for her indulgence! Had I been allow'd to see her once more, and to beg her pardon for the ruin I had brought upon her family!

mily! Alas! so soft, so tender a woman as she cannot have long bore up against such an uninterrupted series of woe: Grief and tears must have brought her unhappy old age to the grave. The mother, the daughter, and the sad fruits of our marriage, are undoubtedly all dead. I no more flatter myself with the hopes of seeing again what is so dear to me: Before this cou'd be brought about, heaven must work a miracle in my favour, and a miserable wretch like me is not to expect any.

The day which succeeded this dreadful night was the last I expected of my life and that of *Angelica*. Tho' I was very much afflicted upon *Gelin* and *Johnson's* account, I yet could not think they would be so cruel as to put them to death for rescuing me: 'Twas probable they would not go those lengths unless the minister happen'd to die of his wound. I thought the wound was not mortal, particularly as he stood so firm after his rising up. 'Twas some consolation to me, if I could receive any in this despair, that my friends were not exposed to so much danger as myself. I now expected the fatal moment when I was to be carried to execution. The goaler bringing me some sustenance, I refus'd to take it, as being of no use, since I had so little time to live. I call'd upon heaven to assist me, and my most tender wishes were for my dear wife: I endeavour'd to make her execution familiar to my imagination, in order to lessen, if possible, the tortures which the sight of it would fill my soul with; and supposing that we should suffer together, as *Guison* and his mistress had done, I figur'd to myself the terrors of the instant when we should be thrown into the sea together. I consider'd whether I could not by some means or other succour my wife, bear her up in my arms in the midst of the waves, convey away the dear creature, carry her to shore, and by that means preserve her precious life; or at least contribute to make death more tolerable, and employ myself 'till the last gasp in softening the dreadful horrors of death, by the most passionate assurances of my love. Thus did I spend the whole day, without being visited by any person. Surely the effects of love are vastly astonishing: I felt a kind of impatience till the executioners came to seize me; 'twas not that I began to consider death in a less horrible light, but

the strong desire I had to see *Angelica*, made me forget that the moment this exquisite pleasure would be indulg'd me, I should be instantly depriv'd of it: As all my attention was fix'd on her only; and on the inexpressible satisfaction I should enjoy in speaking to her, and hearing her dear voice, I lost sight, as it were, of our punishment, and fed myself with a useless and unhappy tenderness.

At last night being come, I imagin'd that our execution would be suspended till the morrow, which I ascrib'd to the tumult we had occasion'd the night before. I was reflecting on this, when I heard the door open on a sudden; upon which four men came in, and advanc'd towards me without speaking a word. They took off my chains, but had brought a rope, with which they tied my hands. I ask'd them several questions, but could not obtain any answer. Tell me at least, said I to them, whether you are going to carry me to death? Shall I see my wife? Shall I not be allowed to bid her a last farewell? They seem'd to give me some signs that they were oblig'd by oath not once to open their lips, and discover'd some uneasiness upon that account; but one of them spoke: Let it be some consolation to you, says he, that you will not die alone. Well, said I, I forgive you my death, provided I may be allowed to breathe my last with my *Angelica*. They took me out of the storehouse, and carried me towards the sea. I am then, said I, going to death; my life and misfortunes will end together, heaven be prais'd for it: But where shall I meet my wife? They would not make any answer. I was surprized that neither compassion nor curiosity had brought some person to be a spectator on this sad occasion. But now, after we had walk'd about a mile, methought I heard the noise of some persons, some going before, and others behind us. I did not doubt but *Angelica* was among them, when my heart was seiz'd with such emotions that I could scarce go a step farther. Dear, unhappy wife, said I, in the most mournful tone that ever sure was heard; is our fond, our endearing promises come then to this? 'Tis then in perishing together that we shall fulfil the oath we reciprocally made, never to be separated. Oh! said I to the men who guarded me, would pity at least but suffer you to un-

loose

loose my hands! If you would but give me leave to clasp my dearest wife with one soul-ravishing embrace! What are you afraid of? Dare you not be a little more humane than those who gave you those cruel orders? Cannot you put off your cruelty for a moment? They made me no manner of answer. We were come to the entrance of the winding way which went through the rock: We past it in the dark, but as we were coming out towards the sea I perceiv'd a light, and ten or twelve men standing on the shore, one of whom I discover'd to be *Gelin*.

His hands were also tied: 'Twas he I had heard walk before us, with the guards, and *Johnson*, who was behind, came up a moment after. I thought they were doom'd to destruction no less than myself. By a flood of tears which gush'd suddenly from my eyes, and the unforeseen horror with which I was seiz'd, I found that I had not yet been so unhappy as I was in that instant. I advanc'd forward in a transport towards my dear friends, whom I was not yet allowed to embrace. The passionate emotions by which I first express'd my grief, persuaded them that 'twas not the fear of dying that thus put me by myself: friendship now acted as strongly on my heart as love had done before. I scarce could find words to express the sensations I then felt. *Gelin* spoke before me: He spoke with a resolute tone of voice, but his eyes seem'd to have lost their usual sprightliness and fire. This, says he, is a very tragical scene, but we must go through it like men of honour. We were sentenc'd to die as yesterday, so that there will be only the hour and the manner of our death which will be chang'd. I was endeavouring to answer him, but I certainly should not have spoke with so much resolution as he did, when I was interrupted by one of the old men, who was giving out some orders from the boat, upon my coming, and seeing us standing together, he spake to us as follows:

Hearken, said he, to what I am order'd to say to you: 'Tis manifest that you deserve to die; *Bridge* was justly sentenced to death, for committing a crime which was never pardon'd in this colony; and *Gelin* and *Johnson* incurr'd so much guilt yesterday; that the action alone proclaims it. We liv'd in a peaceable and happy manner be-

fore

fore you came among us : You have disturb'd our tranquillity by seducing our daughters, murdering our minister, and imposing laws upon us by force and violence. In fine, you have brought all the depravity of *Europe* hither, which we hop'd would never invade these happy seats. Such are your crimes; they are evidently prov'd, and there is not one in the colony but voted for your being put to death ; so that one would have thought it inevitable : However, the minister, in his expiring moments, desir'd the vestry to meet in his house; to them he confess'd with all humility that he had contributed to your errors by his severity, for which he reproach'd himself ; and his earnest desire to make his peace with heaven made him intercede so strongly for your pardon, that we could not refuse indulging his request, that venerable man having been as a father to the colony for more than twenty years. He is dead, and your lives are spar'd. However, now you are pardon'd, we have not thought proper to keep you any longer among us. Resentments, tho' stifled for some time, are yet apt to break out afterwards : Notwithstanding the guilt you have incurr'd, and our lenity, we hardly think you will act justly with regard to yourselves; and what may we not fear from three such bold, such enterprizing young men as you ? Besides, there are so many difficulties in your marriages that they never will be got over. You are resolved not to submit to the sentence of the vestry, and they are determin'd not to revoke it; so that the best you can do for both, will be to banish yourselves for ever from this island, and to return to your native countries. Such is the sentence of the consistory, which I am order'd to declare to you. They order'd, that you should be carried privately to the sea-side, to prevent your being made a spectacle to the people, whom curiosity would have invited hither : And farther, that you may not have any just reason for complaint, or to accuse us of severity, they have order'd me to give you fifteen hundred pounds, which you are to divide equally between you : You'll find it on board the little vessel which will carry you to *St. Helena*. Depart, said he, and you'll soon meet with a ship in that place in which you may sail for *Europe*.

Who.

Who could imagine, after the many afflicting circumstances I have related, that there remain'd others still more dreadful? But 'tis certain that when I heard that myself and *Angelica* were sentenced to die, it yet did not make so deep an impression on my mind, as my being order'd to leave the island. My companions were as much griev'd as myself. Our pardon was not look'd upon by us as a favour, but accounted more dreadful than death itself; which would have put an end to all our torments, but the life we were condemn'd to lead, far remov'd from our wives, wou'd be the most cruel punishment. No, says I, they shall not force me either to go away or accept of life. I will die, in case I have merited death; that only shall tear me from an island where all my happiness is fix'd. Have some pity, says I to the old man who was going away, and leaving us with those who had guarded us; have some compassion. Behold three unfortunate wretches, who wish to die. Heavens! are three criminals refused to be put to death, who beg it as a favour? Stop; hearken to us; don't drive us to the utmost despair! He turn'd his head, but 'twas only to tell us that he sympathized with us in our sorrow, and the necessity he was under of obeying the orders of the vestry. We then all fell on our knees, and our intreaties were so moving, that had he heard them, he must have been melted into compassion; but as he struck into the opening of the rock, we lost all further hopes. *Gelin* and *Johnson*, who were no less afflicted than myself, ask'd me what we should do. You are eloquent, says I to *Gelin*, endeavour therefore to soften those who guard us. Accordingly, he employ'd all the rhetoric that art and nature, heightened by grief, cou'd suggest. But the inhabitants had appointed a set of wretches to guard us, whom they knew to be inflexible and barbarous.

And now they urged us to go on board the vessel; and indeed, had we refused it any longer they seemed inclin'd to force us to it. Our hands were still bound fast, so that we could not make the least resistance. I whisper'd in *Gelin*'s ear, The evil is now past all cure; let us not render ourselves obnoxious to these fellows, since we are wholly in their power. But in case we are carried to *St. Helena*,
we

we may then return back in a formidable manner. Our fifteen hundred pounds will procure us assistance sufficient. Tho' the inhabitants have told us that it would be impossible to come at their island, we yet will find it out, tho' it were to sink under water. I spoke the same words to *Johnson*, and both of them approv'd the hint, and thereupon we went on board. Our vessel was not a very small one. Six of the men who guarded us, and two rowers went into the ship. The night was so dark, that had they not been thoroughly acquainted with the coast, they would never have dar'd to run in the midst of so many rocks. We went on our course very successfully for some hours. Tho' those who guarded us were not now under the same obligation of being silent, they yet refused to answer the questions we put to 'em. Mine turn'd wholly upon *Angelica*; but the strong emotions I felt had prevented me, after the old man had spoke to us, from enquiring what fate my wife was doom'd to. Tho' I might naturally suppose that she was not excepted out of the pardon, yet a bare probability was not sufficient to sooth my uneasiness, and it increased very much, when I found my keepers still silent on that article. These obdurate wretches were deaf to my intreaties to the last. Alas! 'tis that fatal uncertainty, which is not yet clear'd up, that is still my greatest torment.

We were now come to *St. Helena*, and 'twas still dark. Our keepers set us on shore in a sort of haste, and taking the bag of gold out of the vessel, they divided it into three parts as near as they could by weight. As you are such intimate friends, say they, you'll divide the money more exactly hereafter, and the only reason of our doing it, is in order that it may be more portable. They then gave each of us our share, and leaving us on the shore with our hands bound, they return'd immediately on board. But *Gelin* called after them, What! won't you loose our hands, but make us pass for a set of wretches who have been guilty of some enormous crime? They told us they were obliged to leave us so, the vestry having given orders for that purpose; and they did not conceal the reason of it, which was, the apprehensions they were under lest we should attempt to detain them, or oblige

blige them to carry us back to the island. 'Twas to no purpose that we promised not to abuse our liberty, in case they would indulge it us. As they were going off from the shore I spoke to them as follows; You have, says I, been deaf to all our questions, and insensible to our intreaties; and we have not yet been able to melt you to compassion; but in case you have not quite put off all humanity, grant us (oh! we beg it of you) before you row away, the only favour we have to ask, thus may heaven indulge all your desires, when you are got to your island; alas! that happy island! when you are return'd into it, go to our dear wives, and tell them we desir'd you to do it. Inform them then, tho' not of the excess of our despair, since that you cou'd never describe; but that we are deeply griev'd for their sakes. Give them a faithful account of what you saw us do, and all you heard. Tell the soul-inchanting *Angelica*, that the most barbarous sentence, the most cruel separation, cannot hinder me from being hers, and that she is still my wife, that she is bound to be constant and faithful to me, and may depend upon my being so to her; that I may again be betray'd by perfidious wretches; be cruelly treated by the inhuman; be unsuccessful in my *designs*, perish in my *enterprizes*; but that neither fortune or the malice of mankind, shall ever be able to drive her from my heart. Tell her unhappy mother, that I reproach myself for all the sorrows she feels, tho' I am, alas! the innocent cause of it; that they touch me more than they do her; and that I am sufficiently punish'd for 'em by the deep despair into which I am plunged. Tell them both — Alas! tell them — But the hard-hearted wretches were got at such a distance that it was impossible for them to hear me. Possibly they might not attend to my intreaties when they were nearer; and I dare not flatter myself so far as to think that the unhappy *Angelica* had the consolation of hearing that I invok'd her name to the last. I had a particular view in employing the words *designs* and *enterprizes*, the meaning of which she and her mother cou'd not fail of understanding, were they but told them. I don't doubt but they are daily complaining of fate, for suspending so long the execution of them.

I leave you to guess at our dreadful anxiety, after the vessel was sail'd away. Day did not yet begin to break, and the barbarians would not leave us a light. 'Twas so dark that we could hardly see the sand, tho' it was white. We judg'd by the noise of the waves increasing every moment, that the tide was coming in; and therefore were obliged to walk for sometime in the dark, the sea now beginning to wet our feet. Being got at a considerable distance, we sat down, and resolv'd to continue there till day-light. We endeavour'd to force off the cords from our hands, but to no purpose, so that we were obliged to continue bound, till some charitable hand should loose them. I shall not tire you with the relation of our complaints and groans. At last, day began to appear, when we discover'd the Town about forty yards from us. We were very much asham'd to go to it in the condition we were in, knowing that it might expose us to shame and contempt. We were first discover'd by some sailors who were on the coast; and being struck with the oddness of the sight, they gaz'd upon us in astonishment for some time, not daring to approach us. I must observe, that as the coast of *St. Helena* is inhabited only by some *Portuguese*, and a few *English* and *French*, all the inhabitants are acquainted with one another; so that the sight of three unknown persons with their hands bound, cou'd not but surprize them. We begg'd them to loose them. After having consulted together a little, they answer'd in broken *English*, that those who had tied them had undoubtedly a reason for so doing, and therefore they had no business with it, but that they would carry us to the governor, who might act as he pleas'd. 'Twas to no purpose that we continued our entreaties, they being still deaf and forced us to follow them. Being obliged to go thro' the settlement, we were in a moment surrounded with a great number of people, which fill'd us with the utmost confusion. But now meeting the governor in the street, the first request we made him was, that he would please to order the populace to retire, and go with us into some house, in order to hear what we had to say; which he consented to. The governor, whose name was *Dou Pedro Columella*, tho' a *Portuguese*, nevertheless spoke both *English* and *French* with tolerable propriety. We told him our whole

whole story, which he listned to with admiration; and finding undoubtedly that our grief was natural and unaffected, he was moved to compassion, and gave us the strongest assurance of his protection.

We did not immediately disclose our grand design to him, but left him for a considerable time in the opinion, that we waited only for some ship in which we might sail for *Europe*. *Gelin*, who had a most winning carriage, endeavour'd in the mean time to insinuate himself into his favour, in order that he might afterwards assist us in our enterprize. At last *Don Pedro* was so kind to us, that we were not afraid of begging him to lend us such a succour, as might enable us to recover our wives. We had often discoursed with him about the unknown island, which we had left with so much regret, and were still so fond of. He always took great pleasure in hearing us relate the particulars of our adventures, and the rise and present state of that colony; but then he, at first, never shew'd the least inclination to send any persons to discover it. I find, says he, those people have a mind to live conceal'd, and I don't desire to hinder their being so. They come to our island, but not so often as they did a few years ago, to purchase certain things they want. Iron and several sorts of tools are of great service to them, and they leave it to our choice either to pay our selves in money, cattle, or the produce of their lands. I know there are several small islands in this sea, and they undoubtedly inhabit one of them. *Don Pedro* said farther, that his predecessor had made several fruitless attempts to find out their abode; that he had caused them to be followed; and that having once taken some of them prisoners, he had endeavour'd both by threats and promises to make them discover their island, but finding it impossible to get any thing out of them, he resolv'd to let them alone; that he himself had done the same for ten years, during which he had govern'd *St. Helena*; that about a year before one of their wives had made a voyage into *Europe*, who had embark'd at *St. Helena*, and returned some months after; but that he had not had the satisfaction of seeing or speaking to her, because the men who waited for her in this port set sail with her the instant she arriv'd.

The

Tho' the governor did not acquaint us with any thing but what we knew before, his discourse nevertheless flatter'd our hopes. We no sooner found that he was willing to forward our designs, but we intreated him to lend us one of his largest vessels, a few soldiers, and some experienc'd sailors, which he consented to, and accordingly we set sail. We spent upwards of six Weeks in rambling over the western part of the *Ethiopian* ocean, expos'd every instant to the being lost, as we were in so small a vessel, which was scarce able to resist the winds and waves. We put into a great number of known and inhabited islands, such as *Martin Vaz*, *St. Maria d' Agosta*, *Los Picos*, and we discover'd several that were before unknown. Tho' the danger increas'd daily by the craziness of our vessel, this yet would not have damp'd our resolution had my two companions and I only been on board; but our soldiers and sailors, who knew the danger we ran, and were in continual dread, declared they would return immediately to *St. Helena*: They represented to us that 'twas not probable the island we sought for lay at so great a distance from it; that it must necessarily be near *St. Helena*, since we ourselves had assur'd them we had not been above three hours in coming from thence; that it was on this supposition only that the governor had lent us a vessel, and order'd them to accompany us. However as we had rewarded them so liberally, they promised to follow us all the world over, in case we could procure a tight vessel. Thus did we return from our first expedition, with the unhappiness of seeing our hopes farther removed than ever.

Don Pedro was very much troubled at the ill success of our voyage; for as we had been out so long, he flatter'd himself that we had met with success, and was disposed to grant us all the assistance we might want farther; but there was not so much as one vessel in the harbour, at least for our purpose. The island of *St. Helena* carries on very little trade, but 'tis well situated for such ships as return from the *East-Indies* by *Affrica*, and for such as return to *Europe* from the most southern parts of *America*, it lying in their way, and furnishing them with all sorts of refreshments; but if we except the ships which sometimes put into the harbour, there are but a few indifferent

vessels in it. The governor gave us a piece of advice, which, had we not been so impatient, we should have follow'd; and that was, to stay in *St. Helena* till necessity should bring some of the inhabitants of the colony thither. I'll give, says he, strict orders that no one shall mention your being among us. As they probably won't suspect any thing, I'll get a wonderful * *Phosphorus*, which I myself know how to make, fix'd privately to their vessel, when you shall lie ready in my ship, and the instant they set out, you may follow them at some distance, tho' it be ever so dark. We fed upon these childish and trifling hopes for near six months; but they were merely ideal, and we had the mortification not to see one of the inhabitants of the colony arrive in all that time, as tho' they suspected that we were still in *St. Helena*, and therefore were resolv'd not to come thither.

We were continually on the shore casting our impatient eyes over the whole ocean; and tho' the vessel of the colony had been at never so great a distance from us, we should soon have discover'd it, could our sight have reach'd as far as our thoughts. One day, as we were thus employ'd, we spy'd a ship that was making heavily towards the shore. We plainly saw that it had been buffeted by a storm, and was in danger of sinking. Her captain immediately order'd some of his men to go into the long-boat, whom he sent with a message to the governor, desiring their assistance. His vessel leak'd in every part, so that he was afraid he should not be able to reach the shore. All the vessels which lay in the harbour instantly made up to the ship in distress, in order to take in the crew and part of her lading. The vessel being thus lightned, arriv'd safe in the port: 'Twas a *Dutch* ship. However, as she was not yet in a condition to sail so far as *Holland*, especially as her cargo was worth fifty thousand pounds sterling, the captain, not willing to run any hazard, resolv'd to have another built at *St. Helena*. The island abounds with excellent wood for that purpose, and they found carpenters sufficient. We no sooner heard of his design, but I thank'd heaven for inspiring him with it; for nothing

* *Is a substance which burns or shines in the dark, without being lighted by any sensible fire.*

nothing could be more favourable to the success of ours. I resolved to propose to him the refitting of his vessel, and to offer to pay part of the expence. Though she was very crazy, I yet thought she might be made to serve well enough for our purpose, especially as we were not to take any lading on board. This I propos'd to my companions, who approv'd of the hint; upon which I soon made an agreement with the captain, who, at the governor's desire, came to very reasonable terms, when I immediately set the carpenters at work. They were almost as long a refitting her as the other carpenters were in building a new one.

And now we had a ship of our own, 'twould be impossible for me to describe the joy we felt when we put out to sea. This precious vessel was not only part of our possessions, but our dearest hopes were grounded on it. The governor gave us fifteen soldiers well arm'd, with eight mariners; when taking in a large quantity of provisions, we were persuaded, that in case the colony was not a visionary one, and our whole adventure an illusion of fancy, we should at least discover what we so eagerly sought after; but Providence has not yet permitted us to find it out. We have now rambl'd up and down the seas for near three months, and have gone a hundred times round the island of *St. Helena* at about five or six leagues distance, in search of the colony, but in vain. Heav'n! is it thou who blindest us, upon some account which to us is incomprehensible, or dost thou leave our wretched destiny in the hands of fortune, which torments us in this severe manner? we have now been tosd about these three months by some invidious power, which always removes us from the place we search after; to-day we are near *St. Helena*, to-morrow we are drove fifty leagues from it, as the winds, the waves, and fortune please to drive us. We were this night thrown into your course by a violent storm, and were for eight or nine hours in danger of sinking every moment: I nevertheless look'd upon this accident as the greatest blessing that heaven ever indulg'd me, since otherwise I had not met with a dear brother, and rescued him out of the hands of his enemies.

My brother plung'd me into fresh perplexity when he ended his relation; and his heart, now as much soften'd by my presence, as the remembrance of his misfortunes, eas'd its deep pangs by shedding a flood of tears, in which I sympathized with him. He afterwards told me, that his meeting with captain *Wills* had made him very uneasy. He first, says he, ask'd me whether I was returning for *England*: I answer'd him that I was, in case the winds and waves would give me leave; upon which, without asking any more questions, he desir'd me to take one of the Protector's Enemies which he had in his ship, on board mine; and he afterwards let me into some of the most material secrets you had entrusted him with. I was struck with horror when I consider'd his perfidy, but thought it would be proper to employ dissimulation, the better to carry on the design I had of succouring you. 'Twas this prompted me to use you with severity till he sail'd away: My heart bled when I thought of the terrors you were under; and tho' that treacherous wretch had given me but an imperfect account of your story, yet instinct, or something like it, told me that you were my brother. Alas! I perceive but too plainly that you are as unfortunate as myself; we both had the same father, and are punish'd for his crimes. But, says he, I have dwelt too long on this story, and I am impatient to carry you to *Gelin* and *Johnson*, who undoubtedly are surpriz'd at my staying so long with you. I must intreat you to love those dear, those faithful friends for my sake; you'll soon find that they deserve to be esteem'd for their own. And saying this he brought us together.

Had I myself told this story merely from the relation my brother made, it would not have been so long; but I am to inform the reader that it was drawn up by my brother at my request, in almost the very words in which it is now given.

BOOK IV.

TH^{O'} the continual presence of my afflictions suffer'd me to have but very little relish for joy; yet

the good fortune I had to meet again with so amiable a brother; his story, his endearing caresses, and the expectation of seeing *Gelin* and *Johnson*, whom I represented to myself under a most amiable image; suspended my anxiety for some moments. They came in; when desirous of shewing my brother that I already entertain'd the most favourable opinion of them; I ran to, and embraced them with such an air of kindness and candor, as very much astonish'd them. They gaz'd upon my brother *Bridge* in the utmost astonishment, when he cried with an air of tenderness, don't be surpriz'd; this prisoner is my brother. I have already acquainted him with our misfortunes, and he'll join with me in acknowledgments, for the great obligations by which you have bound me. I was obliged to acquaint them with my whole story, in as few words as possible; after which they embraced me in the most friendly manner. *Gelin* discover'd in his eyes and his gestures, all the sprightliness and vivacity, for which my brother told me he was distinguish'd; so that I should have discover'd who he was, had he not been pointed out to me. He was in an instant almost as familiar with me, as if I had been the only companion he had ever spent his life with. He had an easy behaviour, and a winning aspect. *Johnson* appear'd to be of a more timid and reserv'd character; he spoke little; but through this reservedness one might discover a judicious turn of mind, and the highest appearance of good nature. Tho', says I to my brother, you are unfortunate in love, you are very happy in friendship. Your affliction is great, and so is your consolation: but as for me my torments are extreme, and I cannot discover the least remedy, nor even the least prospect of their ever being soften'd.

He answer'd, that he was not yet sufficiently acquainted with my troubles, to propose an expedient which might remove them; but that in case I thought friendship could contribute to soften them, I should hereafter enjoy that consolation, no less than himself. His companions also said a thousand obliging things, and assured me that I might rely on their service and affection. I consider'd that they might be useful to me; but then the service I might expect from them was of such a nature as I could scarcely ask. In the first place I should have re-

quir'd them, (how rash soever this might be, considering the craziness of their vessel, and the inequality with regard to numbers) to have join'd with me, in attempting to rescue Mrs. *Lallin* out of the hands of that perfidious wretch *Wills*: The unhappy fate of that lady having affected me so strongly, that I would willingly have shed some blood, to restore her to her liberty. In case this favour was refused, which indeed I cou'd not reasonably press them to indulge me; I cou'd have wish'd they wou'd have carried me to *Jamaica*; in order that I might there make my complaints to the governor against *Wills*, and sue for justice at his hands. In fine, as this second expedient was also dangerous; since as *Wills* had been let into all my designs, he would infallibly have prejudiced the governor against me; I could have wish'd, at least, that they would convey me to *Martinico*, where I hoped to find the lord *Axminster*; and I flatter'd myself that they would assist that nobleman and myself; first in rescuing Mrs. *Lallin*, and afterwards in farthering the execution of the king's orders: These were the only services which could any way mitigate my anxiety.

But what likelihood was there that these would be indulged me; or that I could even so much as propose them? My brother and his friends were oppress'd with their own misfortunes, which they thought required as speedy a remedy as mine. They stood in as much need of assistance and consolation as myself; and they possibly might expect that favour from me, which I was going to sue for from them. However, I resolv'd to sound them soon and give them some little idea of what I desir'd; though it were only to take from them all hopes, of my ever being prevail'd upon to accompany them for any considerable time. I acquainted them with the reasons why I left *France*; how I was prompted, both from love and honour, to follow the lord *Axminster*; the obligations I had to Mrs. *Lallin*, which were so great, that they claim'd immediate succour from me; and lastly, the fixed resolution I had taken to sail for the *West-Indies* the very first opportunity. 'Tis, says I, a most melancholy circumstance, that the inexpressible satisfaction I taste in seeing you, should be torn from me, almost as soon as I

am blest with it; but I must yield to the most binding, the most sacred of all engagements. Compare my miserable state with yours. You pant to see your wives on whose love you may depend; are under no apprehensions upon their account; and are afflicted only for their absence: so that nothing is wanting to complete your happiness, but a propitious gale of wind, which may waft you to their island. You say that 'twill be very easy for you, either to carry them off in the night, or to force them away in open day, there are no obstacles to fill you with dread; the only circumstance necessary for you, is a little patience; since you will, at last, certainly discover what you are seeking after. Thrice happy lovers! Of what then can you accuse either love or fortune? I only have reason to complain. I seek my dear wife, alas! I call her by a tender name, which does not yet belong to her. Were I but certain that she would one day be mine! I seek after her, and yet am certain that she'll be enrag'd in case I ever happen to meet with her; and know not whether my just reasons will have the power to soften her resentments. Her father abhors and despises me; death would be less insupportable, than his aversion and contempt. How shall I do to get to the place where he is, and recover his esteem? Heaven had favour'd me with an expedient, in the person of that generous lady who accompanied me in the voyage; but I lost the assistance she afforded me, by an unparallell'd act of treachery: I perhaps may justly reproach my self with the sad fate to which she was expos'd, partly out of tenderness and affection for me. I am an ingrate, a worthless wretch, if I let slip one moment which may be indulg'd me to favour her; and prefer any thing in life to so just a debt—Consider, therefore, how great must be my anguish, and the tumults which must rage in my bosom! On one side, I am doubly call'd upon by love, honour and gratitude; and on the other, by a fraternal tenderness; for oh! I can never leave you but with the utmost regret.

My brother answer'd, that he was perswaded I was no less tortur'd than himself, and therefore was very sorry it was not in his power to administer some consolation. I was sorry he did not better understand the drift of my discourse. Possibly I should never have been able to ex-

prels my self more clearly, had not *Gelin* given me an opportunity of doing it, by proposing to me to accompany them in the search after their island. I can't think, says he, that our endeavours will always be vain; and I look upon our meeting you as a happy omen. Possibly the instant is at hand, when we shall find what we are in search of: Now if we should enjoy that happiness so soon as I hope we shall, I then will freely consent to put out to sea with you, and assist you in all your undertakings. My brother and *Johnson* assured me they would be ready to join with him; and added moreover that their wives should go along with them; after which we might either settle together in some of our colonies, or all return back to *Europe*.

I cast my eyes downwards in silence, and was revolving this proposal in my mind, when my brother perceiv'd that I did not approve of it, and ask'd me the reason of it. I told him very naturally, that it was impossible for me to acquiesce with it. But, answer'd he, interrupting me; where do you flatter yourself with the hopes of being able to find out a vessel to convey you to the *West-Indies*? I answer'd, dear brother, I won't conceal my hopes from you, they are grounded on your generous friendship, and that of your companions. Tho' you were to suspend the going in search after your wives for some months, it cannot be of the least prejudice to either of you. They love you; love will keep them dutiful; and they'll for ever continue inviolably yours. I conjure you to set aside your search for some days, and first carry me to *Martinico*. Hold! says I, raising my voice, purposely to check the first emotions, which might have prompted them to refuse my request; hold, my dear friends, and don't refuse attending to my reasons. Dear brother, and Mr. *Johnson*; you both are natives of *England*, and are hearty well-wishers to king *Charles* our lawful sovereign; consider only the honour you may acquire, and the recompence you may justly expect, in case you assist the lord *Axminster* in promoting his majesty's interest. That nobleman wants the assistance of persons of your resolution; courage will avail more than numbers; in the *West-Indies*, twenty brave men are alone an army. Thus may you do our king and country the utmost service,
without

without exposing your selves to any great danger; for the abovemention'd nobleman is beloved in our colonies; he need but appear, and he will immediately be obey'd, and all you have to do, will be only to accompany him. The moment he is acknowledged in the character with which he is invested, leave will be allow'd you to return to your enterprize, with such succour as may secure success; and then I my self promise to accompany you in it. Consider, that what I now offer, is equally advantageous and easy. *Gelin* indeed is not an *Englishman*, but then he boasts a generous mind; and at the same time that he engages in so glorious an attempt, he will likewise raise his fortune, in which his spouse must consequently be a sharer. In case, says I addressing my self to my brother, Mrs. *Riding's* memory can any ways enforce these strong inducements, I could assure you that she has a passionate esteem for you; and observe farther, that you owe numberless obligations to her. How would she be delighted with your presence! and what more favourable opportunity can you ever meet with, to discharge part of the great debt you owe her, for the care she so generously extended to your infant years?

I know not whether it were the strength of my arguments, or the tone of voice in which I spake, that made an impression on my brother, but I observ'd that he reflected deeply on what he had heard. *Gelin* spoke first, and said, that he thought my proposal was far from chimerical; and that, besides the honour it would be to serve his majesty of *Great-Britain* on so important an occasion, and the satisfaction they should have of obliging me, he was of opinion, as I had observed, that it also open'd them a way to make their fortune, and settle themselves in the world. They at last were unanimous in this opinion; and now the only objection they appeared to make, was, the long time such an enterprize wou'd in all probability take up. Upon this they again were urgent with me to go back with them in search of their island; and nam'd a certain number of days which would be employ'd therein; at the end whereof they promis'd, in case heaven were not more propitious than it had been hitherto, to carry me to *Martinico*, and assist the lord *Axminster* in all his enterprizes. However, I was not to

be wrought upon by this specious promise, and thereupon again begg'd them to concur with me instantly: And I set the difference of our conditions in such a strong light, *viz.* the little danger they would run in delaying their search, and the great necessity there was of immediately succouring the viscount, that they at last acquiesced with my entreaties. Overjoy'd at the conquest, I added other motives to inflame them still more; and in order that their resolution might not have time to cool, I engag'd them to sail forthwith for *America*. Their soldiers and sailors seemed at first unwilling to go; however, we soon engag'd them in our interest, by assuring them they should be rewarded suitably to their merit.

My brother and his companions expatiated in the strongest terms on the sacrifice they had now made for my sake. I confess'd ingenuously, that it exceeded all the returns, which either the lord *Axminster*, or my self, cou'd ever make to them for it. However, it was certain, they cou'd not have engaged in any attempt more advantageous, had they only consulted their own interest. This they had occasion to be more sensible of some time after, and to reproach themselves for their fickleness in changing their resolution. We sail'd with so favourable a wind, that in less than a month we reach'd *Martinico*. Unhappily our pilot was not perfectly acquainted with these seas, and the many islands in it. He knew the situation of *Martinico*; but as he had never been in those parts, he was not acquainted either with its coasts or harbours; so that instead of sailing for the western part of that island which was the only one inhabited by the *French* at that time, he made directly east, which was a desert coast, or inhabited only by savages, commonly called *Caribees*. After having gone round the coast five or six hours, we came to the mouth of a fine river, on both sides of which one could see a great way up the country. We immediately went on shore, and the prospect being very beautiful on all sides, we did not doubt but that part of the island into which we were got was very well peopled; it was so, indeed; but by the *Caribees*, who are very cruel savages; and 'twas a great happiness for us, that we did not fall into their hands. As we found the river grow narrower the farther we went up it, the pilot was afraid

fraild we should not have depth of water enough; and therefore advised us to go ashore on both sides of it, and walk till such time as we could meet with some footsteps of human creatures, or signs of their habitations. We follow'd his advice, leaving *Johnson* with the sailors and six soldiers on board the vessel, and set out, being twelve in number, all well arm'd. We follow'd the bank of the river for about a league, being still persuaded, that so delightful a spot must necessarily be peopled by some *European* colony; and were agreeably confirm'd in our idea, when we discover'd a multitude of huts in a valley. We were now still more desirous of advancing forward, and made such haste, that we were able to see distinctly, what we till then had perceiv'd but imperfectly, because of the distance. I am very much mistaken, says one of our soldiers, if those huts are not inhabited by savages. He assur'd us, that he knew exactly the form in which they were built, having been several times in the *West-Indies*. This hint made us to stand upon our guard. However we still advanced forward, 'till we spy'd several naked men, whom we then saw plainly were the natives of the island.

The instant they saw us, they took to their heels. Being so well arm'd, we were not at all afraid of a people who appeared unable to make the least defence; whereupon we resolv'd to go among their huts, and enquire by signs, in case we could not be understood otherwise, the way to the *French* settlement. About fifty steps from the first huts, we pass'd by a hedge which enclosed a large field, in the middle of which was the settlement of the savages. We had not the least mistrust, when looking along the hedge, we discover'd in the inside of it, upwards of two hundred savages sitting together on the ground in a very peaceable manner; but the moment they perceiv'd us, they all rose up, and made a great shout. Notwithstanding our resolution, we were nevertheless frighted. Most of those savages, although naked, were arm'd with bows and long sharp-pointed sticks, not far unlike our pikes. They view'd us for some time, without once stirring; and perhaps they might be as much confounded as ourselves, we being equally motionless. Nevertheless, as it was fit we should
come

come to some resolution, and that this seem'd properly my office, since I was the only cause of their being expos'd to this danger; I therefore spoke to my companions as follows. I am of opinion, that a medium may now be observ'd between fear and rashness. Let us try whether these savages may not have some sparks of humanity. I'll undertake to go up to them. As for you, stand to your arms, and do not stir from the place where you are. They undoubtedly won't be under any apprehensions, when they shall see me advancing forward alone, and in a friendly manner. I did not wait for an answer, being afraid every moment of the savages pouring in upon us. We were not above twenty steps from them, when I advanc'd forward. Possibly I should not have been so bold, had I been more sensible of the danger to which I exposed myself. However, I still had so much presence of mind left, as to observe their aspect as I walk'd up towards them, and did not find that they put on a threatening air. I discovered a person among them, cover'd with a long black gown, whom I took for an *European*. Being got up to them, I made a very low bow, when they immediately crouded round me; felt my hands, and about my cloaths, in order to find whether I had any arms about me. I made several signs to make myself, if possible, understood; they answer'd me, as I suppos'd, in their own language; but I could not make any thing of it; the sounds, to my ear, seeming altogether inarticulate. The man dress'd in black, after having gaz'd for some time upon me, advanc'd forward; and to my great surprize, ask'd me in *French* what countryman I was, and whether I cou'd speak his language? Yes, says I, I can; and think myself vastly happy in meeting with you: Inform me what we are to hope or fear from these savages. He answer'd, these are of so fierce and capricious a nature, that they are not much to be depended upon; and I am very much surpriz'd, says he, how you could have the courage (since you are so few in number) to venture among them. You must have much more, says I to him, as you are alone, and seem to live among them without the least fear. He then told me that he was a *French* missionary; and that the desire he had to instruct those

those savages in the first principles of christianity, made him wholly disregard the dangers to which he was every instant expos'd. I admire, says I, your zeal, in case you are prompted by no other motive than that of religion. But then let your love and charity extend to us, and endeavour to make the savages favourable to us. Tell them that we don't come to take any thing from them; and that we only desire them to inform us, where the *French* settlements lie.

Accordingly he talk'd to them a few moments, and returning back, told me he had succeeded to my wishes. They gave me leave to walk back to my companions; and permitted him to go along with me, and inform them of what they wanted to know; and added, that they would give us leave to return on board our ship, and not hurt a hair of our heads. I left the savages, but the missionary would go along with me. *Gelin* overjoy'd to meet with one of his countrymen, was for asking him a thousand questions, which consequently would have taken up some time; but our honest ecclesiastic, being thoroughly acquainted with the nature and inclinations of those savages, did not think us yet quite out of danger; and therefore advis'd us to take advantage, immediately, of the happy disposition to which he had brought them; by observing that it might very possibly change. We then contented ourselves with asking him a few questions, with regard to the situation of the *French* colony; when by an unexpected happiness, his answers inform'd us of the very circumstance, which was the chief occasion of our voyage. After having told us, that it would be impossible for us to miss *Fort-Royal*, which at that time was the most considerable settlement of the *French*, in case we continued to coast the island; he acquainted us, that he was come from thence but a fortnight before, and had seen a *French* vessel come into the harbour, having an *English* nobleman and his family on board. 'Twas plain this could be no other than the lord *Axminster*, which fill'd me with the highest transports of joy. Immediately I ask'd the missionary a great many questions; who, tho' he were not inform'd of the viscount's designs, nor of the success of his voyage; he nevertheless did us the utmost service, by informing us that the nobleman in question, a few days after

ter his arrival at *Fort-Royal*, met with a *Spanish* vessel, on which he had set sail for the island of *Cuba*. Nothing remain'd now which cou'd induce us to continue in *Martinico*; upon which, after returning the missionary a thousand thanks, I was urgent with my companions to return to our ship, which we easily found. *Gelin* desir'd his countryman to accompany us to the river; however he refus'd to do it; but 'twas with the design of doing us a greater piece of service. As he was thoroughly acquainted with the genius and character of the savages, he was afraid they would not suffer us to return aboard, in so peaceable a manner as they had promis'd; and therefore thought it would be best to return back, in order to prevent them from changing their resolution.

We then put out to sea again, firmly persuaded that we should meet with the lord *Axminster* at the *Havana*, the capital of the island of *Cuba*. We were not at a vast distance from it; and by what the missionary told us, his lordship could not have been there above a fortnight. I then recollected the motive which had prompted him to sail for the *Havana*; viz. the hopes that the old governor, father to his deceas'd lady, would be still there; in which case he flatter'd himself, he would certainly assist the enterprize he was going upon. Heaven was pleas'd to hear my prayers, by indulging us favourable weather, so that we reach'd the *Havana*, and were admitted into the harbour without any difficulty. This, however, was the least of my wishes; and the success of it was altogether indifferent to me, when I found that I was disappointed in what I so earnestly long'd after. My lord had been on the island, but was already gone from it. We were told this unhappy news upon our going ashore. Immediately my blood was chill'd, and I look'd upon this disappointment as an unlucky omen.

However, we went into the town, where *Don Pedro* was still governor. We begg'd to be admitted to him, which was granted; and he receiv'd us with the greatest civility. I told his excellency, that I was seeking his son-in-law. He said he was as sorry that he had left the island; as I could be not to find him upon it. I did all that lay in my power, says he, to detain him, but to no purpose. *Don Pedro* deliver'd himself at first in a vague and indeterminate manner; but having afterwards re-
veal'd

veal'd myself to him without the least reserve, when I found that he was inclin'd to succour his lordship, he then made no scruple to acquaint me with every thing that had pass'd between the viscount and himself, during his short stay in the *Havana*. I was overjoy'd, says he, at his arrival; and tho' I might, perhaps, have justly harbour'd some resentment, for his having carried off my daughter; yet, his presence, and the caresses of my granddaughter *Fanny*, obliterated every thing of that nature. His lordship acquainted me with his misfortunes, and the low ebb to which he was reduc'd; upon which, I offer'd him an asylum here, and half my possessions; but neither my prayers or advantageous offers could prevail upon him to stay. He mention'd a commission which the king of *Great Britain* had given him, and desir'd me to assist him with a few soldiers and arms. But besides, that there was not then a single ship of war in the harbour at my disposal; I did not think it proper to attempt any thing to the prejudice of the common-wealth of *England*, which is now in alliance with *Spain*, without an express order from his catholick majesty for that purpose. The lord *Axminster* was so vex'd at my refusal, that he embark'd on board a *French* vessel which was going to sail northward; the captain promising to put into some of the *English* colonies, of which his father had been formerly governor. I was not able, continued *Don Pedro*, to divert him from this resolution, tho' I set the danger of it in the strongest light; nor could I prevail with him to leave, at least, his daughter with me; tho' I represented to him how unfit she was to accompany him in so dangerous an enterprize.

How! says I, does not your excellency know what harbour they design'd to touch at, nor what course they steer'd? He assur'd me that he was wholly in the dark as to that particular, but that he fancied they would put into some part of *Florida*, which belong'd to the *English*, and possibly into *Carolina* or *Virginia*; unless he might rather chuse to sail directly for *New-England*, without putting in any where. These doubtful hints only increas'd our perplexity and confusion; however, this was all the information we could get in the island of *Cuba*. This news, tho' it heightned my uneasiness, it yet enflam'd my ardour the more; so that resolv'ing to leave
the

the *Havana* immediately, I prest my companions to set sail forthwith. We'll go for the continent, says I, and put into every port, till we get some intelligence. They did not seem averse to this proposal, when first I mention'd it; and accordingly we return'd on board that evening, intending to sail the next day. I was very uneasy all night long, but that did not arise from any suspicion I entertain'd of their infidelity; so far from it that I did not once suspect it; their friendship was my only consolation; and I did not think I was yet hated by heaven, since it still indulg'd me three such faithful, such generous friends. Nevertheless, whether it were that they repented they had ever undertaken the voyage, or were terrified at the apprehensions of the length and uncertainty of the course which I now propos'd to them; they that night form'd such a resolution, as I thought would have turn'd my brain when I first heard it, and sent *Gelin* to inform me of it in the morning.

He came alone into my cabin. After having made his compliments in the *French* manner, he said his companions had desir'd him to inform me, that it was with the utmost reluctance they found themselves oblig'd to discontinue their intended voyage. This, says he, was so dreadful an uneasiness to them, that they spent the whole night in considering in what manner they should acquaint you with their resolution; and every one of them was resolv'd not to be the messenger of such ill news. He continued to say, that the situation of their affairs, and the extreme necessity they were under of going immediately in search of their wives, would not permit them to engage any longer in so hazardous an enterprize, (not to mention the time which might, perhaps, be spent in it) as that I was going upon. That they offer'd me what money they had, and whatever assistance they could possibly afford me, in their present circumstances. That in case heaven should be so good, as to indulge their desires; they promis'd to sail for the *West-Indies* with their wives; and meet me at any place I should appoint; when they would serve me to the utmost with their lives and fortunes. Lastly, that as they were resolv'd to leave me, they hop'd I would be so just, as to be persuaded, that nothing but reason and honour could have prevail'd with them to do it. That my harbouring any suspicious thoughts

thoughts on this occasion, would fill them with the highest uneasiness; and in case I did not preserve as much love and esteem for them, as they promis'd to entertain for me as long as they liv'd.

I listen'd to the smooth tongu'd *Gelin*, in the highest distraction of mind, tho' I did my utmost to conceal it, from him. I ask'd him whether he was fix'd in that resolution, and his companions likewise. This, answer'd he suddenly, is fix'd as fate, and we are unanimous. The tone of voice in which he utter'd these words, persuaded me that he himself had first suggested that fatal resolution; and I confess that from this instant, I conceiv'd an insuperable aversion to him. The reader will find in the sequel, several other circumstances which aggravated it; and the fatal accidents it occasion'd. I now neither complain'd against him, nor entreated him to indulge my fond request; but believing I should win my brother over, whose temper bore a much greater similitude to mine, I went instantly to his cabin, and found him in it with *Johnson*. He advanc'd forward towards me with a mournful and melting air, when embracing me, he cry'd; accuse our stars for shedding such baleful influence; and be persuaded, that next to my dear wife, I love you more than any thing breathing. I'll die for her, in case it be necessary; but depend upon't that in case I rescue her, I'll devote the remaining part of my life to your service, and shed the last drop of my blood in it. What's that you say? says I, interrupting him; alas! I don't require so much at your hands. My wants are not of such a nature, as to require that your blood should be spilt. All I desire is, that you'd only convey me to some place, whence I may have some hopes of going to visit count *Axminster*. I should not have propos'd so dangerous an enterprize to you, had it not been wholly for our sovereign's sake, and your own reputation and advantage. In case you are afraid of engaging in this glorious attempt, abandon it at once. But why should you refuse to complete, what you began purely out of affection for me? You have very little to do more — at least enable me to reach the continent. Set me ashore in that part of *Carolina* which lies nearest to us; this is all I require of you, and then you may leave me without being
guilty

guilty of infidelity. But can honour or friendship permit you to abandon me in this island? Dear brother, says I, embracing him; may I still call you by that tender name? Cou'd I have thought your affection and generosity would have ended in this manner?

Gelin, who perhaps was piqu'd that I had left him so abruptly in my cabin, spoke with great warmth, and did not give my brother time to make a reply. He ask'd me what reason I had to complain; and whether I ought not to be satisfy'd, with what they had hitherto done for me? Have not we, says he, oppos'd our softest inclinations, by suspending, in the manner we have done, the search after our wives? Have not we neglected our dearest interests, purely for the sake of yours, which are neither more urgent, or different from ours? We expected to meet with the lord *Axminster* in *Martinico*; and since, tho' you had not propos'd us to go farther, we yet have had the good nature to advance to the *Havana*, what cou'd you justly lay to our charge? Had we promis'd to put into all the ports in the *West-Indies*, or to accompany you to the remotest parts of *New-England*, whither you may, possibly, insist upon, our carrying you, in case we don't meet with the lord *Axminster* in our course? And tho' we could neglect our dear wives so far as this, yet as our ship is in so bad a condition, could you in reason expect us to undertake a voyage of six or seven hundred leagues; especially towards the north seas, which are so dangerous? No, no dear Mr. *Cleveland*, says the silver-tongu'd *Gelin*, shaking his head at the same time; you have no reason to reproach us, and perhaps ought to give us some thanks. Consider that we are lovers as well as yourself; and are inform'd with the same tender wishes. Our engagements are, in some manner, more indispensable than yours: We are in search of our wives, whereas your pain is only for a mistress. With regard to his *Britannick* Majesty, we could have wish'd it had been in our power to undertake any thing for his service; but we are less able to serve you, than your sovereign. King *Charles* will accept of the will for the deed, in case he should one day hear how desirous we were of exerting ourselves in his service.

After

After this clear and positive declaration, I found I had now but little hopes left. However, my brother endeavour'd to soften all such expressions in *Gelin's* answer, as seem'd a little harsh. Accordingly he made a great many apologies; embraced me several times; shed tears and concluded with offering to go with me as far as the peninsula of *Tequesta*, whence I might advance as far as I pleas'd into the continent. My grief was so great, and my resentment so strong, that I refus'd the offer; particularly since as this peninsula was inhabited by the *Spaniards*, and not above thirty leagues from *Cuba*, I was persuaded I might easily meet with a vessel at the *Havana* to carry me over. Leave me, leave me, says I——I cannot detain you against your wills; but if I can form a judgment of your present circumstances, and what may be for your real advantage; the resolution you have now taken will not one day be thought a good one; and you will perhaps wish you had not broke your promise with me. They were again going to justify themselves, and prove that they had fulfill'd their engagements, but I withdrew instantly, and would not hear them. They suffer'd me to continue alone for some moments in my cabin, I being determin'd to let them go, and not speak to them more. However, my brother came a little after to my door, when he repeated, with an air of the deepest melancholy, the prodigious regret he had to leave me; and at the same desir'd I wou'd indulge him two things, which, if I refus'd, he said he should consider me as the most savage creature living. The one was, that I would accept of an hundred pistoles, in order to enable me to pursue my voyage; and the other, that I would point out to him exactly, the place where he might have the hopes of meeting me again, when their search after their wives should be ended. After a numberless multitude of intreaties, I at last accepted of the money; but with regard to the second article I told him it would be impossible for me to give him any satisfaction on that head. Heaven only knows, says I, what will become of me. I am to steer my course only as chance shall direct, and can expect nothing but new scenes of inquietude and sorrow. Farewel then, says he, with a most melting air; to leave you, gives me a mortal uneasiness; but alas! my heart is bound to love by indissoluble ties.

If

If heaven has any blessing in reserve for me, all I ask, is that I may have the happiness of seeing you again, after I have found my wife. Upon this they set sail. To say the truth, I believe they were very sorry to leave me; but they were bound by stricter engagements, than all the promises they had made me. I judg'd of them by myself; — for could any consideration in the world have prevail'd with me to lose sight, as it were, for a single moment, of viscount *Axminster* and his daughter?

They had now left me at the *Havana*, with this comfort however, that I was at liberty, and could take such measures as I should think most conducive to the furthering of my designs. I depended very much upon the governor's kindness, and accordingly waited on him, to enquire when I might depend upon an opportunity of leaving the island; to ask his advice with regard to the course I should steer, and to beg his assistance. I cou'd not expect that he would indulge me a favour which he had refus'd lord *Axminster* and his daughter; but I was far from requesting such a boon; and indeed he immediately acquiesc'd with my desires. He presented me with a negro, who had been many years his slave, a fellow of experienc'd fidelity. His view in giving me this slave, was not so much that he might serve me by way of servant, as a guide and an interpreter; this slave having gone over a great part of the *American* continent, and could speak the principal tongues us'd in the several countries of it. The governor likewise gave me a considerable sum of money, and a passport in which he recommended me to the favour of such *Spaniards* as I should meet with. As for my course, and the time of my leaving the island, he said there was no possibility of telling me any thing certain on that head. I was therefore oblig'd to stay in the *Havana*, in expectation of meeting with some vessel which might convey me to the *English* colonies; and afterwards leave the success of my voyage to chance. I waited two months, but spent them in the study of wisdom, as the only thing which could soften the uneasiness with which this delay fill'd me; and moderate the impatient desire I had, to find all I held dear. At length heaven was so gracious, as to indulge part of my desires. A vessel arriv'd, belonging to the island of *St. Domingo*,

and

and laden with goods, which were to be dispos'd of in those parts whither I wanted to be convey'd. The only favour I had to desire of the captain, was, to take me on board, which he accordingly did, and my flavel likewise; after I had taken leave of the governor, who made me promise to use all my credit with the lord *Axminster*, in order to engage his return to *Cuba*.

We got very safe through the streights of *Bahama*, and after having past the point or peninsula of *Tegesta*, we only coasted along the shore, landing in all places, where the captain thought he could dispose of his goods. We first cast anchor in some little *Spanish* ports which lay in our way; when I enquir'd after the lord *Axminster*, but to no purpose. I had little better success in a settlement of *French* calvinists, whom we met with farther up, for these did not so much as know his lordship's name. However, they inform'd me, that a few months before, a *French* vessel which came from *Cuba*, had cast anchor for some days in their road; and that they had taken notice of a few *Englishmen* aboard her, who appear'd to be persons of some distinction.

Flatter'd by the hopes which is natural to the unfortunate, I immediately fancied those could be no other than my lord and his attendants. These ideas, how airy soever they might be, sooth'd me vastly. From hence we put into some small ports in *Carolina*; but although we there found *Englishmen*, from whom I might more naturally expect some informations; I yet could not meet with any, nor hear the least news, after we had coasted for above an hundred leagues. But now I began to be more uneasy; for I cou'd scarce think that my lord, who fully intended to go ashore in some of the *English* ports, had pass'd by so many, and not once put into any of them. A circumstance which increas'd my fears, was, the *Spanish* captain's resolution; who told me several times, that he absolutely intended not to go farther than the bay of *Chesapeake*. As the lord *Axminster* had not touch'd at *Carolina*, 'twas probable to believe he had sail'd for *Virginia*, or perhaps *New-England*: And what hopes could I entertain of meeting with him, in case I should be obliged to return back with the *Spanish* crew, or wait in some barren or obscure port, in expectation
of

of another vessel; which possibly I might not meet with at last; Whilst I was tortured with these inquietudes, the vessels sail'd on. We were already got off the coast of *Virginia*, and were making for *Chesapeake Bay*, when at the entrance of it, in the little harbour call'd *Riswey*, which our captain propos'd as the end of his course; I at last heard what I long'd so much to know, viz. that viscount *Axminster*, son to the former governor of those countries, had landed there a few months ago; that the ship, which had brought him having continu'd its course northwards, my lord had gone on board a little vessel which had carried him up the bay, whence he went to *Jamestown*, one of the principal of all *Virginia*; that his lordship and his retinue arriv'd safe there; and that I might depend upon the truth of what I then heard, they themselves having mann'd the vessel above-mention'd, and were return'd to *Riswey* a few days after they had done his lordship this little piece of service.

They had no sooner done speaking, but I return'd thanks to heaven; and so great were my transports, that all the standers-by seem'd surpriz'd at me. I observ'd that some of the chief inhabitants of the town seem'd now to gaze upon me in a more affectionate manner; and looking upon me, discours'd together, as though they wish'd me well. I suppos'd they were guessing as well as they could, what motives brought me among them, and what it was that fill'd me with such sudden joy; I even imagin'd, that the part they seem'd to bear in it, was owing to some secret cause, which I explain'd to lord *Axminster*'s advantage, and indeed was not mistaken. This nobleman, finding that the *English* there retain'd a grateful remembrance of his father and himself, did not scruple to reveal his name and acquaint them with his commission. They had, till then, submitted to the new government of *England*; but less from choice and inclination, than a blind impulse, which generally hurries on the common people in a thoughtless manner: So, that having no particular engagements which should attach them to the protector's person, they recogniz'd the king's authority without the least difficulty, and return'd to their allegiance; especially as they were prompted to this by the son of their former governor, whose commands they had once obey'd with

the utmost cheartulness. This little settlement was therefore the first conquest which the lord *Axminster* made for his sovereign; and he obtain'd it upon the easy terms of discovering himself, and declaring his intentions. He was afterwards put in a condition to take *Jamestown*; the inhabitants would not even have refus'd to follow him in a body, but would have form'd themselves into a company for his defence, had his lordship thought this necessary. I was told all these particulars by some of the townsmen, with whom I had occasion to discourse; and I did not find but they were unanimous in their resolutions to stand by my lord, and do me all the service that lay in their power.

They offer'd to get me conducted to *Jamestown*. I accepted of their kindness, and leaving the *Spanish* captain who return'd for *St. Domingo*, I put myself into the hands of my countrymen. They gave me a small vessel and four sailors, when we enter'd the bay; but the wind was contrary for some time. However, as this was the only obstacle I had to fear, I look'd upon so short a delay as nothing; when being at the mouth of the river *Pawhatan*, which empties itself in the bay, and which we were to go up, *Jamestown* being situated on the banks of it; I spy'd a man of war just coming out of that river, and seemingly shaping her course towards the main ocean. I did not doubt but this was an *English* ship; however the joy which this might otherwise have fill'd me with, was chang'd into a deadly fear, when I believ'd it was the very ship which captain *Wills* commanded.

This was but too true, it being really that perfidious villain's ship. Alas! he himself was on board of her: and the horror with which I was suddenly seiz'd, gave me at once but too strong an idea of the danger I was in. But why should I say the danger I was in? How inevitable soever my destruction might appear, Heaven is my witness, that the first pangs I felt were not upon my own account. I trembled for something that was more precious to me than either my own life or liberty. Captain *Wills*, says I, is just come from *Jamestown*; he undoubtedly found viscount *Axminster* there; a villain is always completely such: I imagin'd there was no room to doubt but that he had fill'd up the measure of his iniquity, in

ex-

exercising his barbarity over his lordship. I cou'd not see any likelihood of his being prevented to do this; for his ship was so well arm'd, that it was not probable *Jamestown* could have made any resistance; so that supposing his lordship had been receiv'd as favourably in that town, as he had been in *Riswey*; 'twas not probable he could have put himself into a posture of defence soon enough, to repulse the army by force. I therefore concluded that he had been obliged to submit, and perhaps was seiz'd by the traytor; who, I suppos'd, had put him on board his ship, in order to carry him in triumph to *England*, and deliver him up to the protector.

The ship was at such a distance from us, that I had time sufficient for making these reflections, which filled me with inexpressible anguish. However, it did not deprive me of the strength and liberty of mind, which I wanted so much at that juncture. In this, I may affirm, I always differ'd from the rest of mankind, and 'tis what form'd the very essence of my character. I know not whether my publishing this circumstance will be look'd upon as ostentation; but tho' I might expect that such a confession as this would be glorious to me, it yet has cost me too many pangs, to make me susceptible of so trifling a sensation as that we call vanity. 'Tis therefore certain, that grief never had so absolute an ascendant over me, but reason was still predominant: but then 'tis no less sure, that tho' this resolution, which possibly made my conduct more agreeable to the dictates of wisdom, it never contributed in the least to the tranquillity of my mind. The unhappy may generally be divided into two classes. The first are those who sink, in some measure, under the weight of their misfortunes, and who sometimes become less sensible to them, merely because they yield to their attacks; like as a tree, which the more it gives way to the wind, the less it is hurt by its blasts. The second class are those who repel ill fortune, and by that means also are less affected by it, which may partly be owing to this cause; that as their struggles take up part of their attention, and the collected strength of their minds, they consequently have less time to reflect on the evils they suffer. With regard to myself, I may be placed in a third class; and perhaps am the only individual in it.

I have

I have struggled all my life against sorrow, but was never able to sooth it; my mind having ever been capacious enough, both to repel ill fortune, and attend to the circumstance which occasions it. The various thoughts which here crowded my brain, put me to inexpressible torture; but then this did not make me so far despond, but I was still able to form a resolution. The first which I made at once, was, to surrender myself voluntarily to captain *Wills*, in case I knew that the lord *Axminster* and his daughter were on board his ship; for I could with pleasure almost have devoted myself to imprisonment, or the most cruel death, were I but to share it with them. But as I was not yet directly certain, how providence intended to dispose of them; I thought it would be proper to employ artifice upon this occasion, in order to inform myself of what I was so desirous of knowing. I had by good luck chang'd my dress in *Cuba*, and therefore thought if I disguis'd my face, it would be impossible for any one to know me. Accordingly I acquainted the sailors with my design, who immediately consented to do me all the service that lay in their power. Upon this I borrow'd a pitiful perriwig, which I clapp'd on my head; and having daub'd my face and hands with some dirt and slime which I scrap'd from the bottom of the vessel; I was so completely disguis'd, that it would have been impossible for my most intimate acquaintance to know me. And now being no longer afraid of appearing before captain *Wills*, I desired the sailors to make directly for the ship. We got near enough to speak with her, when I perceived the captain upon deck. He made a signal with his hand for us to come nearer; and it being almost a stark calm, we soon came up with her. My design was to go on board his ship; but I consider'd, that in case the viscount should not happen to be in her, this would be a very imprudent action; and therefore chose rather to let one of the sailors first make an enquiry; in which case, if the viscount should unhappily be aboard, I was at liberty to act as I pleas'd. Accordingly I taught the sailor, whom I thought to have most sense, his lesson in a few words; and sending him on board the captain, I waited in the vessel till he returned, which he did in less than four minutes. Be easy, says the sailor, my lord is certainly safe,

VOL. I. O for

for the captain does not know where he is; and I am mistaken if he is not now in quest of him. He ask'd me, with an angry air, whether I had heard no news of him. He then enquir'd whither we were bound, and whence we came; and having satisfy'd him in these particulars, he order'd me to go away.

These words reviv'd me, upon which we immediately made off as fast as possible. The only uneasiness I felt in our way to *Jamestown*, was that I consider'd poor Mrs. *Lallin* was in the hands of that barbarous wretch *Wills*. I again recommended her to the protection of heaven; and tho' I devoted my life to the service of the viscount and his daughter; I yet found that gratitude would have prompted me to hazard it with pleasure, to rescue her from the villain who detain'd her. At last we arriv'd at *Jamestown*. There seem'd to have been some disturbance in the harbour; and the inhabitants look'd as tho' they were in expectation of some extraordinary event. A great many of them ran to the shore and crouded about our vessel; and I observ'd that they discover'd some surprize, to see only an unknown person, a negro, and four sailors belonging to *Reswey* on board of her. They ask'd whether we had not met captain *Wills*, but that was all. I went into the town, not knowing certainly whether they were friends or enemies; and therefore did not dare to enquire of them, what I so eagerly desir'd to know. Being afraid lest some indiscretion on my side, might prejudice my lord's affairs, I therefore assum'd a false name. I pretended that I came to *Jamestown* in order to trade, I accordingly took up my residence in a very mean house; and carried my four sailors along with me, being unwilling to part with them, till such time as I might see clearer into matters.

The *Englishman* at whose house I chanc'd to lodge, was happily a zealous royalist, who was greatly afflicted at what had just before happen'd in *Jamestown*. I was scarce come into the house, but he prevented my enquiries by asking me whether I had heard of the alarm, and what I thought of the change of government in *England*. The air with which he ask'd me this question, plainly show'd how he stood affected. The answer I made, pleas'd him highly; so that observing no manner of reserve during the

rest of our conversation, he exclaim'd against the protector, and parliament, and especially against *Wills*. His invectives against the latter, gave me an opportunity of enquiring in what manner he had signaliz'd himself in *Jamestown*, upon which he gave me the following account.

Viscount *Axminster*, says he, arriv'd safely there two months before; and found the inhabitants of it as zealous for his majesty's interest, as those of *Riswey*. The governor and the greatest part of the townsmen, had received him in as dutiful a manner as if he had been the king himself. His lordship had spent a fortnight there, wholly employ'd in contriving methods to reduce the rest of the country to their allegiance; and imagining he was particularly secure of the fidelity of the inhabitants of the place above-mention'd; he left it, and went *Powhatan*, a considerable town, which, as well as *Jamestown*, is situated on the river that bears its name, but is much higher up in the country. Here he found it a very difficult matter to get himself recogniz'd as governor in the king's name; so that he would have succeeded very easily in his enterprize, had not the inhabitants of that place oppos'd him. Things were in this state, when captain *Wills*'s ship arriv'd unexpectedly in the harbour of *Jamestown*. I before observ'd that he had so strong a force, that it was impossible for this town to resist him, tho' indeed it is one of the strongest in that country, but then it was not prepar'd against an attack. The governor had been forc'd to open his gates to the captain, which he did the more willingly, because as he imagin'd that wretch wou'd make but a short stay; he hop'd after his departure, that he might be at liberty to return to his allegiance and act as he might think proper. But tho' himself, and the greatest part of the townsmen were zealous royalists; nevertheless a few of them were of an opposite character. These immediately acquainted captain *Wills* with the viscount's arrival, and the state of his majesty's affairs. This was all that vile creature desir'd to know, and had induc'd him to sail from *Jamaica* to *Virginia*, in order to make a merit of his zeal for the protector at his return to *England*. He therefore reproach'd the governor and inhabitants of *Jamestown* in the severest terms for their revolting from

the commonwealth of *England*, and thereupon prepar'd to punish them for it.

While these things were doing, the viscount resided peaceably in *Pawhatan*; and as this place was far less capable of making a defence than *Jamestown*, it might very easily have been taken by surprize. Captain *Wills* landed two hundred men, (whose crew consisted of three hundred) when heading them himself, he immediately march'd for *Powhatan*. The viscount would certainly have been taken prisoner, had *Wills* fallen unexpectedly upon him; but the governor of *Jamestown* was so generous as to dispatch one of his domesticks, to acquaint him with the impending danger. Tho' the messenger made all the haste imaginable, yet *Wills* had like to have got the start of him; so that had not heaven interpos'd immediately on this occasion, the viscount and his followers would have been surpriz'd in the town. All they could do, was to fly; for being unprovided with arms, it would have been impossible for them to have resisted two hundred men. Their flight gave *Wills* the highest uneasiness; however, he did all he could to find the viscount, and spent above a fortnight in searching after him, either in *Pawhatan* or the places adjacent. But finding it was in vain, he return'd to *Jamestown*, where his men continued the search for above a month. At last, imagining that his lordship was perhaps gone on board a ship, and sail'd for some other colony, he resolv'd to leave *Jamestown*, and search for him in all the *English* settlements, and was going upon this the very day I met with him. With regard to the hurry and confusion which I saw in the harbour at my arrival, it was owing to two causes; first to *Wills's* departure, which gave great satisfaction to most of the inhabitants; and secondly, to the hopes they entertain'd upon spying my vessel, that the viscount was on board her; who, they suppos'd, having happily escap'd the enemy, put so much confidence in them, that he was coming to reside again in their town.

Tho' what I now heard was some satisfaction to me because I thereby found that the viscount was out of danger, nevertheless several circumstances gave me great uneasiness. For notwithstanding I had undertaken so long a course, and enquir'd about so much from place to place

place; I yet had made little more progress in it, than when I left the island of *Cuba*; since I scarce knew which way to go, or whether I should meet with success. I enquir'd if the viscount had struck up a friendship with any of the inhabitants of *Jamestown*; upon which I was told the names of several persons he had visited privately; but these swell'd to so long a catalogue, that I was persuaded his lordship would not have favour'd them all with his more intimate confidence; and being afraid lest I should prejudice his interest, in case I were too open, I resolv'd to leave that town without discovering my secrets to any person. Accordingly I set out for *Pawhatan* with my slave, judging that 'twas most likely I should hear which way my lord was gone, in that town, whence he last set out with his family. I was vastly melancholy all the way I went; for the hopes which I thought were accomplishing upon my coming to *Rifwey*, seem'd now remov'd at an infinite distance; and what remain'd of them were so weak and confus'd, that they daily chang'd into fears; and at certain moments, into despair. Love was still uppermost in my soul, but then I was not sensible to the delightful ideas which that passion inspires. The impatience I had of seeing again the viscount, was almost as strong as the passion above-mention'd; Mrs. *Riding* possess'd the next place in my heart; then, the remembrance of Mrs. *Lallin* would often force a pang from me; and all these sensations were intermix'd with my usual wishes, for the enjoyment of a calm and unruffled life, which might give me an opportunity of studying what I so earnestly panted after, wisdom. So finding that the possession of the only things which could make me easy, were still farther off, I was vastly dejected; and cou'd not call up any thing in my mind, which might administer the least consolation.

Iglou, for that was the name of my slave, had now liv'd long enough with me, to know the state of my soul; and had so much affection for me, that he sympathiz'd with me in my distress. The thorough knowledge he had of this part of *America*, and his skill and dexterity, which I had often put to the trial, were my only resources. This I would often hint to him, purposely that he might be prompted to serve me with zeal and fidelity;

and assur'd him, that he shou'd be rewarded in proportion to his services. We arriv'd at *Powhatan*, where the viscount and *Wills* were all the talk. I observ'd the same caution at my arrival there, as I had done at *Jamestown*; enquiring, without any seeming warmth, into all the late transactions; and endeavouring to find out some glimpse of hopes, by being told the way which his lordship had taken. All people pitied him, and spoke variously of the way he was gone, so that I cou'd not meet with any thing satisfactory. At last I consider'd, that in case the viscount had acquainted any person with the place he was going to; it must be an *English* gentleman, at whose house himself, and his family, had lodg'd in *Pawhatan*. Immediately I resolv'd to insinuate myself into this gentleman's friendship; but finding that he scrupled to open himself to me; I told him that the viscount had a prodigious friendship for me; and inform'd him of the strong motives I had to wish success to all his lordship's undertakings. The account I gave him, gain'd me his confidence at once; and indeed this was the only refuge I had now left.

This honest gentleman inform'd me of particulars that were known to him only; and which would have been conceal'd from every body but myself. He had not only done the viscount all the service that lay in his power, during his stay at *Pawhatan*; but upon the first news of *Wills's* arrival in those parts, he had undertaken to find out a place for his lordship, whither he might retire in safety. He had advis'd him to go by land for *Carolina*, and having conducted him to a country seat of his which lay in the way, and at a little distance from *Pawhatan*; he there got horses and provisions for his journey, and two faithful guides who knew the way perfectly. Two reasons had prompted him to advise his lordship to go for *Carolina*; the first was, because he would be but at a little distance from the *Spaniards*, among whom he might shelter himself, in case the fury of his enemies should force him to it; the second reason, was, the hopes he had of disappointing *Wills*, who would hardly imagine that his lordship was gone back again; and therefore would not fail of searching northwards, after he should have sought for him to no purpose all over *Virginia*.

My

My lord set out with his daughter, Mrs. Riding, six *English* gentlemen, eight servants and two guides, so that he had sixteen persons in his train. You'll certainly," says the gentleman, meet with him either in *Warwick*, which is the first habitation this way, in *Carolina*, or at—— in case he thought proper to go farther up into the country.

Hearing this happy news, I continued no longer in *Pawhatan* than was necessary for buying two horses; and relying on the assurances of *Iglou*, who promis'd to carry me safe to *Warwick*; I therefore refus'd, in an obliging manner, to accept of another guide which the *English* gentleman offer'd me. At my taking leave, I ask'd him what he thought of the inhabitants of *Pawhatan*, and whether his lordship could return to their town with any safety. He answer'd, that his opinion was, they were unanimously devoted to his majesty's interest, as well as the rest of the *Virginians*; but that he was afraid they would not dare to discover their inclinations, till *Wills* had left those seas. That the viscount intended to raise a little body of forces in *Carolina*, in order to march against *Wills*; and if possible make him smart for the terror with which he had fill'd the townsmen of *Pawhatan*. Hearing this, I set out with *Iglou*, we being mounted on two very strong horses; and as we were to pass thro' a wide extended desert country, we took provisions enough for our journey.

The inconveniencies I suffer'd upon the road, made me judge of those which the viscount and his family had been oblig'd to submit to. Indeed, as they had two cover'd waggons, they consequently spent the nights better; since they were enabled to shelter themselves from the inclemencies of the weather. As for myself, not having that conveniency, I was forc'd to stop the moment it begun to grow dark, and to make the grass my bed; and thought myself vastly happy, whenever I met with a tree to serve me as a canopy, and whose leaves we might strip, to cover myself with. *Iglou* offer'd to lay all his cloaths upon me, to secure me from the cold which was felt in the night, but humanity would not suffer me to accept of them. Tho' I was his master, I yet was sensible that he was no less a human creature than myself;

and consequently that he had as much right to all the succours which might be necessary, as I could have. We journey'd on in this manner thro' the midst of a thousand difficulties, and got to the *Apalatian* mountains. Tho' I was wholly unacquainted with those parts, I yet perceiv'd that *Iglou* went too far, as I thought westward; and that we travell'd a little too much to the left, for *Carolina*; and ask'd him the reason of it. He told me he was forc'd to go round the mountains, in order to avoid several deep marshes, which it would have been impossible for us to cross. This chain of mountains and rocks, which go by the name of *Apalatians*, extends a prodigious way along the *English* colonies; which they separate from a great number of barbarous nations, who inhabit the inland parts of the continent. But tho' the great height of them generally cuts off all communication, there yet are sometimes deep vallies in the midst of them, thro' several of which we past. I observ'd that *Iglou* always threw his eyes round him with the utmost circumspection, and with some confusion, whenever we past thro' these chasms. I ask'd several times the reason of this; but he industriously avoided to answer me, which at last began to give me some uneasiness; upon which I insisted to know it. You then are resolv'd upon this, says he, with a serious air; but it will perhaps give you some uneasiness. There is always danger in passing thro' these openings. Tho' the savages who inhabit the other side of the mountains, are not cruel in their nature; they yet are great thieves, and prodigiously fond of plunder; and shoud they spy us, 'tis a thousand to one but we are robb'd. My blood curdled almost in my veins at hearing this. D'ye think, says I to him immediately, the viscount went this way? Infallibly, says he, in case his guides brought him the shortest and safest. Heavens! says I, thou knowest for whom I now implore thy succour. And indeed, my fears and good wishes were far from centring in myself: All my thoughts were directed to the dear object of my affections; and I trembled as I ask'd *Iglou* a thousand questions relating to the savages, and in what manner they treated their prisoners.

Iglou was perfectly acquainted with their customs, his native place being but at a little distance from their country. He us'd all the arguments he cou'd to cheer me up; however, after we had rode for some days, we discover'd on a sudden about an hundred savages, coming from a deep valley, and who cou'd not go on their way, without passing by us. *Iglou*, in the utmost surprize, conjur'd me to stop. I'll undertake, says he, to bring you off safe, but then you must hide yourself. Accordingly, he made me alight, and pointing to me to retire to a tall thicket which was at our left, he desir'd me to stay there with the horses, till he came back. Don't stir from the place, says he, because so long as I shall be assur'd that you keep in it, I shall have an opportunity of making the savages turn off another way. But though you shou'd continue two or three days here alone, don't be uneasy upon that account. As he was speaking he undrest himself, when I was surpriz'd to see him have all the air of a savage. He again begg'd me not to be afraid, in case he should be so long absent, and assur'd me that I might depend on his fidelity. I let him do as he thought proper, without once enquiring into his designs. Upon this he left me, kissing my hand at the same time, in testimony of his affection. I now was left alone, seated behind the thicket which entirely hid me, holding the bridles of our two horses in my hand. I won't disguise my fears, for they were very great, but then I take heaven to witness that myself was not the object of them. My thoughts were wholly employ'd on the viscount and his daughter. What, says I, must have been their fate in case they have been so unhappy, as to fall inadvertently into the hands of the savages: All the blood in my veins was congeal'd at this reflection. So far from endeavouring to fly from this wild people, I shou'd have deliver'd myself into their hands, had I been assur'd that my lord had been taken by them.

I soon lost sight of *Iglou*, and spent the rest of the day, as the reader will easily believe, in great anxiety; but was seiz'd with a mortal uneasiness, when I heard him coming in the dead of night. He had taken care to speak, purposely to prevent my being frightened. Well *Iglou*, says I, what news have you to tell me? Did my

lord and Miss *Fanny* fall a prey to savages, and are we to expect the same sad fate? He attempted to conceal his suspicions to me, but I observ'd his confusion, and therefore begg'd him to be sincere. Upon this he answer'd, that as for us, we were out of all danger; that the savages were gone another way, upon his putting them on a wrong scent, and that we had nothing to fear from them; however, that since I was resolv'd to know the truth; he was afraid the viscount had not been so fortunate as myself. I went up, says he, to the savages; and telling them where I was born, they also inform'd me, what country they belong'd to. I pretended that I had lost myself for several days in this wild place, and therefore desir'd them to direct me the way home. They did as I desir'd, but would not let me go, till I had first acquainted them whether I had not met with some prisoners who had escap'd out of their hands, about a few days before. They did not tell me who these prisoners were, and I did not dare to ask them any questions for fear of raising their suspicions: The only advantage I made of what I then heard, was, my assuring them that the persons they were in pursuit of, were gone a quite different way from that we intended to pursue; upon which they immediately went the way I had directed them. But to be sincere, says *Iglou*, I'm afraid the prisoners they mention'd are the viscount and his train; for I judge, from the answers they made, that these people are not engag'd in war with their neighbours. Saying this, my honest slave advis'd me not to stay here any longer; and to take advantage of the night, which was not quite so dark but we might find our way in it.

This account threw me into an inexpressible consternation. Alas! *Iglou*, says I, I cannot stir from hence, till I hear farther about the viscount. Seek him I must, tho' it cost me my life and liberty. Assist me as thou hast hitherto done, and give me your advice. *Iglou* assured me he was no less perplex'd than myself, and that he absolutely did not know which course to take. If my lord, says he, is still accompanied with his guides, 'tis probable he is gone towards *Carolina*; but in case they are gone from him. I know not where to look for him. Indeed, the whole was such a dilemma to me, that I did not know

what

what was to be done. For the sad condition the viscount was in, plung'd me into such an abyss of reflection, as almost distracted me: for supposing, says I, he had fallen into the hands of the savages, and was escap'd them, he must certainly have been plunder'd: I could never suppose that he had sav'd his followers, his provisions and vehicles; 'twas not probable that Miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding* had got away: This last reflection pierced my very soul. Blessed God! says I, every moment, could you cease to protect my *Fanny*? and could you abandon her in the extremest danger?

Upon meditating for a considerable time, I fancied that in case his lordship had saved himself and his followers, he could not be far from the place where we then stood. The savages would not have sought in that part for him, had they not believed he was gone that way. And as I argued upon the measures he had taken in order to avoid their pursuit, methought his lordship must first have endeavoured to hide himself, rather than make off; because the former was much easier, since he was wholly unacquainted with the country. Heaven undoubtedly inspir'd me with this thought; heaven, I say; and I return it my most hearty and sincere thanks upon that account to this very day; for had I not made this reflection, the most virtuous, the most lovely creature upon earth had been undone. Gods! what words shall I find to paint the description I am now going to give! and how will my readers believe after they have read it, that I have still more melancholy, more melting incidents to relate?

I told *Iglon* what I thought on this matter, when having agreed not to leave the place we were in, till we had first searched all about it; we waited impatiently for the morning, in order to begin. Accordingly we got on horseback by break of day and examined all such places very narrowly as we imagined most fit for a retreat. We look'd into every valley, wood and thick bush; in short we pry'd into every place eighteen or twenty miles round us: and spar'd our horses so little, that though the sun darted his rays very fiercely, we yet kept them in action the greatest part of the day; and 'twas not till the afternoon, when finding them almost spent with weariness, and being ourselves almost over-power'd with the
heat,

heat, we agreed to stop under the covert of some bushes, and to take a little refreshment. Accordingly I threw myself down on the grass, which was very thick and high; less oppress'd by the violent fatigue, than by the perpetual reflections which tortur'd my bosom. *Iglou* was either employ'd, at a few paces from me, about the horses, or in taking out some provisions; when I was surpriz'd to see him sink down on a sudden, and come towards me upon all four. Heavens! says I to him, my heart going pit-a-pat at the same time, what's the matter, *Iglou*? What have you discovered? He answer'd, that he had spy'd some savages in the thicket; but provided we were but as cautious as the night before, he hoped I might not only avoid them, but that he might learn something from them which might be to our advantage. He then desired me to lie close. Our horses stood behind some trees, where they cooled themselves; so that not finding it possible, either for them or me to change our places; he instantly threw off his clothes, in order to run among the savages. He had not been gone above a quarter of an hour, when he return'd back, along with a man who was also naked, but had a much whiter skin. I flatter'd myself for a moment that he brought me good news, and that a savage who accompanied him in so peaceable a manner, could not be our enemy. Alas! can I give the name of happy news to the account he brought me? Let the reader hear it, and afterwards judge.

This naked man whom I took for a savage, came up towards me, when fixing his eyes upon me, neither of us utter'd one word. At last he flung himself upon my neck, and clasping me with all his strength; 'tis Mr. *Cleveland*, says he several times; 'tis he himself. I got from his arms, and not knowing what construction to put upon the transport, I asked him with a confused tone of voice, who he was; and since I knew him to be an *Englishman* by his voice; by what adventure he was come into that desert country, and how he came to have no cloaths to his back. Alas! says he, follow me here, and see the unfortunate lord *Axminster*, who waits for you at about an hundred paces from this place; come and see his daughter, Mrs. *Riding*, and part of the officers who follow'd him from *Raan*, and among whom you may remember

to have seen me. The dear name of viscount *Axminster*, that of his daughter and Mrs. *Riding*, my being assured that I was not above an hundred steps from them, and that they waited for me; love, friendship, gratitude; what shall I say? Every thing that is soft and tender, made so strong an impression on my heart, that this crowd of emotions overpowering me, I fell in a swoon. However I did not long continue in it; but opening my eyes, and looking a moment on the person who spoke to me, I knew him to be Mr. *Youngster*, viscount *Axminster*'s gentleman of the horse; but I was so amazed, that I scarce had the power to open my mouth, and to hold out my arms to him. I remember you, says I with a faint voice, your name is *Youngster*; and you was gentleman of the horse to my dear lord and father. Alas! what did you say to me? Where shall I find him? Make haste and conduct me to him. And Miss *Fanny* too! Says I, scarce able to speak; don't you deceive me? Shall I again be blessed with the sight of that dearest of creatures? My trouble was so great, that this added to the violent fatigue I had sustain'd that day, not to mention that I had taken no sustenance, made me so weak, that I was forced to hold by *Iglou* as I spoke to Mr. *Youngster*.

He said, that so far from flattering me he had most lamentable news to tell; that his lordship could describe what he had to say, much better than himself; but that in the mean time, he thought it would be proper to give me an idea of the sad condition to which his lordship was reduced, and also his train who were now reduced to a very small number: that having been imposed upon by his guides, attack'd by a company of savages, and taken prisoner with his people, who had made a stout resistance, and most of whom had lost their lives in defending his; he had spent near a fortnight in the huts of his barbarous conquerors; That he had been plunder'd; not only of his equipage, but of all his cloaths, and those of Miss *Fanny*, Mrs. *Riding*, and the rest of his followers; that they had been obliged to make themselves girdles of grass and rushes, and to weave them into a kind of gowns for the two ladies, and their two women; but that these would scarce cover their nakedness: That as the savages had not used them cruelly, or even set a watch over them;
they

they had, according to the viscount's hint, fled away in the night, and had escaped unperceiv'd; that they had enjoy'd their liberty about four days, but that they did not think they were far from their plunderers, because they had dared to travel only in the night; and that being so weak, it was impossible but they must go very slow; that the viscount seemed to bear this calamity with great courage; and comforted those who were about him; but that one might easily perceive he was afflicted to the soul; that he had taken the pains, hitherto, to carry Miss *Fanny* in his arms, to save her the fatigue of walking; and had constantly refused to let any of his servants do it, though at the same time, they could not forbear shedding tears at the melancholy sight; but they had been so lucky, as to get some provisions when they fled from the savages, but that as they were not able to carry off much, they consequently would soon be spent. In fine, that when I was so well recover'd as to be able to walk, he would carry me to his lord; who, he said, would undoubtedly be overjoy'd to see me; that he was come by his lordship's order, to see whether it was really me, as the slave had assur'd him: That he still doubted whether this were true, not only because *Iglou* did not pronounce my name exactly; but much more so, because of the little probability there was of my being in the *West-Indies*, as it was thought I had married Mrs *Lallin* in *Roan*.

I was so surpriz'd at what I heard, that I continued motionless. As soon as Mr. *Youngster* had done speaking, I took him by the hand, and squeez'd it, without making him any answer: And tho' I found myself so weak, that it was impossible for me to walk unsupported; I yet set out towards the place where the viscount was, holding always by *Iglou*. Mr. *Youngster* walk'd before, and we came in a very little time to a place overgrown with briars, and intermix'd with some little trees, so that it seem'd a small kind of wood. I did not see any body at my first coming into it, though I threw my eyes round me with the utmost eagerness. At last, Mr. *Youngster* having carried me round a thicket, which stood in a corner of the most tufted part of the wood, I discover'd such a spectacle as would have kill'd me at once, had I not been prepar'd for it. I found my lord stark naked, stretch'd on the grass,
 leaning

leaning his head languishingly on his hand. Three of his servants lay by him, who rose up when they saw me. He was going to do the same; but preventing him in the utmost emotions of passion, I threw myself at his feet, and embraced them with such an ardour as sure was never felt before. Heaven! thou knowest it! Alas! What a strange revolution then happen'd in my soul?

The viscount did not oppose this effusion of grief and tenderness, but did not once open his lips. I lifted up my head, after having reclin'd it for some moments, and turn'd my eyes towards him, when I observ'd that some tears stole down his cheeks. His face was pale and wan; he also look'd upon me, but without speaking, as though he were in doubt how he should address me. This perplexity, the cause of which I easily guess'd, increas'd my anxiety, and I could not forbear venting my complaints. Alas! my lord, says I, have you quite put me out of your heart; and will you refuse me a slight mark of humanity and tenderness, after I have been in search of you all the world over, and am now come to die at your feet? Alas! what have I done to you? and whence is it that so much love or respect on my side should be productive of this hatred? I endeavour'd to proceed, but could not; such sensations as I then felt, were not to be express'd by words. My lord plainly saw that this sorrow was not fictitious, and thereupon held out his hand to me. I don't hate you, says his lordship; and am persuaded that you are sincerely touched with my misfortunes. Inform me, what chance has brought you into this solitary place. I gave him to understand, as well as the confusion I was in would give me leave; that what he call'd the effect of chance, was the result of the unparallel'd affection I bore to him and his daughter; that it was the effect of the despair into which his departure from *France* had thrown me; and of the unshaken resolution I had form'd, to employ the last drop of my blood in his service. I inform'd him, that I should not have staid a moment after him in *France*, had I not been imprison'd; that for six months together I had traversed the seas and deserts of *America*, in search of him; and in bewailing my ill fate for eluding my pursuit; firmly resolv'd to spend my life in it; and to consider all the difficulties to which this expos'd me, as nothing. In a word,

word, I explain'd matters so happily, that his lordship was persuaded of my innocency, and consequently of the injustice of his suspicions.

'Twas then I had a greater instance than ever I had met with, of the viscount's goodness and generosity. As he now no longer doubted but I was such as he wished me, he was not at all reserv'd either in thought or expression. Immediately he embrac'd me with transport, and held me for some time in his arms, without speaking a single word. Good Heavens! says he at last, thou now exercisest thy whole power over me, by making me at this instant feel the extremes of grief and joy. I am the most unfortunate creature upon the face of the earth; but *Cleveland* has not betray'd me; he still loves me, and thou indulgest me the satisfaction of seeing him again! He then clasp'd me again to his breast, calling me by a thousand tender names, and bedewing my face with his tears. I also shed an abundance; and his endearing caresses melted my very soul.

I had till now been employ'd in justifying myself, and pitying his lordship's misfortunes; but as the latter sensation began now to prevail, my whole attention was now employ'd on the sad condition I saw him in; and this he perceived, by the mournful air with which I look'd upon him. I read in your eyes, says he, how deeply you are affected with my calamities. They are indeed extreme; and I enquire in vain for the reason, why heaven should afflict me in this manner! But I now am a little revived, added his lordship; you shall comfort me, dear son; and your presence will keep me from dying with grief. He then mention'd his daughter *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding*. They no doubt, says he, will be overjoy'd to see you; but I'm afraid poor *Fanny* will survive, but a very little time, our common misfortunes; for she's now so weak that I apprehend she'll not live long. The only answer I made to these words, was, by kissing his lordship's hands, with an eagerness which sufficiently discover'd my sentiments. I understand, says he, that you're impatient to see her; and depend upon't she'll be overjoy'd to find you still love her. But as the poor girl, Mrs. *Riding* and her two women are not in a condition to be seen; I advise you in order to save their blushes, to

stay

stay till 'tis dark. They are hard by, and I see the sun is going to set — I was oblig'd to wait, tho' it was a mortal pain to me; at the same time I cast my eyes round, in hopes of spying her. I even fancied I saw her head rise up above the grass, which held my glances fix'd, as it were, towards that part. Her features, her air, the tone of her voice; all these were present to my imagination; and transported with the pleasure I fancied the seeing her again would inspire me with; for some moments I forgot her own, and her father's sad fate, and thought of nothing but joy and felicity.

I nevertheless offer'd his lordship during this interval, part of my own clothes to cover him; and desir'd that my linnen, and whatever might be of service to the ladies might be sent to them. As for myself, I had no clothes but those on my back, and a large cloak, having been oblig'd to leave the rest of my things in *Pawhatan*, in order that our horses might be loaded with nothing but provisions; but then I had got a sufficient quantity of linnen. *Iglou* was very well cloath'd, and had also a cloak; so that we had sufficient to cover my lord with the bare superfluities of our apparel, and to furnish the ladies with several things. As my coat was too little for his lordship, he accepted of my cloak, and at the same time of one of my shirts; he sent his daughter my waistcoat, *Iglou's* cloak, some linnen, and whatever might be of use to her and Mrs. *Riding*. I don't, says he, make the least scruple to accept of what you offer me, since 'tis to your father and your wife that you do this piece of service.

Altho' Miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding* would now be enabled to appear with tolerable decency, by means of the clothes we had sent them; nevertheless the viscount desir'd me not to see them till it was dark, in order to spare their blushes, which would necessarily arise at their first seeing me. This put my patience to the utmost trial. His lordship spent the moments, between that time and dark night, in relating the several particulars of his leaving *France*, and his arrival in the *West-Indies*; and did not conceal from me the great uneasiness, which the persuasion of my infidelity had brought upon his daughter, Mrs. *Riding* and himself; and even confess'd, that he had repented,

repented, more than once, his leaving *Europe* so soon, before he had been convinc'd of my suppos'd falshood, from my own mouth; and this, he said, was as much the result of a remaining friendship, which still pleaded strongly for me in his heart; as out of tenderness for his daughter *Fanny*, who, he assur'd me, had never enjoy'd a moment's satisfaction ever since their leaving *Roon*. In fine, he ask'd me how far I might rely upon my slave; and whether either of us were so well acquainted with that country, as to know the direct way to some *English* or *Spanish* settlement. I answer'd to the first part of his discourse, by the fresh marks I had given him of my gratitude and affection; with regard to *Iglou*, I desir'd his lordship to be easy, with respect to his fidelity, and assur'd him that he was very well acquainted with that country. The viscount was desirous of examining *Iglou*, who answer'd very pertinently to all his questions; but as his lordship fancied we were far advanc'd towards *Carolina*, he was very much surpriz'd to find we had still near three hundred miles to go, and was vastly uneasy upon that account. Hethereupon ask'd my slave with great earnestness, whether we had any thing more to fear from savages. *Iglou* reply'd, that this was just as it might happen, because those barbarians frequently change their plantations, and that some are always met with on those mountains. I observ'd that his lordship was uneasy only upon his daughter's account; and as she was as dear to me, as she cou'd possibly be to her father, I desir'd *Iglou* to get us out of danger as soon as possible. This worthy slave, after a moment's reflection, made the following proposal. I was born, says he, in the *West-Indies* among the *Abaquis*, who are a kind people, and infinitely more human than most other savage nations. The *Abaquis* inhabit a beautiful valley which they have long been in possession of, and is not above ninety miles from this place. I'll set out thither instantly, says he, in case you judge it proper; and will bring from thence such a posse of my countrymen, as will be sufficient to guard, and secure us from all danger. He said farther, in order that his lordship might be still more prompted to confide in him, that he was sprung from one of the best families of his nation; that he left it a-

bout

bout five or six years before, purely out of curiosity to visit the *European* colonies; that having been taken by the *Spaniards* and sold to the governor of *Cuba*, he had met with a very gentle captivity; that he remembered he had seen his lordship in the governor's palace in the *Havana*; in fine, that he had a great affection for the *Europeans* in general, and had so high a value for me in particular, that he was ready to run the hazard of losing his life for our sakes.

The viscount hearing him discourse in so rational and affectionate a manner, ask'd me once more, whether it were safe to trust him. I believe, says I, my lord, you may trust him as safely as myself; he was presented me by *Don Pedro* the governor, who assur'd me of his fidelity, and I myself have put it often to the trial. Upon this the viscount wanted to know, whether his country lay wholly out of the way we were to go; whether his countrymen were altogether so humane as he had describ'd them; whether he were sure that they'd assist us; and if they always went naked like the rest of the savages. *Iglou* return'd very satisfactory answers to all these questions. He told his lordship, that if we were to go one way, we should come within thirty miles of the valley of *Abanquis*; that he was sure of obtaining whatever he should ask, not only upon account of the credit and interest of his family; but that their joy to see him again after six years absence, would be so great, that they cou'd not deny him any thing; that his countrymen were wonderfully kind and good natur'd; that with regard to their dress, they cover'd themselves in winter with the skins of beasts, but went naked during seven or eight months in the year, because of the excessive heat of the sun.

The viscount taking me aside; I have met, says he, with so many calamities, that I know not whether I dare again put the least confidence in fortune: but, in case I cou'd think your slave was faithful, and his relation true, I then shou'd look upon what he has now told us, as a great happiness, considering the state to which we are reduc'd. Besides the dangers to which we shall be expos'd between this and *Carolina*, and the length of the way which terrifies me; it would be a prodigious pain to me to appear in any *English* settlement, in this despica-

despicable condition. In case I cou'd trust the *Abaquis*, we would go among them, and there provide ourselves with cloaths and provisions; when getting a guard of resolute fellows, we should not only be secur'd against the attacks of the savages, but likewise against *Wills*, in case we should happen to meet with him. His lordship then asking me whether I approv'd the motion, I again declar'd the confidence I plac'd in *Iglou*; and told him, that I left the rest to his lordship's prudence. He then beckon'd the slave once more to him, and after making him repeat what he had before said, with several additional circumstances, he concluded by saying, that in six days or rather six nights, which was the only time we could travel with security, we might reach the valley of the *Abaquis*. The provisions we had got, would serve us till our arrival among them, so that we were unanimous to set out for that nation.

Whilst we were thus discoursing together, and that the impatient desire of seeing the dear creature, diverted my attention every moment, the day at last began to give way to the shades of night. This I observed to his lordship, who took the hint. Accordingly we went towards the place where the two ladies expected us. 'Twas not so very dark but we could distinguish objects, when I perceiv'd my enchanting *Fanny*. Alas! in what condition did I perceive her! What name shall I give the tender emotions, which so dear, so long wish'd for a charmer rais'd in my mind? And how shall I paint the grief and compassion which then seiz'd my heart?

Her women had adjusted the clothes and linnen sent to her in such a manner, that she look'd tolerably well; but her head and feet were still uncovered, and her hair hung loose about her shoulders. Miss *Fanny* sat by Mrs. *Riding*, with her head leaning on her lap. As her eyes were shut, and she did not seem to see us; says my lord, look up child, I have brought Mr. *Cleveland* to you. Miss *Fanny* then turn'd her eyes upon me, but immediately cast them on the ground with a deep sigh. I knew that she had not yet been inform'd of my innocence; so that notwithstanding the violent emotions, which then arose in my bosom, I yet continued motionless and cold in outward appearance, not daring even to throw myself

at her feet. Her father, who knew easily what it was that gave occasion to her silence and my fear, gave her his hand to raise her from the ground. Come, says he, my dear, shew some little civilities to Mr. *Cleveland*; we have accus'd him unjustly, for he has always lov'd us. Upon this she stood up, when I threw myself at her feet in so passionate a manner, that this alone sufficiently explain'd my sentiments. I wou'd have kist her feet, but she prevented me; and desiring me in a very low voice to rise up, I observ'd that she shed a flood of tears, and did all that lay in her power to suppress her sighs and groans. The viscount, who was as much afflicted as myself to see her fast-flowing tears, bid me embrace her. Alas! my lord, says I, I desire no greater favour, than to be permitted to lie at her feet! when falling prostrate a second time, I protested, that I wou'd never stir from the place where I then lay, in case she did not promise to smile as propitiously as she had done before. Set your heart at rest, says the viscount, for you may be assur'd that she loves you, and depend that we are all overjoy'd at seeing you again.

Mrs. *Riding* embracing me very tenderly, gave me the same assurance. I spoke to all three one after another in the most affectionate and melting terms; and the viscount being seated, and making a sign for us to do the same; I sat down at the feet of my queen, with greater joy than I shou'd have ascended the greatest throne of the universe.

I know not how it is, that the heart can shift so suddenly from one situation, to another of a quite opposite nature; a moment sometimes produces so unaccountable a vicissitude. Is there then so little difference between the inward impulses whence grief and joy spring? Or rather, is it not in reality the same impulse, which assumes a different name according as its object and cause are chang'd? If we examine closely, we shall find that a real joy has the same symptoms as excessive sorrow. The former shall call up our tears, bereave us of our voice, diffuse a delicious languor, and make the soul meditate on the cause of its emotions; and if one man is transported with joy and the other with sorrow, I know not which of the two would soonest yield to be bereav'd
of

of the sensation he feels. With regard to myself, who cou'd not forbear bursting into tears, to see the viscount and his daughter in so deplorable a condition? I perceiv'd that they still continued to fall from my eyes, when I reflected only on the happiness I enjoy'd in seeing them again, and recovering their esteem. My eyes were still fix'd on Miss *Fanny*, nor could the darkness make me lose one of her glances. I reproach'd both my dear creature and her father, but in the softest terms, for filling me with such mortal uneasiness by their unjust suspicions; and desir'd they wou'd atone for this, by loving me still more affectionately. This they promis'd to do in the most tender words; and my dear *Fanny* herself, having now a sanction from her father, and touch'd with the strong testimonies of my passion, was at last so good as to indulge my innocent caresses.

We spent part of the night in these endearments, and being still fix'd in our resolution of taking *Iglou* for our conductor, we set out some hours before day-break towards the valley of the *Abaquis*, the two ladies making use of our horses. We were continually about them, and so ready to do them the service we cou'd, that they suffer'd no other fatigue or inconveniency during our seven nights march, but from the jolting of the horses. We us'd to stop at day break in some shady place, and there pass the day in discoursing on our past calamities, or in taking some refreshments or sleep. I had more than once a mind to beg his lordship to fulfil the promise he had made me, that is, to give his daughter to me in marriage. This I mention'd to Miss *Fanny*. Who knows, says I, what felicity heaven may still have in reserve for us? A misunderstanding expos'd me to the unhappiness of losing you, at a time when we thought our good fortune fix'd on the strongest basis. To day, some new calamity may possibly be impending, which may perhaps separate us longer than it has yet done. Alas! in case I should be torn from you before the priest has made us one! — Alas! says I, after a moment's reflection; whether this happens before or after I am join'd to you, 'twill be impossible for me to live without you. But what sweeter consolation cou'd I wish for,

even

even in my dying pangs, than to be yours by the most sacred of all ties? Dearest Miss *Fanny*, won't you consent to this? And does not your heart whisper entirely in my favour?

My enchanting creature answer'd, that I might dispose of it as I pleas'd; and that she devolv'd upon me the care of our mutual felicity, and she wish'd as earnestly for it as I cou'd possibly do. We will then, says I, be completely so very soon, and immediately directing myself to Mrs. *Riding*, I begg'd her to propose it to the viscount. She did not refuse to accept of the commission; but told me, she was afraid it wou'd meet with some difficulties; because, says she, 'tis not probable his lordship will consent to this, without your nuptials cou'd be solemniz'd in a regular way. Nevertheless, she took an opportunity of hinting this to him; and was surpriz'd to hear him say, that he had not only consider'd this, but that he had intended to propose it himself, in case we met with success among the *Abaquis*.

We perform'd our journey very happily, and being come within a small distance of the habitation of the savages, *Iglou* told us, that it wou'd be best for him to go to it alone, in order to dispose his countrymen in our favour; and prepare them against any surprize they might otherwise be in at seeing us. I took him aside and said, *Iglou*, you know entirely we give up our lives and liberty into your hands. I have answer'd for your fidelity to his lordship. Don't betray your master, and remember how kindly I have always treated you. *Iglou* threw himself at my feet in a transport of joy, and protested to me, that so far from deserving to be suspected, he wou'd now evince, that he was not only entirely devoted to us, but also that the *Europeans* don't do the *West-Indians* justice; when they declare them to be, in general, brutal and savage. Saying this he left us, promising to return back quickly. Tho' my lord had propos'd our going to the *Abaquis*; I observ'd that as he was upon the point of delivering himself up to the mercy of an unknown and savage people, he was not without dread. As for myself, being thoroughly perswaded of my slave's fidelity, I had no other fear than that which is inseparable from love, even when danger is at a distance.

Iglou

Iglou return'd to us about noon; he came alone, but did it purely to prevent our being alarm'd, which wou'd certainly have been, had he come with the *Abaquis* in a body. — We were eager to hear the result of his good offices, upon which he told us with an air of satisfaction, that we should soon find, whether or no he was esteem'd by his countrymen. He only gave us an account of some of their customs which were a little singular and troublesome; and desir'd us especially not to be offended, in case curiosity should prompt them to come very near us, to observe our shape and customs. He had scarce done speaking, but we saw a crowd of savages, amounting to near five or six hundred, come out of the plantation. He inform'd us that the chiefs had given orders for this; and that all the inhabitants were assembled to meet us, purely to pay us a compliment. They indeed advanc'd towards the place where we were; when stopping at about fifty paces, they seem'd to wait for *Iglou's* coming, purposely that they might be instructed by him how they should act. I told him, that we had rather not have the whole company advance up to us, and that 'twould be enough for the chief among them to do so. Whilst *Iglou* was gone up to them, the viscount order'd his few followers to be vastly circumspect in their behaviour towards the savages, and to treat them with the utmost civility.

Upon this about twelve or thirteen came from among the rest, and follow'd *Iglou*, when we all rose up to receive them. *Iglou* having shewn them his lordship, as the greatest man among us, they saluted him by bending their bodies, and crossing their arms in a thousand different ways. They afterwards paid me the same compliments, and afterwards to the two ladies. All this first ceremony was perform'd in silence. *Iglou* afterwards spoke in their name, and assur'd us, that they were overjoy'd to see us, and would do us all the service that lay in their power. The viscount bid him answer them that we were persuad'd of their generosity and sincerity; and that 'twas from a firm persuasion of these, that we had not scrupled to come among them, to beg their assistance and friendship.

As

As soon as these compliments were ended, and that they seem'd to express some confidence in us, because of the open and sincere air with which we address'd them; they caress'd us with much greater familiarity. They kiss'd our foreheads and breasts several times; they beheld us with astonishment; and methought I discover'd good sense and reflection, in the manner by which they communicated their remarks to one another. Their aspect was far from being terrible. Most of the savages in this part of the *West-Indies* are tall and strait. They are tawny, but not of that kind which approaches to black. Their skin is of a deep brown; 'tis of this colour when they are born, and keeps so all their lives. They are naked, except about the waist. A certain fire sparkles in their eyes, which denotes the vivacity of their minds; and tho' there appears something savage in their air and looks, we yet cannot call it ferocity; nor does their exterior inspire the least fear. Most of them were arm'd with bows and arrows; and the heads of some were adorn'd with feathers, which were dispos'd about their hair after a very whimsical manner.

Tho' they all view'd us very attentively, I yet observ'd that two gaz'd upon me more than upon any of the rest, and were particularly liberal of their caresses. *Iglou* acquainted me, that these were his father and brother. He had before told them that I was his master, and that I had treated him with uncommon indulgence; so that they strove who should shew me the greatest civilities; this they continued to do, so long as I stay'd among them.

Iglou propos'd that we should walk into the plantation, which we consented to. He scarce had said this to the rest of the savages, but upon a signal he made to those who were not yet come up, they began to run towards us very swiftly. They now almost oppress'd us with their salutations and caresses. *Iglou* presented some of the women who were among them, to Miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding*. One of these being his sister, he desir'd I would speak to our young lady, to permit her to attend upon her continually. These women were of the same colour with their husbands, but had something softer in their countenances and about the eyes. Miss *Fanny* us'd *Iglou's* sister, whose

name was *Rem*, very kindly. We now heard a confus'd murmur of words, which appear'd to us almost inarticulate; and as the testimonies they gave us of their friendship, were now so often repeated, that they began to be troublesome; I told *Iglou*, that we should be glad to retire to some place, where we might escape this inundation of compliments. He told us that they had prepar'd huts for us, which we might command as our own, and that none but such as we should desire, would be allow'd access to them; but then he desir'd us to excuse the passionate warmth his countrymen show'd, who were generally carried away by the first impressions. We were therefore oblig'd to let ourselves be carried in a very whimsical manner to the plantation. Each of us was taken up by two savages, who putting their fingers thro' one another, made us sit on their hands, which made a kind of chair; and bidding us throw our arms on each side their shoulders, and round their necks, they carried us in this posture to the plantation, which lay about 500 paces off, with surprizing swiftness. Their huts and streets were not very clean; the streets are not pav'd; but the whole plantation stands in a sandy bottom, which makes the way very troublesome in summer, because of the dust, which flies about prodigiously if the least wind blows. Their huts are made of timber, earth and flints, and are but one story high; but then they are so spacious, that one of them is generally large enough for two or three families to dwell in. None but their chiefs have a house to themselves; and one of the latter was got ready for us. We entered it with joy, purely to get rid of the crowd; and tho' the chiefs went in with us, they yet had the complaisance to withdraw, when *Iglou* told them that we desir'd to take a littlerest.

And indeed the fatigues and inquietudes of this dangerous journey, made rest absolutely necessary. *Iglou* caus'd some savages, who had been order'd to attend upon us, to bring a great number of skins which they made into beds, as like those of *Europe* as possible. He was overjoy'd to do us this piece of service, as it not only gave us a testimony of his affection, but at the same time show'd the credit and authority of his family. He did not even tell us of another piece of *Indian* gallantry, that was preparing

paring by his order, and which he intended to surprize us with. Whilst he was discoursing with us on some of the *Abaquis* customs, we saw our door open; and a dozen girls came in, carrying baskets on their heads, fill'd with roasted viands, and the best fruit of the country. These serv'd us, if not with magnificence, at least in a neat manner. The *Indian* maids danc'd after the repast was ended, and *Iglou* encourag'd them to trip it away briskly, thinking this was a great diversion to us. At last, I told him that we desir'd to be alone.

Before we laid down to sleep, we discours'd a long time on our present condition, when my lord declar'd, that he was very glad we were come among the *Abaquis*. All that we had hitherto seen of this nation, answer'd exactly with what *Iglou* had told us of them. We were at least certain, that we might continue among them in a peaceable manner for some days. As for the guard which we wanted to *Carolina*, we did not think proper to mention it till we were a little acquainted. *Iglou* was to procure us this favour; and we soon found that it wou'd not be a very difficult matter for him to obtain it. Every thing, says my lord, goes on very happily; and we are infinitely oblig'd to Mr. *Cleveland* upon that account. These obliging words were to me an happy omen, with regard to my wishes for dear miss *Fanny*. The answer I made, shou'd how agreeable they were to me; and the viscount, who took the hint, declar'd before the whole company, that his daughter should be my wife whenever I pleas'd! Gods! says I, can there be the least delay? And shall we defer to another day what may be executed this instant? You are a little too hasty, says his lordship; and have patience, at least, till day-break. I have consider'd, added he, that we have not a clergyman among us; however, I'll surrender up my daughter to you notwithstanding. The sacerdotal authority is almost unessential, when that of a father is obtain'd. The consent I shall indulge you and my blessing, will compensate for the want of the ecclesiastical function; and this we'll afterwards repair, by a more legal solemnization.

This positive assurance, fill'd me with the most delightful ideas that ever painted themselves in the fancy, so that I forgot all my misfortunes in an instant. I even flatter'd

my self that I was now out of the power of them, and that I should henceforwards enjoy a life of happiness and tranquillity. Indeed, this delicious satisfaction was somewhat allayed, when I consider'd the melancholy condition to which my dearest creature was reduced, and the unhappy circumstances which would attend the most happy of all events. What a festival would this be! Where were our nuptials to be solemniz'd! In the deserts of *America*, among a barbarous people, unprovided with the most necessary conveniencies of life! I was even afraid, that miss *Fanny* would be so deeply affected with the forlorn condition to which we were reduc'd, that it would be impossible for her to have a due sense of our mutual happiness; and that this circumstance might prevent her giving me those marks of tenderness and affection, she would otherwise have indulg'd. I acquainted her with my fears in this particular, when the answer she made, confirm'd me but too strongly in the idea I had entertain'd. Alas! says she to me, how unaccountable is our fate! How gloomy are the auspices with regard to the consequences of our love and marriage! Speaking these words, she grasp'd my hand, and let fall a few tears; and I myself could not forbear shuddering at the fatal omen. However, banishing such thoughts, as the effect of weakness, my thoughts were now wholly employ'd, in what manner I might best console my *Fanny*. Our kindness, says I, my dear, and our constancy will at last prevail over the malignity of fortune. Nothing, says I, can terrify me, provided I am but secure of your affection. If I love you, says she, in a most melting tone of voice: Is it not a sad omen to me, that you can ever doubt of it? Alas! says she, the tears streaming from her eyes, I shall not be less unhappy than my mother. I found it a very hard task to dispel her fears and her uneasiness; and I spent part of the night in comforting her, while my lord and Mrs. *Riding* were asleep.

My charming creature's uneasiness and fears gave me so much the more pain, as I knew her to be inform'd with a masculine turn of mind, above the little fears which disturb those of the vulgar. However, as I did not foresee any thing, at least with regard to herself and me, which cou'd justly give me the least alarm, I pass'd a night, which

was

was to be follow'd by the happiest day I was ever blest with, agreeably enough. All the cravings (as I was going to rest,) says I, of my heart will be satisfied to-morrow; I shall at last obtain what I so eagerly pant after; and fortune can now have but little power over me. Wisdom shall henceforwards be my only study; and her dictates will fortify me sufficiently against the reverses of fate. Poverty, for instance, will not be able to give me a moment's pain. In case I shall be weak in any respect, 'twill be only in the affections of my heart; and happily for me, this is what I shall be least expos'd to, since I shall to-morrow be united for ever to my *Fanny*; and have the viscount and Mrs. *Riding* for my inseparable friends. Whilst I was employ'd in these thoughts, sleep seal'd fast my eyes; and when I awak'd the next morning, my heart was fill'd with inexpressible delight.

Iglou hearing that our marriage was upon the point of being celebrated, endeavour'd all that lay in his power, but unknown to me, to engage his countrymen to heighten the solemnity of it. I shall not relate the ridiculous pageantry that was display'd on this occasion, which we applauded, purposely to ingratiate ourselves still more in the affection of the savages. We were oblig'd to partake of a feast which the chiefs had order'd to be prepar'd for us; and 'twas a pleasure to the viscount to make us observe their ceremonies; and he left the direction of the whole to *Iglou's* father, who was one of the principal men of the assembly. Supper being ended, the last mention'd savage came and took me from the place where I was sitting, his daughter at the same time taking miss *Fanny* by the hand; and leading us both into the middle of the room, all the spectators crouded round us in a ring. Then *Rem*, *Iglou's* sister, presented me with a kind of rope made of the barks of trees, and gave me to understand, that I must take it, and tie it round miss *Fanny's* waist. I did so, and she bid me tie the knot hard. After this, putting one end of it into my fair charmer's hand, she assisted her in putting it round me, and bound me with it also. We were now tied to one another, with about a yard of bark-rope between us. And now all the savages came up to us one after another, and seem'd as tho' they did all their endeavours to untie the knot. As

each savage withdrew; he either gave a nod or spoke some words, to signify that it was not in his power to untie the knots. When they had thus seemingly attempted to unloose us by artifice, they return'd again toward us in the same order; and endeavour'd in outward appearance, to employ their whole strength to break the bands: But failing also in this, *Iglou's* father and daughter led us to the viscount, and said to him, as *Iglou* told us afterwards; that having found his daughter tied in the manner he saw, they had employ'd their utmost efforts to set her at liberty; but having fail'd, 'twas now his business to try whether he could have better success. The savages had put one of these ropes into his lordship's hand, and made signs for him to put it round his daughter and me; when he was desir'd to tie us close together, which he did; and likewise made several more knots, in those ropes with which the savages had bound us, at which they testified their applause by a great shout. Then one of them raising his voice, declar'd, that as they had endeavour'd in vain to unloose us, and since the bride's father had himself assisted in binding us, no one in the world ought to loose them hereafter; that we could not justly complain against any person, since we had voluntarily put ourselves in bonds; that 'twas manifest the sun himself had inspir'd us with this desire; that he would bless our union; and therefore we ought in gratitude to him, never repent that we had bound ourselves by these indissoluble ties.

The *Abaquis* worship the sun, and acknowledge no other deity. We shou'd, in order to complete our marriage after their fashion, have call'd upon that planet, as a witness of the constancy of our engagements; but as the principles of our religion were very different from theirs, I took that opportunity to swear eternal truth to my *Fanny*, in presence of heaven and her father; and she did the same by the viscount's desire. He likewise made us promise, to sanctify our marriage by the priestly mediation, the first opportunity we should meet with for that purpose; after which he gave us his blessing, with the strongest marks of tenderness and satisfaction. I thereupon threw myself at his feet, in a transport of gratitude and joy; and lay prostrate for some time, with-

out

being able to speak one word; for so unexpected a flood of happiness appear'd to me like a dream. I ask'd myself over and over, whether I was the unhappy man, whose life had been one continued series of misfortunes, and I now thought myself for ever reconcil'd with fortune.

After having for some time been caress'd, and congratulated in a most whimsical manner by the savages, we return'd to our hut. The viscount, who was perfectly satisfied with the civility of the *Abaquis*, resolv'd now to propose their favouring us with a guard to *Carolina*, sooner than he first thought to have done. He was of opinion that they wou'd sooner gratify him in his request, now their friendship was so warm and thereupon consulted *Iglou* about it. This I left them to do, and in the mean time devoted myself wholly to love; thrice happy! thus caressing and caress'd by my dear, dear *Fanny*.

I was tender and passionate, and my angel was no less so; and yet, will it be believ'd, that a night devoted wholly to joy and the sweets of love, could be embitter'd with sorrow? Strange caprice of fortune, which never suffer'd me to taste delights, without a mixture of affliction! *Fanny* was now clasp'd in my arms, so that 'twould have been impossible for me to imagine to myself a more delicious scene of felicity; and yet alas! at a time when she was profuse of her kisses, she yet vented some sighs, which too evidently show'd, her mind still labour'd under some uneasiness. I reproach'd her for it, but the answers she made were far from satisfactory. Had it been possible for me to have doubted the sincerity of her affection, I shou'd have accus'd her of indifference; but I had such proofs of her tenderness, as did not leave the least room for suspicion. I even took notice, that she was troubled she had given me an opportunity of discovering her uneasiness; and endeavour'd to make me put a quite different construction upon her sighs. I strove, but in vain to make her unbosom herself to the man who worshipp'd her; who wish'd only to live for her sake. She complain'd in her turn of the unjust idea I had of her tenderness, and forc'd me to conceal my anguish in my breast. It however was not less violent upon

that account; and I was but too sensible that something was still wanting to complete her felicity, and consequently mine.

I shall not yet declare, what now involv'd me in fresh uneasiness. Tho' hardly any thing ever went nearer to my heart, yet this had been proceeded by so long a train of misfortunes; and I have so many others to acquaint my readers with, that I shall wave relating this at present.

The fresh assurances which my lovely bride gave me of her affection were so persuasive; that these added to the proofs she had before given me of it, made me believe that I cou'd not doubt of it for a moment, without doing her the highest injustice. I therefore concluded, that these tokens of sadness, were to be ascrib'd wholly to the unhappy situation of our circumstances; and to a thousand inconveniencies, which we cou'd not be insensible to, notwithstanding the violence of our passion. I knew besides, that her complexion was naturally of a gentle, melancholy turn; and that this temper was predominant, even when she was happiest; and so far from disliking this disposition, I on the contrary was highly pleas'd that it was of this cast, because it always inclines a heart to tenderness and fidelity. I therefore contented myself with putting her in mind, that she ought not to conceal her affliction from me; since she might depend, that I would do all that lay in my power, even to the hazard of my life, to soften it. She had the prudence not to let her father discover any thing of it. The next morning we were inform'd, that *Iglou* intended that day to request the *Abaquins* to favour us with a guard, and to propose our taking leave of them. We had the greatest reason to expect that he would succeed in his commission, and therefore were persuaded he would bring us favourable news. He nevertheless return'd with an air, which seem'd to speak disappointment. I am come hither, says he to his lordship, before the rest of my countrymen, purposely to inform you of the resolution of our chiefs, who are now coming to wait upon you. I have told them your request, and the design you have of going immediately for *Carolina*; and they seem'd to be very much afflicted upon that account, being vastly desirous that you should
continue

continue longer among them. Nevertheless, after I had assur'd them that you were absolutely oblig'd to depart immediately, and that you would consider their consent as a fresh testimony of their friendship; they unanimously agreed to grant whatever you shou'd ask. With respect to a guard, as many men will be allow'd you for that purpose as you shall think proper; and as a farther proof of the affection our people have for you, they are all soliciting to be of that number. I thought, says *Iglou*, the business was happily concluded; and was preparing to come and acquaint you with my success; when one of the most antient among the *Abaquis*, propos'd a thing, which I'm sure will give you the greatest pain. 'Twas this; to suffer you, indeed, to depart, but to detain my master and mistress here: (meaning my wife and myself.) This motion, says he, was universally applauded, and they all gave a shout. 'Twas to no purpose, continued *Iglou*, that I endeavour'd to divert their design, by assuring them that you'd never consent to it; they wou'd not listen to me, and they'll come here presently in crouds, to inform you of their resolution.

This relation fill'd us with the highest surprize, as the reader will easily judge, so that I cou'd not forbear reproaching *Iglou*, for having involv'd us in these difficulties; and ask'd him what name he wou'd now give to his own and his countrymen's insincerity? Poor *Iglou* answer'd only by his tears, which denoted the deep affliction with which he was seiz'd. The savages appear'd a little after; I order'd *Iglou* to interpret their request to his lordship; and without waiting for an answer they flock'd round my wife and I, in token of the joy they felt, at the thoughts that we both were to continue among them. I got loose from them, and running to the viscount, I clasp'd him in my arms, in such a manner as shew'd, that I was resolv'd not to be separated from him. We then put such expressions into *Iglou's* mouth, as we thought would be most capable of softning them. But they did not seem to attend in any manner to what he said; and continued to sing and dance round us in a tumultuous manner, and to kiss our foreheads and breasts with the utmost eagerness. The viscount seeing it would be a difficult matter to make them change their resolution, desir'd

P 5

they

they would allow him some time to consider of what they insisted upon; and after we had earnestly besought them to leave us alone, they all withdrew.

It would not be a very easy thing to describe the dilemma we were now in, and the uneasiness it gave us, whereupon we held a council on this unexpected accident. Methought we had but one course to take; for we were resolv'd not to leave the viscount, and continue among the *Abaquis*; but then the difficulty lay, how to prevent this. *Iglou* confest to us with tears, that when once the savages take a resolution which gives them so much joy, they seldom or never change it; and are inexorable to prayers and entreaties. They, says he, have conceived a great fondness for my master and mistress; and, says he, they would think they gave the highest testimony of it, by detaining them here. But then, continued *Iglou*, directing himself to me, you may do what you please with them; you may obtain an absolute authority over them, and govern them as you shall think proper.

These last words, made us doubt for some moments whether or no he did not deceive us, and act a clandestine part with his countrymen. However, we chang'd our opinion, when we found him so readily give into the proposal his lordship made. This was, to steal away in the dead of night, and go for *Carolina*; tho' at the hazard of encountering all the dangers, our coming among the *Abaquis* had made us avoid. I cou'd come at my two horses whenever I pleas'd; so that we were concern'd only about the provisions, which we imagin'd we should be scarce able to furnish ourselves with; but *Iglou* promising to do his utmost endeavours to procure us some, we were less uneasy than before. But now we plainly discover'd, that the savages were under some apprehensions of our design, and therefore had an eye upon us; and *Iglou* afterwards inform'd us, that twenty were appointed to watch us day and night; and that these, upon pretence of doing us any service we might want, wou'd be posted in the next hut to ours. This last piece of news exasperated his lordship to that degree, that had not the few attendants which were about him, been naked and unarm'd, he would have attempted to break from them by open force. But I only had a sword and a couple of pistols, and then I

had

had but a small quantity of powder. This made us conclude, that it would be impossible for us to get over this difficulty, or at least we were persuaded, that nothing but time and chance cou'd extricate us from it.

The viscount was inconsolable; for besides the uneasiness it would be to him to reside among the savages, and the wretched condition we were in; he consider'd every moment, that this kind of captivity wou'd render him entirely useless, with regard to the affairs of his sovereign.

Nothing afflicted him so much as this thought. The viscount spent a whole month in meditating upon our escape; and was sometimes resolv'd to employ such arguments as he thought would have the greatest effect upon the savages. *Iglou* forwarded his designs as much as he possibly cou'd; but at last his lordship seeing no possibility of our succeeding this way; and being persuaded that the difficulties wou'd increase every day; because the longer we continued among the savages, the greater affection they wou'd have for us, he form'd such a resolution as surpriz'd us very much. I will, says he to us one day, leave you for some time, and accept of the convoy of savages under the conduct of *Iglou*. I'll leave all my servants with you, and be assur'd that I won't be absent long. In case I succeed in *Carolina*, I'll return back with a force sufficient to rescue you out of your captivity; but in case my hopes shou'd be frustrated, I'll return soon, and share in your confinement. After all, says he, I don't see that you can be in any danger during my absence. 'Tis plain these barbarians detain you purely out of affection; they appear to be of a very gentle disposition; and I'll go and increase their kindness for you, by acquiescing voluntarily with their request; and by making a merit of the testimony I shall thereby give, of my esteem and the confidence I put in them. Behave, says his lordship, kindly towards them, observe their manners and customs, and they'll love and revere you more and more. And the longer I think upon this, the greater consolation it is to me, in the necessity I am under of leaving you here: You'll be much safer here, than were you to follow me in the new enterprize I am going upon.

I had nothing to oppose to my lord's resolutions with regard to my wife; being perswaded by the humane treatment we met with among the savages, that we had nothing to fear from them; and I was sensible, that bating certain inconveniencies, it wou'd be infinitely less dangerous for her to continue among the *Abaquis*, than to undertake the journey of *Carolina*. But then I was divided; for I wish'd to accompany the viscount, and yet 'twas death to me, to think of parting from my *Fanny*. Will it be possible for me, says I, to see you set out and be in doubt, whether you may return alive from the enterprize you have in view? Shall your lordship be expos'd to a thousand dangers, and not let me share them with you? Shall we not even know the place, whither fortune is going to conduct you? How gloomily will the hours pass away, since we shall be in continual alarms! and not to mention my own anxiety, how will our poor dear *Fanny* be comforted during your absence? He answer'd, that our mutual consolation would be incessantly present to us, she in me and I in her; that we were dearer to him than himself, and that he look'd upon us as his better part; and therefore we need not doubt, but that he'd bring us back the other part as soon as possible, in order that it might be join'd to that he had left behind him. My wife shed a flood of tears upon this occasion, but neither these, nor my intreaties, could prevail with his lordship to change his resolution; and he immediately bid *Iglou* desire the savages to get ready the convey they had promised.

This request, and the promise he made to leave us in the plantation, were receiv'd by these barbarians with incredible joy. They left to his lordship the choice both of the number and the persons. He believ'd that an hundred men were sufficient, whom he desir'd *Iglou* to select; and resolving to wait only for the time necessary for getting up arms and provisions, when these were got ready he set out on his journey. We were oblig'd to solicit him a long time, before we cou'd prevail with his lordship, to take, at least, half his servants along with him. He would, absolutely leave Mr. *Youngster* along with us, and two other *English* men, that had follow'd him from

Roan,

Rom, in whom he put the greatest confidence. His taking leave, and the tender manner in which he begg'd the *Abaquis* to take care of us, almost melted us. I conjur'd *Iglou*, with the utmost earnestness, to watch over the life of my dear father. We then saw them set out. Alas! why was I not allow'd to follow his lordship? I wou'd willingly have shed the last drop of my blood to defend him. I myself wou'd have fac'd all the dangers which threatned him: My life cou'd only have fallen a sacrifice, and this wou'd have been nothing in comparison of the torments I was to suffer.

However, a person was left with me, for whose sake it was natural I shou'd wish to live. Dearest creature, says I, when my wife and I were left with Mrs. *Riding*, 'tis now we shall prove, whether love alone is sufficient to form the happiness of two hearts. This is our only refuge. Mrs. *Riding* will have friendship for her consolation, and love must be ours. My *Fanny* answer'd, by a kind of involuntary impulse, alas! were I but sure that you really lov'd me! she said no more; but I took notice, that Mrs. *Riding* nodded privately, as much as to say, that she should not explain herself any farther. I contented myself at that time, with only saying with my usual tenderness, that she ought not to complain of her fate, in case she cou'd be happy in possessing a good, which she was so sure of. But tho' I did not harbour the least suspicion, upon account of these words, I yet could not forbear asking Mrs. *Riding* in private, if she knew what they hinted at. This lady endeavour'd to elude my uneasiness, by the soothing answer she made; and yet I could not but observe both in her air and her manner of expression, a certain constraint, which would undoubtedly have fill'd me with fears, had I been naturally of a diffident temper. However, as it was impossible for me to form any just suspicions, I did not press her to explain this matter farther.

I thus remark, on every occasion, the only taint glimmerings I had, relating to one of the most dreadful circumstances of my life. My *Fanny* was tender and faithful; but notwithstanding these qualities which render'd her capable of a great passion, she yet wanted a very essential

sential one, to make her happy in love. My felicity was wrap'd up in hers. Thus was she fated to make me wretched, but undesignedly; and I, to be unhappy, without meriting to be so.

The affection of the savages increased to such a degree, when they imagin'd that 'twas by our own consent we continued among them, that they now employ'd themselves wholly in giving us continual proofs of it. Their first care was to adorn our hut in the best manner they could. They cover'd the walls and floors with skins. As the violent heat of the sun incommoded us very much, they transplanted several tufted trees, and set them round our house, in order that they might shade us; and finding that we were not willing to be cloathed after their manner, or rather to go almost naked; they presented us with a great number of very fine skins, which we made up into very commodious dresses. *Rem*, *Iglou's* sister, would not stir from my wife. She had so sprightly a genius, and so happy a memory, that she soon learn'd *English* enough to understand us. I likewise applied myself to the study of the *Abaquis* tongue, and made a much greater progress in it, than I at first believ'd I should. This made the savages still fonder of us; and no sooner had I begun to speak their language pretty fluently, but they flock'd about me so much, that I scarce had a moment to myself. They seem'd greatly astonish'd, whenever any of my expressions suited with their notions, or rais'd any new reflections in their minds. Some advice I gave them, was so highly pleasing, that they would not afterwards undertake any thing without consulting me. They oblig'd me, but very much against my inclinations, to be present in all their assemblies, and always gave me the most honourable place in it. I at last found, that the better I understood their language, the more authority I shou'd obtain over them; and that it wou'd not be a difficult matter for me, as *Iglou* had foretold, to govern them as I should think proper.

However, such an advantage as this did not any way soothe my ambition. But as his lordship had been absent two months, which gave me the highest uneasiness, because I had not once heard from him since his departure; I therefore resolv'd to try how far I might rely on the

friendship

friendship and submission of the *Abaquis*. I communicated this resolution, and the motives of it, to my dear *Fanny*. She approv'd one of them, *viz.* the desire I had of gaining so great an ascendant over the minds of these savages, as to make them subservient to his lordship's interest; or at least, to prevail with them to go and enquire what was become of him. With regard to the second motive, which arose from the tender regard I had for my wife; and which was only to secure myself daily more and more, against the inconstancy of the savages; she told me, that she could have wish'd I had taken such a method as might have preserv'd the affection they had for us, but without increasing it. Her reflection was very just; for to judge of the time to come, by what had already happen'd to us; we must naturally conclude, that the more they loved us, the more difficult it would be to get away from them. However, I observed to my wife, that our fears for things remote, ought not to make us neglect the present advantage, which my authority over them presented me with; that in case I could once be made their chief, I should then be in a condition, not only to do her father the greatest service, but even his majesty; that the *Abaquis* were a numerous and brave people; that in case I could but make them tolerably perfect in military discipline, I did not doubt but I should be able to form a considerable body, and by that means perhaps make myself fear'd in the *West-Indies*; and I concluded with saying, that this was the only way left us to know what was become of, and succour, his lordship.

Besides, that my love for, and the confidence I plac'd in my wife, would not suffer me to conceal any thing from her; I was prompted by a weighty reason to reveal my designs to her. I had observ'd, that a savage of the greatest credit among the *Abaquis*; and whose opinion generally prevail'd in their publick assemblies, used to be extremely assiduous about her. The reader will easily believe, that jealousy had not made me discover this; but I was persuad'd, that in case this *Abaquis*, whose name was *Moon*, would but endeavour to make his countrymen chuse me for their head, they'd yield to his request, without the least opposition. I had before sound'd *Iglou's* father, who also was a person of great credit;
and

and found that he was entirely devoted to my interest. I therefore bid my wife hint artfully to *Moon*, that the experience and understanding I had acquired in *Europe*, might prove of the greatest advantage to the *Abaquis*. She play'd her part so well, that *Moon* acquiesced at once with her reasons; and thereupon employ'd all his rhetoric, to bring his countrymen over to his opinion. After this, he acquainted my wife with what he had done; and two days after he came, unknown to us, to the door of our hut, probably to make a merit of his zeal; accompanied with the greatest part of the inhabitants; who pronouncing my name with a great shout, entreated me to take the government into my hands. I affected to discover some doubt at the proposal they made; however, this only increased the ardour of the savages, who at last wou'd have us'd compulsion, had I not told them aloud that I accepted of their generous offer. I nevertheless added, that it shou'd be upon one condition. As I shall use my utmost endeavours, says I, to promote the publick good, and make you a happy and flourishing nation; I believe I may with justice require you, to take a solemn oath of obedience to me. They all answer'd, with great acclamations, that this should be done with pleasure. I then gave them my word, that I would employ all the care and skill I was master of, to settle their government on such a foundation, as should soon raise them a reputation superior to any other people in the *West-Indies*. I appointed a general assembly the next day; and dismissing the multitude, I invited the chiefs into my hut, in order to settle some points, relating to the publick concerns.

As I now accept of the supreme authority which you have been pleased to offer me, I expect to enjoy it in an absolute manner. But I'll never, says I, require any thing at your hands, which I have not first prov'd to be just and necessary; in which case, my commands must be punctually obey'd. I then desir'd to know the form and tenor of their oaths, and how I might engage them to be obedient. They told me, that the *Abaquis* look'd upon the sun as an all-powerful and formidable deity; and that I might rest assured they'd never attempt to break any engagements, for which they had call'd upon his testimony;

ny; and that the fear of the terrible punishment, which the sun had inflicted on their ancestors for their perjury, kept them inviolably faithful and submissive. They afterwards told me a great number of idle and incoherent stories; such as are invented by imposture, and increas'd by superstition, in false religions. 'Twas not my interest to undeceive them; on the contrary, I was persuaded that their simplicity would be of the highest advantage to me; and therefore resolv'd not to enlighten their minds, till some time after.

Another precaution I took, was, to ask whether any of their neighbours were as tractable and humane as themselves; in which case, says I, they shall be invited to join themselves to us; and if this can be obtain'd, we then shall increase our strength considerably, and settle our government on a more lasting basis. I had before heard, that the *Abaquis* did not consist of above six thousand, including even several small habitations which were join'd in amity with them, and were not situated at a very great distance from the chief town where we liv'd. They answered, that they had no other neighbours but the *Romintons*; that 'twas not possible to enter into an alliance with, or have the least correspondence with them; they being so barbarous a people, that nothing was to be expected from them but hostilities and insults; that they had been enemies to the *Abaquis* from time immemorial, and from this only reason, *viz.* that humanity and cruelty can never agree; that there seldom past a year but some bloody battle was fought, which weaken'd both nations considerably; that the *Abaquis* having been victorious in the last engagement, their barbarous enemies had been so much weaken'd, that there was no probability they would be able to make head against them for a long time; however, that those who had escap'd from the slaughter, breath'd nothing but vengeance; they undoubtedly would appear again in the field, as soon as they had an opportunity for doing it.

These words gave me an occasion to ask them, whence it happen'd that the nation of the *Abaquis* were so few in number, as well as most of those who inhabit that wide-extended part of the *American* continent. I had before consider'd this often, but with great surprize; for it was

a mystery to me, that a healthy and vigorous people, who had so long inhabited a valley, whose air and fruits were so excellent, should have multiplied so little.

They answer'd, as follows. The first reason, said they, was the wars in which they were almost perpetually engag'd with the neighbouring people; which seldom ended, till one of the two nations was almost cut to pieces; insomuch that the vanquish'd could scarce repair their losses under fifty years; and I since heard, that 'tis the same with most of the other people of *America*. The *Abaquis* answer'd in the second place, that they had almost made it a law, not to extend themselves beyond the limits of their valley, because all the parts adjacent to it, were sandy and barren; so that in case they should happen to be overstock'd with inhabitants, they then would send such of them as were superfluous, to settle in some other place.

I likewise spent part of the day in getting from these honest savages all such lights, as might be of service to the employment I had accepted of. I above all endeavour'd to win these particularly over to my interests, by promising that I would consult them often, in the same manner I did then; and to give 'em the highest marks of my esteem and confidence on all occasions. I paid a particular distinction to *Moon* and *Iglou's* father, and appointed them to regulate the ceremonies next Day. Old *Iglou* was a man of excellent natural sense; and I had frequently observ'd that he was capable of reflection, which few of the savages are. Besides, the great affection which his son had for me, and the earnest request he had made his father at his setting out, to be careful of my welfare; made him extremely solicitous to oblige me so far as he was able. I therefore resolv'd to have him always near me; and to leave to his care, as tho' he had been my prime minister, a multitude of things which I myself could not execute. With regard to *Moon*, as his mind was of a less peaceable and judicious turn, I propos'd to employ him in other things, which suited better with his inclinations. I was oblig'd to pay him some distinction; not only as he had done me signal service, but because he was so much respected, and of so daring a temper; that had I neglected him, he might easily have disconcerted

ted

ted all my measures; and by the same reason, was able to do me very great services, in case I could attach him to my interests.

Having spent the rest of the time alone, in meditating on the order I would establish among my people; I went the next day to the place of the assembly, which was in a spacious meadow, at some distance from the habitation. I could not help admiring, as I went along, the inclination which all men have to flatter those whom they look upon as their superiors. I could not ascribe either to self-interested or ambitious views, the eagerness with which the savages strove to approach me, and their great endeavours to please me; for being unacquainted with riches and honours, they consequently neither hoped for, nor desired them. 'Twas therefore in these barbarians a natural impulse, which arose merely from a reflection that they were going to see me rais'd above them; and in a station which they began to fear and respect, though they themselves had promoted me to it. I am so much the more pleas'd with this idea, because the propension which all men have to submission and dependence, seems to me a strong indication of the power of the supreme Being, who has made them such as they are; and hereby points out to them, not only that they are under the direction of a supreme Being, but likewise that they ought to revere him above all things.

The assembly who were impatient for my coming, broke into one universal shout the instant they saw me. *Moon* and old *Iglou* had plac'd the several persons according to their rank; and had prepar'd a place for me, whence I might be seen by all the spectators. I had permitted them, a little before I came out of our hut, to cover my head with feathers. I carried an arrow over my shoulder, and had a quiver by my side; and as I was now to be seen for the first time by a great number of *Abaquis*, and several other people who, as was before observed, form'd one body with them; and were come from their habitations, in order to take an oath of allegiance to me; I endeavour'd to assume such an air as might prejudice them in my favour. The instant I made a signal that I desir'd to be heard, they were all silent.

I had studied my speech, and 'twas adapted so as to please. I laid before them, in what manner I had been desir'd to accept of the administration: I declar'd how averse I was to any thing of that nature, and in what manner I had at last been forc'd to acquiesce with their desires. I declared that this was not out of any reluctance I had to govern them, for I assured that I heartily wish'd them well; that I would render them happy and peaceable, and make the *Rouintons* their enemies, stand in fear of them: But I was afraid, that as they were used to live in a state of independence, they cou'd hardly prevail with themselves to obey me: I therefore cou'd not resolve to accept of the authority they offer'd, unless they would swear by the sun to obey all my commands; and was afraid I shou'd expose them to grievous punishments, in case they shou'd forswear themselves; and thereupon I set before them the several fabulous examples which had been told me, concerning the terrible effects of the sun's anger. I added others to these, and heighten'd them with such circumstances as were most capable of inspiring terror; giving all the force I possibly cou'd to my voice, my gestures and my countenance. My principal view in all this was, to make them consider the oath they were going to take as very sacred. This was the only tie by which I cou'd bind them; and I was persuaded, by what was told me the day before, that 'twas the only method to keep them in their allegiance. I concluded therefore with asking them, whether they were dispos'd to take an oath of obedience, or in other words, to make themselves obnoxious to the most dreadful punishments, in case they should refuse to obey any of my commands.

I had express'd myself in such strong terms, when I mention'd the punishment they had to dread; that I was afraid, as I ended my harangue, it had made too strong an impression on them, and therefore wou'd lessen the affection they had for me. The whole assembly continued for some moments in silence, as though they had been divided betwixt desire and fear. However, after I had repeated what I requir'd of them, in a much softer tone of voice, they recover'd their spirits; and declar'd

by their shouts, that they were extremely desirous of seeing me their chief and their governor.

I then made a sign to old *Iglou*, and the principal men of the assembly, to begin the ceremony. I expected they would have set up an altar, and accompany their oath with some superstitious and idolatrous practice; but was greatly pleas'd to find, that it consisted merely in the worship they pay'd to the sun. I did not observe any priests among them, or the least religious pomp. The whole consisted in acknowledging the planet of the day, as the supreme being, and every one was left at liberty to worship him as he thought fit, without being oblig'd to submit himself to any regular method, or assembling with others for that purpose. This persuaded me that the oath was consequently not administred with any regularity; and in order to make it so, I desir'd old *Iglou* to dictate what I desir'd to hear them pronounce one after the other. The chiefs thereupon came near me, and repeated slowly what *Iglou* bid them say. All the rest advanced in their turns, without the least noise or hurry. I admir'd their modest behaviour, and imputed it to nothing but the great respect and veneration they have for the sun. The ceremony lasted the remaining part of the day, and was perform'd with the same silence. I now entertain'd a more advantageous idea than ever of the character of so religious a people, and did not doubt but I should be able to civilize them, and be very successful in my government.

What persuaded me still more, that their great decorum during the whole ceremony, proceeded from a regard they have for religion, was, the tumults they made the moment it was ended. It would be a hard matter for me to describe their transports, and the testimonies they gave of their joy, for I cou'd not so much as be heard a moment. I was reconducted to the habitation with such extraordinary shouts and acclamations, that the first occasion I had to exert my authority, was to give orders that they shou'd cease. I then shut myself up in my cabin with my family, who were uneasy at my long absence; and desir'd the savages to let me take a little rest.

Youngster advis'd me, in order to complete the establishment of my power, to chuse by old *Iglou*'s direction, a certain

certain number of faithful savages to serve me as a guard, and execute all my commands; but I did not approve of the hint. There were, says I, but two motives which prompted me to take the administration into my hands. The first was, to do the viscount service, and forward, if possible, the king's designs; now I don't see how a guard can any ways contribute to this. The second motive was, to employ all my endeavours to cultivate the minds of these savages; and to convince them of the folly of their idolatrous worship, and instil into their minds some ideas of morality and discipline; now I don't see of what service a guard can be in this respect. In a word, says I, to *Youngster*, I have no design to set up an empire in this country, much less to introduce an arbitrary form of government. In case heaven shou'd oblige me to reside longer among the *Abaquis* than I should desire to do; I shall not make them feel my authority, either by my haughtiness or severity. I will on the contrary do all that lies in my power to make them happy. But the only thing I want your advice in, says I, is to think of some methods how we may do the viscount immediate service; and to hear, in the first place, what is become of him. Let us first weigh this matter, before we require any thing from the savages.

We discours'd a long time on this important subject. Mrs. *Riding* and my wife being present at the conference, they likewise communicated their hints. *Youngster* offer'd to set out for *Carolina*, but then he was wholly unacquainted with the way; and 'twas not probable he cou'd be able to find it without a guide. As for the *Abaquis*, they seldom went beyond the limits of their valley; and the long journies of my slave *Iglou*, was a thing unheard of among them. In the whole, we concluded, that nothing less than a miracle could extricate us from the difficulties we then labour'd under. I had some knowledge of astronomy, and I consider'd that this would inform me how we were situated with regard to *Carolina*; but then the practice of the rules of the above-mention'd art, is very difficult and uncertain. The proportions of distance between the celestial bodies, and the lines and circles which correspond to them on the earth, cannot be found but after a very general manner; and

and the least error must put a man very much out of his way, in so wide-extended a country as that we were in. Nevertheless, as this was the surest course I could take, I at last resolv'd to take five or six of the boldest and most sturdy savages; to sooth these up with a thousand fine hopes, and to send them towards the sea-coast whatever might be the consequence of it. I argued in the following manner. Tho' I cou'd not naturally hope, that it would be possible for them to reach *Carolina*, yet chance might happen to conduct their steps to that country. But supposing they should wander so far out of their way, as I was afraid they wou'd; I yet thought, supposing they observ'd the directions I gave them, that 'twas impossible but they must reach *Virginia* in case they went too far to the left; or the peninsula of *Tegesta*, in case they advanc'd too far to the right. Now, in both these countries, they wou'd infallibly meet with some *European* colony. I intended to give them a letter, written in three different languages, viz. in *English*, *French* and *Spanish*; no other nations having any settlements on these endless coasts. The purport of my letter, was to entreat those into whose hands it might fall, to treat the bearers with humanity; and to acquaint me, in writing, what they had heard of my lord, and whether or no he had succeeded in his enterprize. This scheme appear'd to me the more rational, because I imagin'd we were at above an hundred leagues from the sea: As I judg'd from the distance from *Riswey* to *Pawhatan*, and from the last town to the valley of the *Abaquis*.

Youngster, who had a great veneration for the viscount, begg'd I wou'd let him accompany the savages: but as I did not perceive that this would be of any advantage to us; and foreseeing that I should want him for certain affairs relating to my wife, I absolutely insisted upon his staying with us. As soon as I was fix'd in this resolution, I sent for old *Iglou*, who coming in, I bid him chuse out for me six of the most courageous and most judicious among the *Abaquis*. These being brought not long after, I employ'd all the arguments I cou'd think of, to animate their zeal and their bravery. These savages thought the confidence I put in them so great an honour, that they seem'd ready to go upon any enterprize whatsoever. I then

then began to give them such instructions as might be necessary for their journey; and in order to prevent their mistaking, I sent for them into my hut during three days successively, when I inculcated over and over what I had to say. At last they set out with my letter, taking what provisions they cou'd conveniently carry. Their departure sooth'd our inquietude, and we begg'd earnestly of heaven to grant them success.

The life we afterwards led among the *Abaquis*, wou'd have been agreeable enough, had our minds been ever so little susceptible of joy. But my wife, who was still prey'd upon by a continual sorrow, seem'd insensible to every thing which cou'd contribute to lessen it. It was impossible for me to be easy, when I saw her so dejected. I have before observ'd, that I did not in any manner mistrust her love: and her heart was full of me. 'Tis impossible for artifice to impose upon a tender and passionate husband. As I was continually with her, had she discover'd the least coldness, it cou'd not have escap'd the observation of so vigilant a love as mine — No — she ador'd me: and the circumstance which cut me to the soul, was, that notwithstanding her great fondness for me, she yet seem'd to desire something, the want of which was a deadly pain. After having long endeavour'd in vain, to make her reveal the cause of her affliction, I at last began to conclude, that it was in a great measure owing to her complexion; or perhaps arose from her laying our misfortunes too much to heart; but then several things I frequently observ'd, gave me reason to think otherwise. Whenever I would reproach her in the most tender expressions for her perpetual melancholy; whenever I would endeavour to expel it by the strongest protestations of loving her eternally, and clasping her with redoubled transports to my bosom, she generally would let fall a few tears, which fill'd me with the highest uneasiness. She would first seem to melt as she gaz'd; when her eyes would be fix'd upon me, with an air of curiosity and inquietude; as though she wish'd to discover something in mine, which she could not perceive. The fear I was under of displeasing her, would not suffer me to be over pressing in my enquiries; but then her disquiet was not less painful to me; and what made my

case still more deplorable, was, that as I did not know the nature or the cause of her anguish, I therefore cou'd not either explain, or set any bounds to mine.

I flatter'd myself, that the cares of the administration, in which I desir'd her to share with me, might banish in a great measure the gloom which sat upon her spirits. I myself, my dear, says I, will manage all affairs relating to the male part of the inhabitants; and will desire you and Mrs. *Riding*, to do the same with regard to those of your own sex. This she consented to, when I gave her full power to act herein as she shou'd think proper; and thereupon I caus'd publick notice to be given by a cryer, that all the women should obey her as their queen.

With regard to myself, I thought it would be proper for me to begin by first securing the tranquillity of the publick. This article was of as great consequence to us, as to the *Abanquis*. The relations I daily heard of the cruelty of the *Rouintons*, gave me a terrible idea of those inhumane savages, whose country was not above thirty miles from us. These, wou'd I say, may fall upon us the next moment; so that I soon resolv'd to put ourselves in a condition not to fear their attacks. Accordingly, I caus'd a trench fifteen foot deep to be dug round our plantation; and obliging all the savages to work at it, not excepting the women; I also put my hand to the oar, in order to quicken their diligence. As near five thousand people were employ'd continually in digging this trench, we finished it in less than a fortnight. We were now quite surrounded with water; and for our great security, I wou'd not allow of any communication with the country, except by moveable bridges, which were laid down in the morning, and taken away at night by certain savages appointed for that purpose. The whole nation seem'd prodigiously pleas'd with the invention. Nothing can be a greater indication of the stupidity of the *American* savages, than their wanting industry, even for their own preservation, tho' one would think, nature alone should have dictated it. They seem, in this respect, to be very near upon a level with brutes: for their only method in war, consisted in throwing themselves impetuously one upon the other, and fighting with fury, till such time as

VOL. I. Q those

those who are weary or wounded, are forc'd either to yield, or take to their heels.

Before my undertaking any thing for the service of the *Abaquis*, I had long meditated on the change I shou'd bring about, with regard to their way of living and their dress. 'Tis so shocking a spectacle for an *European*, to see men, women and children, go continually naked, without the least regard to modesty, that I resolv'd at once they should be cover'd. This I saw might be easily effected, not only because they were provided with a multitude of tygers skins, of those of leopards, and other wild beasts, which they kill'd in hunting; but because they always were cloath'd in winter; so that the business was only to make them preserve that custom in summer. Nevertheless, after having reflected more deeply on this affair, I thought proper to change my resolution. With regard to modesty, which was the only reason why I wish'd they would wear cloaths; I considered that this would not outweigh the inconveniencies which wou'd inevitably arise from it. In reality, the shame of appearing naked is not inspir'd by nature; it arises merely from prejudices of education, and is the bare effect of habit. Of this I had an unanswerable proof in my savages, who did not blush at their nakedness, and even look'd upon this custom as a thing of an indifferent nature. Why, would I say to myself, shou'd I attempt to banish that innocent simplicity, in which they have hitherto liv'd? So far from it, methought they follow'd therein the more immediate and more just inspirations of nature. This great principle, as soon as the weather grows cold suggests that their bodies ought to be cover'd: and on the other side, heat makes them look upon cloaths in summer, as superfluous and incommodious. In case I shou'd oblige them, (wou'd I argue to myself) to be cloath'd in all seasons of the year, they'll soon find that I do this from some other view, than barely satisfying our natural wants: they'll soon look upon their dress as ornaments, they'll in a little time, study neatness and taste in it, and this will immediately set their minds at work; this will give rise to affectation, to modes, and the several ridiculous effects of vanity and self-love, of which there are so many miserable

miserable examples in *Europe*. I am therefore resolv'd, not to inform them of any thing but what may contribute to their real advantage; but it wou'd be doing 'em a very ill office, were I to set their innocent rusticity in a ridiculous light; and open a way which leads to luxury and effeminacy.

I argued much after the same manner with regard to their food and habitations. Their eatables were gross and wretchedly drest: These consisted wholly of the insipid flesh of the several animals they kill'd in the forests; and they never thought one better than the other. Nevertheless their woods were flock'd with a great quantity of game of various kinds, and their rivers and ponds with excellent fish; but they could much more easily kill a wild ox or a goat with their arrows, than a partridge or a pheasant; and nature prompted them, to employ always the most simple and easy methods. They were, moreover, of a robust complexion, and 'twas very rare to hear of consumptions, or other languishing diseases among them. I therefore believ'd, that to introduce among them the pernicious use of sauces and ragouts, would be very prejudicial. If 'tis an unhappiness to mankind that their organs change, and that they stand in continual need of aliments to repair them; those are most happy, who procure the latter with the least trouble and expence.

With respect to their huts, tho' they were neither beautiful nor regular, they however were commodious. They guarded sufficiently against the inclemencies of the weather, and a man might sleep as securely in them, as under gilded roofs. What can man want or desire more, who knows that this globe we tread, is not a lasting habitation for him? What necessity is there for building houses, which may last longer than our selves? Is it not an unhappiness that our infirmities should oblige us to live hid for the greatest part, under the covert of a roof, which by that means deprives us of the sight of the sky; the most glorious, the most beautiful spectacle in nature? and yet, we cannot forbear building these kind of prisons to immure ourselves in. But then reason does not suggest that we should adorn our houses in such a manner, as to make them still more agreeable.

The only change I therefore resolv'd to bring about among the savages, related to religion and morals; and the first of these articles was not to be attempted at once. 'Tis well known, that men are strongly carried away by the prejudices, which they imbibe in their infant years. I therefore thought it would be proper to watch for a proper opportunity, when the minds of the *Abaquis* might be more capable of receiving strong and durable impressions. But this will be better shown by the effects. Till this happy juncture might be found, I apply'd myself at one and the same time, to the establishment of good laws without; and the settling in families, such principles of order and subordination, as form the strongest ties of society.

Altho' the *Abaquis* were not as rude and ignorant, as several other *American* nations; and possessed a few marks of humanity, and some little knowledge of the laws of nature; I yet had observ'd among a great many of their usages, such barbarous singularities, as inspir'd me equally with horror and compassion. 'Twas a custom, for instance, among them, as soon as a child was born, to examine carefully, whether it discover'd the least symptoms of a crazy constitution, or that any of its limbs were distorted. Such as came into the world with any of these natural defects, were immediately sacrific'd. Besides this abominable practice, which caus'd the destruction of a numberless multitude of innocent creatures, they had likewise another, which was to observe, five or six days after the birth, whether they cou'd not discover on the faces of those infants who appear'd with all the signs of health, some little marks of a sickly complexion. They had their happy and unhappy symptoms; and likewise unmercifully put to death all such as had not the former. These several particulars consider'd, 'tis no wonder they were so thin of people. I endeavour'd to set the inhumanity of this conduct in the strongest light, and after my arguments had made some impression on them, I issued out my orders, by which all parents were commanded henceforwards, not to put any of their children to death, upon any pretence whatsoever.

The families were separated one from the other; except that now and then two or three who agreed

live together for particular reasons, each had their hut apart; and procur'd, by the labour of their hands, whatever might be necessary for their subsistence. But then, notwithstanding this union, they had but a very faint idea of the ties of blood, and the reciprocal duties of relations. A son was not oblig'd to pay the least respect to his father, who on the other side did not expect or require any from his children. A young *Abaquis* had no sooner attain'd the age, when persons can shift a little for themselves, but he became independent; and was upon a level, not only with the old men, but his parents. They had not so much as any appellation, to distinguish the quality of father; so that most children had no more regard for their parents, than for any other indifferent person. However, we here and there met with one, who was prompted by nature to pay them a peculiar veneration; and among these was *Iglou* and his whole family. Never did I see so beautiful an example of friendship, and perfect union among relatives. It was no difficult matter for me to distinguish such as resembled them, and accordingly I us'd all my endeavours to attach these to my person, being persuaded, that those who were inform'd with these amiable sensations of nature, would prove the most faithful. But a circumstance which surpriz'd me, was, to see so general a concord prevail in every family, notwithstanding the great independence in which they liv'd. Quarrels and divisions were seldom heard of among them, which I imputed to two causes; first to the bent of their minds, which was naturally human, and consequently abhorrent of cruelty and violence; and secondly, to their common dread of the *Rouatons*, which oblig'd 'em to stand incessantly upon their guard; who, in case the *Abaquis* were divided, might easily overpower them.

Nevertheless, in order that I might establish their peace and union, on a more solid foundation; I explain'd to them those natural duties, which subject children to the will of their parents, in a certain degree. I prov'd to them, that as they were oblig'd to love one another, because they were countrymen, and united by one common interest; they still ow'd something more immediately to those to whom they were indebted for their birth, and

the care of their infant years; that a change of country might dissolve those ties that bound them to the society of which they had been members; but that nothing could disengage them from the obligations they ow'd their parents; that when they advanc'd in years, they did not, upon that account, owe less obedience to their fathers; since had it not been for these, they wou'd never have come into the world; that they ought not to look upon this obedience as a hardship, since nothing was requir'd from them, but what was just and rational; and lastly, that there was a time, when children would have their turn, and be respected by their off-spring with the same filial piety.

On the other side, I inculcated to parents, that they ought to keep the authority they exercised over their children, within proper bounds; and behave with the utmost kindness and humanity towards them: that what right soever nature, and the regulations I intended to establish among them, might give them over their children; they yet ought not to exercise it merely out of selfish views; but for the good of their children, and the general advantage of the nation; that they themselves, as fathers, were bound by several obligations, which I shou'd take care to point out to them; that the duties of parents were, an uninterrupted assiduity, wisdom, goodness and patience; and those of children, respect, love, and submission to the person who gave them birth. I did not barely explain these maxims to them in publick, but visited every family in particular, to whom I inculcated them over and over; and I forbore to make them put these maxims in practice, till such time as I had made them confess, that life would thereby become more agreeable, their union stronger, and the exterior form of their society more agreeable.

When their minds were thus happily disposed to receive this great change, which I look'd upon as the most essential part of my design; I establish'd such an order as I imagin'd could most easily be observ'd, and was best adapted to continue. With regard to each family, I appointed that the oldest person in it shou'd be consider'd as head, unless he were incapable of governing; for which, reason should be given before a superior tribunal, which was

to pronounce upon it. All the rest of the ranks were, in like manner, to be regulated according to seniority. I did not think it just, to exclude women from those privileges which were indulg'd the other sex, since nature gives these the same right to them, as she does us; and in case the authority of fathers over their children, is grounded chiefly on the obligations which these have to them, for their birth and education; one wou'd think that the mothers shou'd have the greatest power, since these suffer the most upon the two occasions abovementioned. I therefore enacted an irrevocable law, by which it was ordain'd, that the women should have the same authority over those of their own sex as the men.

But as this injunction seem'd to relate to the several families in themselves, I immediately establish'd a body or council, the members whereof are not to be above twenty in number, and made choice of such for that employment, as I had found the most judicious and rational. Tho' I did not exclude the women from it, I yet thought proper to make certain restrictions on that occasion. As my design in this establishment, was, to raise it to a supreme tribunal, on which all my authority might devolve, when I should leave this nation; I did whatever lay in my power, to render it as awful and august as possible. The first statute I enacted, with respect to the choice of the members, related to their age. No man under forty, nor no woman who was not full fifty, were allow'd to be admitted members of that council. The inequality between the age of the men and that of the women, was not any way injurious to the latter; it being founded on the same reason which prompted most legislators to reserve to one sex, the cognizance and management of all publick affairs; that is, on the inconvenience of child-bearing, to which nature has subjected women till they come to a certain age; and on the care they are to take, in the nourishing and bringing up their children. But then as they are rid of these troubles at fifty; and that I cou'd not perceive any reason why at that age they should be less capable of governing than we; I therefore resolv'd they should divide it equally with the men. I am sensible, that your insipid railiers, and such as are enemies to that amiable sex, ascribe this almost general custom,

custom, of not allowing women any part in the administration, to other causes, *viz.* to their weakness and ignorance. But then several instances I myself saw among the *Abaquis*, prov'd the injustice of such an assertion. Their women are not under the least constraint; and being educated after the same manner as the men, were as rigorous and prudent as they cou'd be; which is a pretty strong proof, that the reason why they are less so in most other countries, is, because men act a tyrannical and unjust part over them; by obliging them, against the order of nature, to apply themselves to things which enervate their minds; and by that means usurp an authority over them, which they ought to share mutually.

Besides a stated age, the several candidates were oblig'd to bring testimonies of their having led a regular and irreproachable life. Altho' the *Abaquis* had hitherto liv'd, in some measure, without laws or religious worship; they yet were able to distinguish justly between virtues and vices. Gentleness, fidelity with regard to promises, and temperance itself, were highly esteem'd among them; and yielded only to boldness and bravery, which they consider'd as the most supreme qualities. Old *Iglou* was esteem'd for the former, and *Moou* for the latter. I enacted, that every member of the council, should, at least, be possess'd of the former qualities. When any place was vacant, every family was appointed to pitch upon some person of either sex, whom they thought qualified to fill it; and out of these the members were to elect one, whom they thought proper to associate into their body.

Moreover, this council had two provinces. The first was the cognizance and administration of all the affairs relating to the nation. The counsellours were to assemble on stated days, and to confer on all things which related to the good of the publick. This burthen I indeed was willing to ease them of, so long as I resided among them; but then I was desirous they should acquire a habit, by insensible degrees, of managing the publick affairs; in order that they might be the readier to continue the direction, after I was gone. This humane, but ignorant people, requir'd something of a simple kind; and at the same

time

time so visibly useful, that they themselves might perceive the advantageous difference between the condition to which I wanted to raise them, and that in which they were at my coming among them.

The second province of these counsellors, was to inspect the several families in particular. I divided the whole nation into twenty parts, which answer'd to the number of the members of my council. Each counsellor was to live in the district or ward, over which he should be appointed to preside; was to enquire exactly into all irregular proceedings or disorders that might happen in it; and make his report to the council, who were to pronounce sentence. It may perhaps be thought, that as this tribunal consisted of no more than twenty persons; and that these were to superintend not only the publick affairs, but all those of a private nature. I consequently laid too heavy a burthen upon their shoulders; but to answer this, it must be consider'd that a nation of savages, who went naked, and were uninform'd with ambition or avarice, had very few disputes; and if we except a few quarrels, which might now and then arise by chance; scarce any cou'd exercise, in any considerable degree, either the wisdom or penetration of the council.

With regard to laws, I did not think it convenient to establish a great number of these. Those of nature suffic'd; and the most important part of them was included in the order I had establish'd among families. Live says: I to them, in unity; be as candid and humane towards others, as you desire they should be to you: This was the only law I desir'd to inculcate to the *Abaquis*, and endeavour'd to prove to them the necessity of observing it. I nevertheless appointed punishments for certain crimes; rewards and distinctions for great actions; abolish'd certain superstitious customs in their assemblies; and above all, made some useful regulations, with regard to the beasts they kill'd in the chase, which was the only thing that sometimes created divisions and feuds among them.

Having enacted these different particulars in three days, and the savages discovering such a docility, as gave me reason to hope that I should hereafter succeed in all my undertakings; I form'd another design, the execution of

which would perhaps have appear'd more difficult at first fight. I consider'd, that in case the supporting and strengthening the subordination I had settled in the several families, should cost me some pains; the obstacle would not arise so much from the old men, who would find their account in the obedience of their children; as from the young people, who naturally hate dependance, especially in a barbarous nation, among whom an excessive liberty prevail'd. I therefore resolv'd to employ the young *Abaquis* in some exercise, which might serve at one and the same time, to keep them employ'd, and accustom them insensibly to the yoke; and for this I had a natural pretence, *viz.* the fear they were under of the *Rouintons* their enemies. I told them, that I was under no dread of those formidable, as they took them to be, neighbours; and that it wou'd be an easy matter for me to check their fury, and even to extirpate the whole nation; but then, that I must first teach them how to attack their enemies, and defend themselves; that in case they took some pains, upon this occasion, I would make them invincible; that this was the most important secret I had brought with me from *Europe*; to conclude, that it was necessary the young people shou'd leave the chase for some time, and devote themselves wholly to the practice of my instructions. I was oblig'd to make use of all these precautions, otherwise it wou'd have been impossible for me to have kept twelve or fifteen hundred young, impetuous *Abaquis* in the plantations; or have prepar'd them to submit to the constraint, which is inseparable from military exercises.

They nevertheless agreed to my proposal with great chearfulness. I thereupon divided them into several bands, in imitation of our companies and regiments. I appointed superior and subaltern officers, and made *Moon* generalissimo; and this I did in return for the important service he had done me. This savage was brave and resolute, but at the same time hasty and turbulent; and I was very sorry when his ill conduct afterwards oblig'd me to treat him otherwise than I would willingly have done.

I undoubtedly should never have been able to instruct the *Abaquis* in the art of war, had I not before made it

my

my study. But besides, that there is no science, the elements whereof a man of good sense may not find by reflection; I knew that Mr. *Youngster* might be very useful to me, as he had serv'd in the troops in *England*; for which reason I intended to leave this province entirely to him. He indeed exerted himself in it to admiration, and succeeded far beyond my expectations. He had a pleasing air, but at the same time, was of a severe disposition; so that in a few months he establish'd a most excellent discipline among the young *Abaquis*. There was only one circumstance I dislik'd in his method, which was, his punishing with too great severity, such as neglected their duty. This I reproach'd him with, and at last made him confess; that officers were highly in the wrong, to treat their soldiers with pride and cruelty, since these cou'd not fail to stifle their courage and resolution. They, says I, must be taught obedience, but not us'd as slaves. But to proceed. *Youngster* had taught the savages all kinds of military exercises; and had even invented several instruments of war, which did much greater execution than their arrows and clubs. As we had no iron, he had caus'd them to make sabres of a heavy wood, hardned in the fire, and had wrought them to so thin an edge, by the help of certain sharp stones, that they cut very deep; and did as much service as steel sabres cou'd have done, since the savages always went naked. He had invented pikes for them, at the ends of which sharp bones were set; ponyards which they hung by their quivers, and other murdering instruments, which perhaps were so many fatal presents he made the savages; however, as the *Rouintons* their enemies, were so cruel and bloody a people, these might with great justice be employ'd against them. Besides this, a guard was set near my hut, and in several other parts of the plantation; and Mr. *Youngster* visited the posts every night, in order to accustom his pupils to vigilance. He did not suffer, as was before observ'd, the least fault to go unpunish'd; so that we were not only secure against the attacks of our enemies, but even in a condition to brave them, had I not thought it but just not to molest them, so long as they themselves would continue in peace.

Up-

Upwards of two months were now past since the departure of my envoys, so that I did not know what to think of their long stay; and our fears for his lordship increas'd to such a degree, that they did not suffer us to enjoy a moment's ease. One day as we were discoursing on some melancholy subject, old *Iglou* came and told me with a transport of joy, that the six *Abaquis* were that instant arriv'd in the plantation, accompanied by a foreigner, cloath'd from head to foot. My impatience was so great upon hearing this piece of news, that I wou'd not wait for their coming, and thereupon I ran out to meet them. They indeed had brought an *Englishman* along with them; but as his face was unknown to me, I was afraid I had flatter'd myself too much, in promising I should hear good news. I was first oblig'd to hear what the *Abaquis* had to say, who told me in a tumultuous manner, the troubles and fatigues they had met with in the journey; and how difficult it was for them to reach *Virginia*. They had wander'd a long time without, scarcely knowing whither they were going; and having advanc'd towards the left, instead of travelling strait on to *Carolina*, they had gone round the foot of the *Apalatian* mountains, only because the way was better; so that by meeting some savages, they, by little and little, found out the right course; and at last arriv'd happily in the neighbourhood of *Pawhatan*, which is very well cultivated, whence they soon reach'd the town. These were the most considerable particulars they had to tell me, as they did not understand the language which was spoke there; but added, that the foreigner they brought along with them would acquaint me farther.

This *Englishman* indeed hinted to me, that he had matters of great importance to communicate; and that he was come from *Pawhatan* for that purpose. I thereupon brought him immediately to my house; where, in presence of my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who was as impatient to hear what he had to say as myself; he drew a letter out of his pocket, and desir'd me to read it, before he explain'd himself farther. I immediately saw it was Mrs. *Lallin's* hand, which brought all the blood into my face. I wanted to conceal this letter from my wife, so

that

that I was in doubt, for a moment or two, whether I shou'd open it before her.

In order to unfold this mystery, I am to observe, that I had hitherto been silent with regard to Mrs. *Lallin* and the unhappy voyage she had undertaken. Notwithstanding the commerce I had carried on with her, was of a most innocent nature; I was of opinion, that since fate had separated us, and that there was little probability of our ever meeting more; I therefore had no occasion to mention to the viscount and my wife, the resolution Mrs. *Lallin* had taken of accompanying me. The reader may recollect, that a little before we left *Roan*, I was very uneasy when I consider'd the ill effects, which her presence might cause in the mind of my *Fanny*. However, gratitude and pity had made me overlook this consideration; but as things had chang'd so unhappily for Mrs. *Lallin*, I did not think my self oblig'd to relate a story to my wife, which was not in any manner favourable to me; tho' I was perswaded the latter lov'd me so dearly, that her imagination would not form any chimeras to my prejudice. Nevertheless I consider'd, that as she would not only discover indirectly, and in some measure, against my will, that lady's voyage; the motives of it, and the correspondence which had been carried on between us; but likewise might perhaps find some tender expressions in the letter, by which Mrs. *Lallin* might discover her great uneasiness at our separation: These things consider'd, I say; my wife would have just reason, if not to suspect me of infidelity, at least to be surpriz'd that I had so carefully conceal'd from her an incident of so extraordinary a nature. This reflection, which presented itself to my imagination in its utmost strength, fill'd me with the highest confusion. However, I found it absolutely necessary for me to open the letter; and the only assistance which a moment's reflection could give me, was to summon up all my resolution, in order to put as unconcern'd a face upon the matter as possible. However, all my endeavours were in vain, and I was doom'd to be undone. But wherefore should I keep the reader any longer in suspense? my unhappy wife had before receiv'd notice of Mrs. *Lallin*'s arrival in the *West-Indies*; and her deep melancholy, the cause of which she so industriously

dustriously conceal'd from me, arose wholly from the jealousy she entertain'd. Most fatal passion! This, young *Iglou* had given birth to, by his rash and inconsiderate zeal in relating whatever he had heard of my adventures, either from myself, who had sometimes unbosom'd myself to him with too little caution; or by some other means, which I cou'd never find out. Curiosity had prompted my wife to ask him several questions; but the more ambiguity and confusion she found in his answers, the greater was her perplexity and anguish; but my never once mentioning Mrs. *Lallin's* name or any thing that concern'd her, confirm'd the suspicions she had harbour'd, and pierc'd her heart. She fancied herself betray'd; or at least, in case she could be persuaded, that the testimonies I then gave her of my love were sincere and genuine, she yet consider'd them merely as coming from a man who was return'd, after having abandon'd her for some time; and who, had he not been dismiss'd by her rival, would never have endeavour'd to reingratiate himself into her affection. Nevertheless, her mildness, her submission to the viscount's will, and even her inclination, stronger than her resentment, had made her yield to take me for her husband; but then, an arrow was fixt deep in her heart, which all my fond caresses cou'd not remove. Mrs. *Riding*, whom she had made the confident of her sorrows, strove, but in vain, to sooth 'em by the consolation she administred. 'Twas she advis'd my wife to conceal the cause of her woe; for *Fanny* herself was not capable of dissembling so long; and her heart was unsusceptible of any sensations, but those of the strictest rectitude and integrity. However, Mrs. *Riding* was not to be condemn'd for the advice she gave; for she was afraid, if we should come to explications of this nature, it would be follow'd by a mutual indifference; and consequently that the remedy would be much more dangerous than the disease. Such was the fatal foundation of my wife's fortunes and mine. We shall see her, observing an obstinate silence for a long course of years, love me with an unlimited passion, and perpetually feed upon the most racking pains; and I, on the other side, ever conscious of my own innocence and fidelity, act inconsiderately in this supposition; and make me guilty, not only

only of my own calamities, but the crimes of other people; by involuntary occasioning the most tragical and bloody catastrophes. Thou eternal source of justice! who shall undertake to unravel thy designs! Thou hast accustom'd me to feel the most terrible effects of them, without my once daring to search out or murmur at them.

I have, perhaps, gratified the reader's curiosity too soon; for in order to have made my story more affecting, and give it all the graces of a romance, I shou'd have conceal'd this incident, till I was come to the conclusion of my work. But have I studied only to please; and did I promise to present my readers with any thing, but a faithful picture of my own sufferings? 'Twou'd have been too great a pain to me, had I suffer'd my dear wife's innocence, and my own constancy, to have been suspected a moment. It shou'd only be remembred, that in the incidents I shall relate hereafter, I was wholly in the dark, with regard to the calamitous circumstance above related; for had I been acquainted with it, I shou'd not in all probability have been so wretched.

I therefore affected to appear as easy as I possibly cou'd, upon my opening Mrs. *Lallin's* letter; and the better to prevent my wife's suspicions, I told her before I began to read it, that I knew the hand; and that in order to make her more capable of understanding the contents, she was to know that the lady who had sent it, went on board the same ship with me at *Roan*, with the design of going for the *West-Indies*. We have, says I, been so much taken up with relating our own woes; that I had no opportunity to acquaint you with those of others. However, you shall hear that lady's story whenever you will. I then read Mrs. *Lallin's* letter without any apparent surprize.

The purport was, that she was overjoy'd to hear I was arriv'd safe in the *West-Indies*, and had escap'd that bloody wretch *Wills*; that she her self was got out of his hands by a stratagem; and that the hopes of finding my lord in *Pawhatan*, or some other part of *Virginia*, had prompted her to leave *Jamaica*, where she fled from her ravisher; and to retire in the country above-mention'd. That chance having brought my six savages to *Pawhatan*, they
had

had presented my letter to the first *Englishman* they met with in that town. The viscount's name had excited the curiosity of the inhabitants, so that the letter having been given from one to the other, had at last fallen into her hands. That she had given an *Englishman* a very handsome gratuity, to go along with my savages in their return. She assur'd me, that she wou'd with infinite pleasure have accompanied them; but as this was an impossible thing, she conjur'd me to write to her as soon as possible, and inform her how we might meet. With regard to the viscount, she seem'd to be deeply afflicted, that there was no news of him, no one having heard of him since his leaving *Pawhatan*. However, she said, I might almost depend, that there was no farther danger to be apprehended from captain *Wills*; who, after searching about to no purpose, was going to sail for *Europe*. She concluded with enquiring after my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, and express'd the sincerest wishes for their prosperity.

Such were the contents of this letter, the sight of which had put me to so much pain. As it was express'd in the most prudent terms, I was more easy than ever; and therefore did not scruple to relate in few words to my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, the motives and principal circumstances of Mrs. *Lallin's* voyage. They listen'd to me with the utmost composure, when Mrs. *Riding* wav'd the project, and began to talk about the viscount. This made me silent with regard to the latter; and as I did not perceive the least emotion in my wife's eyes or countenance, my mind was at rest. I was highly pleas'd that Mrs. *Lallin* had express'd so much esteem for the viscount, and the news of *Will's* departure very much lessen'd the fear I was under upon his lordship's account. I imagin'd I might justly flatter myself, that he had reach'd *Carolina*; that he had been receiv'd there without any opposition; and that he wou'd not let us hear from him, 'till he had happily settled all matters in that province. 'Twas true indeed, that he had been absent a long time; but how ingenious soever tenderness may be in tormenting itself, I cou'd not perceive any real grounds to alarm me. His lordship was attended by so strong a guard, as secur'd him from the attacks of any savage nations he might meet

meet with in his way; and though I were to suppose that a body of these had fallen upon him, I yet believ'd that he might have come off victorious; because I could not imagine, that his whole guard had been cut to pieces, and not one of 'em escap'd to acquaint us with the news. These false arguments contributed to sooth the anxiety I felt for his lordship's absence: and thus I form'd to my self a cruel illusion, with regard to two of the most fatal accidents that ever happen'd to me, ——— I was oblig'd to answer Mrs. *Lallin's* letter; this I did without the least mystery or affectation, and writ it in my wife's presence. All I writ to Mrs. *Lallin*, was, that I was vastly glad that she had escap'd out of the hands of her persecutor. I advis'd her to continue in *Pawhatan*, till such time as we might have an opportunity of meeting together again. I inform'd her of our marriage; and desir'd that she would, for all our interests, make all the enquiry imaginable after the viscount. The six savages having consented to return to *Virginia*, with the *Englishman* who had accompanied them, I made 'em promise to return by *Carolina*, and also begged of Mrs. *Lallin* to procure 'em guides, and whatever else might be necessary for the journey.

I was much easier in my mind after their setting out than I had been for a long time. It was now highly probable that I should soon certainly know where his lordship was; and my wife, now struggling more than ever with herself, completely conceal'd from me the perpetual uneasiness which her jealousy occasioned. Mrs. *Riding* very probably advis'd her to this. 'Twas now some time since she was known to be with child, which was highly pleasing to the *Abaquis*; who having certain superstitious ceremonies relating to the women, which they practis'd on these occasions, they desir'd it might be observ'd with regard to my wife. However, I reject'd their offers, and made this a handle, as I had before done several others, to eradicate their simple errors by insensible degrees. They listen'd to me with an air of the highest admiration, when I told them of a deity, who was much more ancient and more powerful than the sun; which even was created by that power,

power, and perpetually receiv'd its light and heat from him. But as their minds were incapable of being convinc'd by force of argument, I never perceiv'd that my discourse made so great an impression on them as I desir'd; and I waited, before I thought proper to attempt any innovation in their religion, in expectation of some extraordinary event, which might be made subservient to the design above-mention'd. At last a thing happen'd, which gave me all imaginable success in that affair. Possibly the reader may find something irregular, or at least too humane, in the methods I employ'd; especially with regard to an ignorant people, whose minds cou'd not be wrought upon by any other methods.

Moon, as I before observ'd, was endow'd with excellent qualities. He was well shap'd, and of a robust constitution; was sober, artful, daring, generous; and so intrepid, that he was justly look'd upon as the bravest man among the *Abaquis*. But then his rough and hasty temper, was not easy to be wrought upon; so that I often wonder'd, as *Mr. Youngster* was of a very imperious and severe turn of mind, how it was possible for them to be such good friends. At last they happen'd to have a very warm dispute on some point of military discipline; and being both of too high a spirit to keep within due bounds, they carried their animosity to that height, that they at last became irreconcilable enemies. I was immediately told of their quarrel, the cause of which *Youngster* gave me a fair and complete account; and though he had perhaps acted a little imprudently in this affair, 'twas plain, as he told his story, that *Moon* was wholly in the wrong. This he undoubtedly was sensible of; for I having sent for him to come to my hut, in order to give an account of his conduct, he refus'd to come; and shut himself up for some days in his hut, and would not be seen by his most intimate friends. His obstinacy made me very uneasy; for I could not wink at his disobedience, since it struck so much at my authority; and on the other side, I was afraid of using too much severity on this occasion, as this would exasperate the greatest part of the young savages, who

who were very fond of him. I therefore first employ'd old *Iglou* and some other *Abaquis* of the greatest temper, to make him sensible, in a calm way, of his error. However, they strove to no purpose; for *Moon* being of a revengeful cast of mind, cou'd not put up the affront which *Youngster* had put upon him, he having struck him several times. *Moon* threaten'd him publicly, and swore he'd be reveng'd, not only against him, but my self and my whole family. But now I began to look upon this as so serious an affair, that I thought it would be proper for me to apply a speedy remedy. This I was more prompted to, when I heard that a great number of savages who were in *Moon's* interest, visited him every night; and that these would, in all probability, concert upon measures to satisfy their resentments. The very same night that this was told me, a young *Abaquis* came privately to me in the dark, and taking me aside, told me a piece of news which startled me prodigiously. He had been secretly inform'd of *Moon's* design, which was, to assemble with several he had engag'd in his conspiracy, in the dead of night; after which they should rush into my house, and murder every one in it but my wife, whom he intended to take to himself; and this being done, to assume the same authority over the people as I enjoy'd; an authority which, he said, I ow'd entirely to him.

I thank'd the young savage in the kindest manner; and as so imminent a danger requir'd to be guarded against; I acquainted, in the most secret manner, all such of the *Abaquis* as I could trust, of the conspiracy that was carrying on against me; I desir'd them to watch all night round my hut, and not to suffer a soul to come near it, without my orders. After this, revolving how I might counterplot *Moon*; and not thinking it safe to arrest him in his hut, I resolv'd to get rid of him the safest way, that is, to get him kill'd privately. The character I was invest'd with, empower'd me to do this justly, as *Moon* had rebell'd against me, and broke his oath of allegiance. This last reflection suggested another of a more extensive nature, which was perfectly well adapted to the design I had of bringing the *Abaquis* to the knowledge of the true

true God. This thought gave me the highest pleasure, and I immediately took such measures to execute it, as succeeded to the utmost of my wishes.

I assembled all the savages that were about my hut; and being desirous of having the greatest number of witnesses I possibly I cou'd; I therefore sent for all those who inhabited the neighbouring huts. Finding they were dispos'd to hearken to me, I made them call to mind the oath they had taken to obey me; and the punishment which those were to expect, as should presume to violate it. *Moon*, says I, is guilty of the highest perjury: were the sun whom you worship, as powerful a God as you represent him to be, he would have made him feel the dreadful effects of his vengeance ere this. I let some days pass away, purposely to prove, that you are wretchedly mistaken in the object of your worship; and that the God whom I adore, is alone able of revenging and inflicting punishment. I therefore declare to you in his name; that all such among you as shall fail in your obedience, shall be chastiz'd by him in a most terrible manner; and that *Moon* shall be made the first example of it. Go, says I, turning myself to old *Iglou*, go and acquaint him with this; and advise him to repent of his abominable design, otherwise that he will certainly be punished with death.

I did not dismiss my savages, till after I had besought them, for their own sakes, to take warning by *Moon's* unhappy fate, and to reflect deeply on what wou'd soon happen. Afterwards going into my hut with Mr. *Youngster*, I communicated my design to, and order'd him to put it in execution. But as I was desirous of accompanying *Moon's* execution, with something of an extraordinary nature, which might strike horror into the minds of the *Abaguis*; we consider'd what stratagem cou'd be invented, in order to impose upon those credulous and ignorant people. Had I had but a good quantity of gunpowder by me, a thousand methods might have been found out, to scare 'em, either by the report, or by other effects which were unknown to them; but then I had brought so little with me from *Pawhatan*, that having given the viscount part of it, and the pair of pistols which

which belong'd to my slave *Iglou*, I by that means had not above half a pound left. However, Mr. *Youngster* was of opinion this quantity was sufficient for the project which came into his head; and tho' it were a very childish one, it yet had a wish'd for success. He took my box of powder, which was made of thick horn, and surrounded with three or four brass plates. This he shut very close, pressing down the powder in order that it might make the greater explosion; boring only a small hole in it, in which he put a fusee. He afterwards ty'd a piece of twine to the box, at which it was to hang. Having after this taken my pair of pistols, which he charg'd, he went out, attended only by our two *Englishmen* whose assistance he wanted. His intention was to get upon their shoulders, and to climb to the top of *Moon's* hut; and as it was excessive dark, there was no fear of his being seen. He then design'd to creep to the chimney, which was only a large hole made in the roof, as is the custom of most *American* nations; set fire to the fusee; and then let down the box into the hut; and being persuaded that the surprize at seeing the sparks of the fusee, would immediately draw *Moon* and his companions, under the hole which serv'd 'em as a chimney; he then hop'd he should have a good opportunity of shooting him. The report of the pistol, the death of the rebel, the noise of the box which would break into a thousand pieces, were all circumstances which could not fail of frightening the savages; but then I was apprehensive that some of them would take it into their heads to look presently on the outside of the hut; and thereby perceive Mr. *Youngster* on the top of it, as it was not very high. However, he was absolutely resolv'd to run the hazard of this. His two companions were to make off, as soon as they had lifted him upon it; and he was of opinion, that it would be a very easy matter for him to slip away in the dark. He desir'd I wou'd give him leave to set fire to the hut, as he went off, in order to make the whole a dreadful scene; but this I never wou'd consent to, for fear of burning down the whole plantation.

Just

Just as he was going away, old *Iglou* came to acquaint me with what he had done. His coming suggested a new hint, which was of advantageous success to what I had in view. After he had told me that *Moon* laugh'd at my threats, and seem'd to value the punishments which heaven might inflict, as little as those I threatned him with; I commanded him to return instantly, and renew his exhortations to the rebels; and order'd him to take several of the oldest and most respected members of the council, along with him. My view in this, was, purely that they might be spectators of *Moon's* death, which would thereby be a lesson to them. I thereupon sent 'em away immediately; and Mr. *Youngster* hasted to the same place another way. My curiosity to know how this would end was so great, that I could not forbear following them at some distance; and it being very dark, I stood about fifty paces from *Moon's* hut. I had not been long there, before I perceiv'd several sparks of the fusee, which came out thro' the hole in the roof; when immediately the box burst, and made a much greater explosion than I expected. *Youngster* did not expect this; for he hop'd to have kill'd *Moon* first; and I was afraid for some moments, that it would be impossible for him to fire his pistol as he intended; a circumstance which would have entirely disconcerted all our measures. However, hearing the pistol go off a moment after, I believ'd that it had done execution. The two *Englishmen* ran just by me, but did not discover me in the least; and *Youngster* coming up a little after, I spoke; when he told me that he had been so successful, that one would imagine providence had guided his hand. Scarce had he let down the box, but the savages, amaz'd to see the sparks, had ran to it in the utmost astonishment, and were about five and twenty or thirty. As the fusee burnt a little too fast, he could not distinguish *Moon* soon enough to fire at him immediately. The box had burst with great impetuosity; however, this disappointment prov'd of advantage, by striking terror into all who were present. Some were dangerously wounded by the shivers of the box, and all had flung themselves on the ground, roaring out at the same time in a most dreadful manner, *Moon* only excepted, who

who was not to be daunted: For this bold savage had run up just under the hole, in order, if possible, to see what it was that occasion'd so extraordinary an accident; by which means it was a very easy matter for *Youngster* to shoot him dead.

We immediately retir'd to my hut, in order to wait for the effects of this scene. We had not been in it a moment, before we heard a dreadful cry, which seem'd to come from all parts of the plantation. Such of *Moon's* partizans as cou'd fly, were got to their respective huts, where their terror and consternation, discover'd as plainly as their words, the prodigy that had happen'd. The whole plantation ran towards the place where *Moon's* body lay, in order to get a sight of it, and of five or six young *Abaquis* that still lay prostrate by him, who were as much kept down by the fright, as by their wounds. Immediately it was universally known, that I had sent and desir'd the conspirators to be quiet, not above an hour before; a circumstance which perswaded them, that their punishment cou'd be nothing but the effect of my menaces. This soon becoming the general opinion, and being confirm'd by those who had heard my speech, and what I had foretold, they began to be afraid, that the God whose anger I had foretold, would continue his vengeance upon them; and so surprizing was the effect of this fear, that all the *Abaquis* in the plantation assembled in an instant round my hut, howling in a most mournful manner, and beseeching me to appear immediately and assist them.

Upon this I came out, in order to comfort them by my presence. Tho' 'twas not very late in the night, I found it as light as day. The savages had lighted a numberless multitude of such torches as they use; these are long poles made of dry wood, cover'd over with a kind of pitch. They ceas'd to howl when I appear'd; when finding them dispos'd to hearken to me, I caus'd a form to be brought out, and got upon it, in order to be the better heard by the multitude. I expatiated on *Moon's* crime in the strongest terms, and on the justice of his punishment. I observ'd, that tho' it had been a very severe one, I yet assur'd them, that the God I serv'd was a kind master,

ster, who never exercis'd his vengeance but with reluctance; and wou'd even have pardon'd *Moon*, had he not persisted obstinately in his guilt, and thereby justly merited the fate he had met with; but that seeing him hardened in his rebellion; and the sun, whom they had hitherto suppos'd to be so formidable, not being able to reform him; I myself had therefore, by my prayers, brought down that dreadful vengeance upon him; that all those who should follow *Moon's* example, must expect the same sad catastrophe. I added, that the same God who was able to punish in so terrible a manner, bid me offer them blessings, provided they would adore him; that they were now sensible of his power, which should be employ'd to make them happy, and extirpate the *Romintons* their enemies; that having a sincere affection for the *Abanquis* in general, as they might easily judge by the zeal and concern I show'd in every thing that related to their welfare; I consequently wou'd not propose any thing but what should redound to their advantage; however, that I was oblig'd to give 'em notice, that after the offer I had made 'em, of being indulg'd the protection and friendship of that great God; they must expect nothing but hatred, in case they did not receive it with thanks; and likewise that if they refus'd to prefer it to the sun, they would inevitably meet with the same sad fate as *Moon*.

I had spoke so loud and so distinctly, that the whole assembly heard every thing I said; when they discover'd by their shouts and their applauses, that they were ready to obey all my commands. Upon this, I appointed them to meet me in the afternoon in the field where the assemblies were kept, and told 'em, that I would then explain myself farther.

They all seem'd highly pleas'd when they went away. I also was overjoy'd to find my self so happily rid of all my fears, and upon the point of succeeding in a project which I had always very much at heart; I now began to meditate on the scheme of religion which it wou'd be proper for me to draw up for them, and was not long before I pitch'd on one. They were inform'd with no other light than that of nature, and I did not think it was possible

possible to make them imbibe those of education. Upon this supposition, I enquir'd in myself, what an infinitely just Being might require at their hands; and methought, that the most essential point of their obligations, was, to acknowledge a God eternal and omnipotent, creator and ruler of all things; to worship him only, and hope to be rewarded by him. Such were the bounds I thought proper to prescribe to their faith. With regard to worship, I resolv'd to banish all ceremonies of a mysterious nature, because they are always sure to degenerate to superstition; and that I did not intend to live always among them, I was willing to do whatever lay in my power, to prevent their returning to Idolatry. I did not even think fit to appoint any churches or temples; for what use wou'd they have apply'd them to? These they only would have embellish'd and adorn'd. Their ideas would soon have been confin'd within the limits of the walls of them, and would not ascend higher than the roofs. Then they would insensibly have introduc'd idols therein, a circumstance which would have plung'd them into greater darkness and ignorance. Whereas in considering the whole universe as a magnificent temple, rais'd by the almighty architect, and God himself seated on the clouds as his throne, whence he is incessantly prepar'd to hear our supplications, and receive our adorations; I was of opinion that so noble, so august an idea would engage their whole attention, and imprint itself so strongly on their imaginations, that it wou'd be impossible for it ever to be effac'd. I was absolutely fix'd upon the latter article, and only added two things to it, which I thought well adapted to the weakness of this people's minds; the first was to enact that twice every week, or every third day, all the *Abaquis* should assemble in a religious way; the second, was, to compose a short, but clear and expressive prayer, which every *Abaquis* should get by heart. And lest any one should forget, or omit repeating it, my design was, that every master of a family should pronounce it in his turn with a loud voice, in the general assemblies above mention'd; and that each of those chiefs shou'd cause it to be repeated every day in his family, to all persons of both sexes, whom I subjected to their authority.

thority. How simple and uncompounded soever this scheme of religion may appear to the reader; I yet was so well acquainted with the genius and character of the *Abaquis*, that I was almost sure it was the only one that cou'd subsist for a long time; particularly after I had resolv'd to engage the members of the council by a solemn oath, which they should be oblig'd to take at their admission to see this observ'd in their respective districts; and not to suffer the custom of praying to be ever diffus'd.

The morning of the day on which this happy change was to be made, I heard that a great number of the principal *Abaquis*, were assembled in a private hut; and were conferring on something, which had all the air of a secret. This gave me some alarm, imagining it to be some dregs of *Moon's* conspiracy. I was going to hasten to the place where they were, when word was brought me that they were separated, and that some of them were coming directly towards my hut. Upon this I was resolv'd to be upon my guard. I found that three of the senior members of the council, had been deputed to me from the rest. Being come in, one of 'em told me the occasion of his visit in a most respectful manner. All our countrymen, says he, were very sensible that the God you wou'd have 'em adore is more powerful than the sun; but then they desire to know where this God was, who had never exhibited himself to them as the sun does; and in what part of the universe he inhabits. This, says he, I entreat you to instruct them in, before you oblige us to leave our antient worship. I look'd upon this question, and the reflexions which must naturally have result-ed from it, to be very profound, for persons of so little genius as the *Abaquis*. I answer'd in the mildest manner, that I was overjoy'd to find them so wise; and therefore wou'd satisfy all their difficulties in such a manner, that they should not have one doubt left. And knowing them to be the persons of the best sense in the whole nation, I explain'd to them the scheme of religion which I intended they should embrace. They all approv'd of what I told them, but I was surpriz'd to hear them repeat the objection they

they had before started. What then, says they, does this God never reveal himself? I confess that this question puzzled me; not from the difficulty of answering it, but for fear lest I should not be able to persuade them that this Being existed, tho' they cou'dn't see him. Nevertheless, heaven inspir'd me with a thought which made the strongest impression on their minds. No, says I, he does not reveal himself, but then he discovers himself by other marks. Don't you often hear it thunder? They answer'd yes, and that they were terribly afraid of it. Well, says I, 'tis the great God who thus moves the heavens, and makes the earth tremble. You have seen rain, hail, snow; you have felt the heat of fire and the severity of cold; you see that your trees, your fruits and every thing you feed upon grow; 'tis he who thus produces every thing which is every instant before your eyes: and yet, mistaken *Abaquis*! you are so ungrateful as to say, that he never reveals himself to you. The truth in my answer; the tone of voice, perhaps, in which I utter'd it; or rather the infinite goodness of God, who was willing to remove the clouds which hung over the minds of these poor savages, open'd their eyes to such a degree; that they seem'd transported with joy, to find a flood of light, breaking in thus suddenly upon them. They then protested, that they'd henceforward never worship any other God but mine; and having left me, they spread the words I had told them throughout the whole habitation; by assuring all whom they met with, that nothing was so great as the God I had pointed out to 'em, since 'twas he only who gave birth to trees, fruits, fire, thunder, and the most wonderful things in nature.

They were all in this religious disposition, when they assembled that afternoon in the meadow; and their zeal fill'd me with so much joy, that I cou'd not forbear shedding tears. My wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who were both desirous of being present at this pious spectacle, were likewise prodigiously affected. I then propos'd my scheme to them; appointed the times and order of the assembly; I display'd to them, by the strongest expressions, and un-

der the most lively images, the greatness of the Being whom they were going to serve; what they were to expect from his goodness in case they serv'd him faithfully, and from his anger, if ever they broke the engagements by which they were going to bind themselves. Notwithstanding their ignorance, I yet made 'em comprehend, that abstracted from the pleasures and rewards which I assur'd them they would enjoy after death, in case they led good lives; the religion they were going to embrace, would be of the greatest advantage to the whole nation, and to the support of the laws which I had establish'd among them; that after obliging them to honour almighty God, it did not prescribe any more than those I had laid down; that is, to love one another, and to do their utmost, to heighten the publick, as well as private happiness. I exhorted them especially to acknowledge the blessings they receiv'd perpetually, from the supreme Being. 'Tis he, says I, who gave you birth; who preserves you, and furnishes you with every thing, both for pleasure and use. Is it not therefore absolutely requisite, that you should love him, who thus showers down his blessings on you? Ye *Abaquis*! nature has given you a heart; learn to make a proper use of it; and in case you are sensible to any thing, let it be to the Blessings which are continually indulg'd you.

The multitude observ'd such a silence, as shew'd their great content and admiration. I observ'd, that most of them turn'd their eyes towards heaven, whenever they heard me pronounce the name of God; as tho' they endeavour'd to see him in the place, where I told 'em he resided; and that he was observing from his throne, the sincerity of their hearts on that occasion. At last, I heightned their attention, by mentioning the prayer I had compos'd for their use; and having exhorted them to follow me with their whole souls, I pronounc'd it aloud, my eyes and arms turn'd upwards. They all imitated the posture I was in; and I must confess, that a delicious sensation of joy diffus'd itself over my whole soul, when I concluded this august ceremony. Perhaps heaven never receiv'd more sincere, more disinterested homage, than

that which was then paid by these innocent and upright people; and I have ever look'd upon the share I had in this great change, as one of the most glorious and most fortunate circumstances of my life.

I employ'd myself for some days, in teaching, or causing to be taught, my prayer to all the masters of families, in order that they might be able to teach it their children. My wife and Mrs. *Riding* instructed the women in the same manner. They had already employ'd themselves to very good purpose, in inspiring them with the most perfect ideas of virtue and modesty; of love and fidelity for their husbands; tenderness for their children; and to extinguish in them their strange rusticity; but observing at the same time, not to substitute any thing in their place, which might one day deprave their minds, or promote effeminacy. We acted every thing in concert; and the aim and design of all the care we took, was, to deliver the *Abaquis* from every thing, which, till then, had sunk 'em below the dignity of human nature. This was my wife's reflection. In reality, says she, humanity has nothing to do with whatever clashes with reason, or goes beyond it; and in this sense, we should, perhaps, find as many savages and barbarians in *Europe*, as in *America*. Most of the *European* nations, deviate from reason by their excess of effeminacy, luxury, ambition, and avarice; and those of *America*, by their rusticity and brutishness; but I don't find either of these, to be properly what may be call'd man. The former soar, as it were, above their natural condition, and the latter sink beneath it; and thus the *Europeans* and *Americans* are real barbarians, with respect to the true point in which they ought to resemble one another, in order to be then properly so call'd. We must, says she, if possible, raise the minds of the *Abaquis* to this point, and endeavour to find out such methods, as may be most capable of fixing them in it.

Whilst we were doing the poor savages this signal piece of service, which the employment I had accepted of, made me consider as a duty; we at the same time did not forget what more immediately concern'd us. We continued to beg of heaven, to preserve the viscount;

to give success to all his designs, and wish'd earnestly to see him; and all our discourses concluded, with asking one another very anxiously, what could be become of him. My wife was now so far gone with child, that whatever might happen, I cou'd not think of leaving the *Abaquis* till after her delivery. Some weeks more past over our heads, when at last the pains of childbirth came upon her. She a little after was deliver'd of a daughter, who, they told me, was like her unhappy father. Sad object of the most cruel sentence of fate! Alas! under what baleful auspices wert thou born! I took her in my arms, and with a heart overflowing with paternal fondness; the first wish I form'd for her, was, that she might be happier than her father and mother. Alas! my wishes were not heard.

My wife soon grew pretty well, when she turn'd her whole care to our daughter. 'Tis well known that mothers love with an excess of fondness, and I observ'd that this had an effect on my wife's temper. She now was not so melancholy; her eyes seem'd to sparkle brighter; and whether it were that this dear pledge of our love, had encreas'd her affection for me, and remov'd her suspicions; or that the bare joy of having a daughter, wrought this change, I found her much more endearing than she had ever been. It was impossible but I must grow fonder, so dear she was to me: The ease of mind she discover'd, awak'd something in my heart which I had not felt before. This I acquainted Mrs. *Riding* with privately, who seem'd overjoy'd, but did not explain herself any farther.

I continued for some time to govern the *Abaquis* in a very peaceable manner, when some of these as they were hunting, happening to meet with a body of *Rouinrons* in the midst of a forest; the antipathy between the two nations was so great, that there was no possibility for them to separate, without fighting. The *Abaquis* were worsted. Several of them lost their lives, and most of those who escap'd were wounded. This unhappy accident, reviv'd the hatred which the *Abaquis* bore to their cruel neighbours. The young people especially, whose military exercises turn'd their minds much more

to war; being spurr'd on by Mr. *Youngster*, who had a passionate desire to try their courage; were very urgent with me, to permit 'em to revenge the insult which had been put upon the *Abaquis*. I was in doubt whether I should agree to the motion, for I had always an aversion to war. 'Tis a scandal to reason and mankind. If we except the case of a just defence, which even ought to inspire horror after a victory is obtain'd; a battle is the vilest attempt of fury and extravagance; and according to the principles of my moral system, a hero is an infamous monster. As I entertain'd such sentiments as these, 'twas natural for me not to acquiesce easily with the earnest entreaties of the savages. Nevertheless, the same reason which had prompted me to give them a tincture of military discipline, under Mr. *Youngster's* direction, made me consider, that 'twou'd be of the highest advantage to the whole nation, to humble the *Rouintons* before I left the country; and to make such a dreadful havock among 'em, that it should not be in their power to annoy them more. I likewise flatter'd myself, that in case the *Rouintons* were not absolutely untractable, it would not be impossible to win them over by degrees; and to engage them, if possible, to be so well reconcil'd to the *Abaquis*, that each side might lay aside all their hatred; and after this unite together, and form but one nation.

Having therefore discours'd with Mr. *Youngster*, on such measures as might be proper for the design, I declar'd publickly, that I thought it was necessary and just, to denounce war against the *Rouintons*; and in order to give the *Abaquis* a fresh testimony of my affection, I promis'd to march at their head. Hearing this, they all discover'd the satisfaction this gave them, by extraordinary shouts; and immediately, nothing was thought of but our military preparations. I left this to Mr. *Youngster's* care; and endeavour'd for some days to comfort my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who were terribly alarm'd at this resolution. Their fears, indeed, wou'd have been justly grounded, in case I had run much risk. 'Tis certain that I could not, without being guilty of the highest folly, have expos'd them to the dreadful circumstances
they

they dreaded, in case death, or some other accident, had depriv'd them, of my assistance; but I was sure the *Rouintons* wou'd not stand their ground when I appear'd; the smallness of their number, which could not possibly have been increas'd, since the late losses they had sustain'd, and the extraordinary idea they entertain'd of me from common fame, which cou'd not but have reach'd them; these particulars, made me, I say, to consider this expedition no otherwise than as a party of hunting, that was to last three or four days. Besides I propos'd to reduce them by kindness, and an offer of favours, rather than by force of arms. I therefore made it plainly appear to our two ladies, that they had no occasion to be under any terrors upon my account; and that with regard to themselves, they might depend upon being as secure in the habitation, as in the strongest city of *Europe*.

And indeed, having march'd two days after at the head of a body of the most vigorous *Abaquis*, I made my way in less than twelve hours, to the principal plantation of the *Rouintons*. Altho' our enemies expected, that their neighbours would resent the late slaughter; I yet did not find that they stood on their guard, as tho' they had been apprehensive of an attack. But such, as I before observ'd, is the genius and character of most of these unthinking nations. They know not how to defend themselves according to art, nor are inform'd with the least spark of prudence. They engage, and cut one another to pieces in the most brutish manner, upon the least quarrel; the weakest take to their heels, and the victor draws off, till he has a fresh opportunity of renewing the combat. It had been a very easy matter for me, to have fallen upon the habitation, when I might have cut all the *Rouintons* to pieces. However, I design'd the very contrary. Having given orders for the *Abaquis* to make a halt, I dispatch'd Mr. *Youngster*, who had boldly offer'd to go upon this dangerous message, with three *Abaquis* who were well acquainted with those parts; with orders, to offer peace to our enemies upon three conditions:

First, That they should immediately get together all their arms; bring them out of the plantation, and burn them before us.

Second-

Secondly, That they should leave the place they inhabited forthwith, and found a new settlement in the valley of the *Abaquis*, in which I promis'd to furnish them with whatever might contribute to make life agreeable.

Thirdly, That they should there submit to my authority.

In case they refus'd to accept of my friendship upon these conditions, I left 'em the choice, either of flying from their plantation, never to return back; or to be all cut to pieces without the least distinction.

I order'd Mr. *Youngster* to assume a severe and haughty air when he made this proposal; but afterwards to discover the utmost mildness and humanity, in order to gain their confidence, and even to exhort some of the chiefs among 'em, to wait upon me unarm'd, in order to receive from me the testimonies of that friendship which I had promis'd to indulge 'em.

The reader may believe, that I shou'd not have behav'd in this haughty manner, had I not been morally sure of the success of my proceedings. My security was founded on the ignorance of those with whom I treated: I was at the head of fifteen hundred men who were all well arm'd; I heard, by certain information, that the *Rouintons* did not amount to above eight hundred, including women and children; and I knew it was the general custom of the savages to take to their heels, whenever they find themselves overpower'd by numbers. I was afraid but of one circumstance, which was, lest the *Rouintons* should be too much terrified at hearing I was so near 'em; and that, mistrusting the sincerity of my offers, they should immediately fly away, which the savages do very easily, as they go naked. My deputies presented themselves boldly to the entrance of the plantation; and to prevent their being insulted, their first care was to give out, that they were supported by a body of fifteen hundred men. This relation, and the account which they soon gave of the reasons of their arrival, spread instantly among the barbarians, and produc'd part of the effect which I had foreseen; viz. that the greatest part of them being seiz'd with dread, fled away to the neighbouring

bouring forest. However, several of those who had crouded about *Youngster*, and to whom he directed his discourse; not seeing any thing which could reasonably fill 'em with dread, listned to him without the least apprehensions. These he soothed by promises; and display'd, as well as he was able, the great advantage they would gain, provided they accepted of my offers. He thought that his speech had made a great impression on their minds, but as these were but few in number, and that it was very proper to engage all those to return to the plantation who had fled from it; he therefore believ'd that the only method to succeed in this respect, would be to dismiss his auditors, with desiring them to assure the rest, that they need not be under any manner of fear; and that nothing cou'd redound so much to the advantage of their whole nation, as to conclude a lasting peace with the *Abaquis*. He allow'd them the remaining part of that day, and the next night to consult on these matters; and promis'd to return to them the next morning, with the same candid and humane views as he then address'd them with. He endeavour'd to prevail on some of them to come along with him to me, but none of them had the courage to do this.

I was overjoy'd to see Mr. *Youngster* return'd back in so peaceable a manner, and look'd upon it as an omen of the success of his negotiations, when the account he gave me increas'd my hopes. I thereupon applauded his conduct, and resolv'd to stay till the next day. We were but at a little distance from the plantation, which yet was hid from us, by a little hill. I made choice of this post, purposely that our approach might not terrify the enemy. Mr. *Youngster* establish'd so excellent a discipline in our army, that it wou'd have been impossible for us to be surpriz'd; and as for the *Rouintons*, they lay still all that day.

It being now dark night, word was brought as I was going to take a little rest, that the watch saw great clouds of smoak rise above the hill, and such a blaze as must necessarily proceed from a very great fire. I got up that moment, when looking out, I naturally concluded that the plantation of the *Rouintons* was burning; and did

not

not doubt a moment, but that this cruel people had set fire to it. I thereupon gave strict orders, that no one should stir out of his quarters till break of day; being afraid that the despair of these unhappy wretches, would prompt them to commit some action which might be fatal to us. Day-light appearing, I dispatch'd *Youngster* with a small body of men, to view the motions of the enemy. The account he brought back was very near what I expected. The *Rouintons*, either from a distrust of the sincerity of my promises, or from an effect of inhumanity and barbarity, had chose rather to fly their country, than to submit. At their going away, they not only set fire to the great settlement, but likewise to several hamlets that were scatter'd up and down the adjacent parts. Their huts, being built of dry timber, were burnt to ashes; and a circumstance which shew'd the excessive cruelty of their dispositions, they had murder'd all their old men and sick persons. Mr. *Youngster* saw the bodies of these, who were not yet consum'd in the flames.

The compassion which was natural to me, fill'd my mind with the deepest anguish, when I reflected on this sad catastrophe. But this instance of their barbarity, being a plain proof, that it wou'd have been impossible for me ever to civilize so brutish a people, I thought the *Abaquis* were vastly happy, in being rid of these dangerous neighbours. Such was the success of this expedition, which could not terrify my wife and Mrs. *Riding* very much, because the savages under me, were not reduc'd to the necessity of shooting a single arrow. I should not have expatiated so much on an event of this nature, had it not been productive, a little after, of the most terrible effects; effects of so dreadful a nature, that my blood curdles in my veins, now I am going to describe them.

End of the First Volume.

7 JY 65

